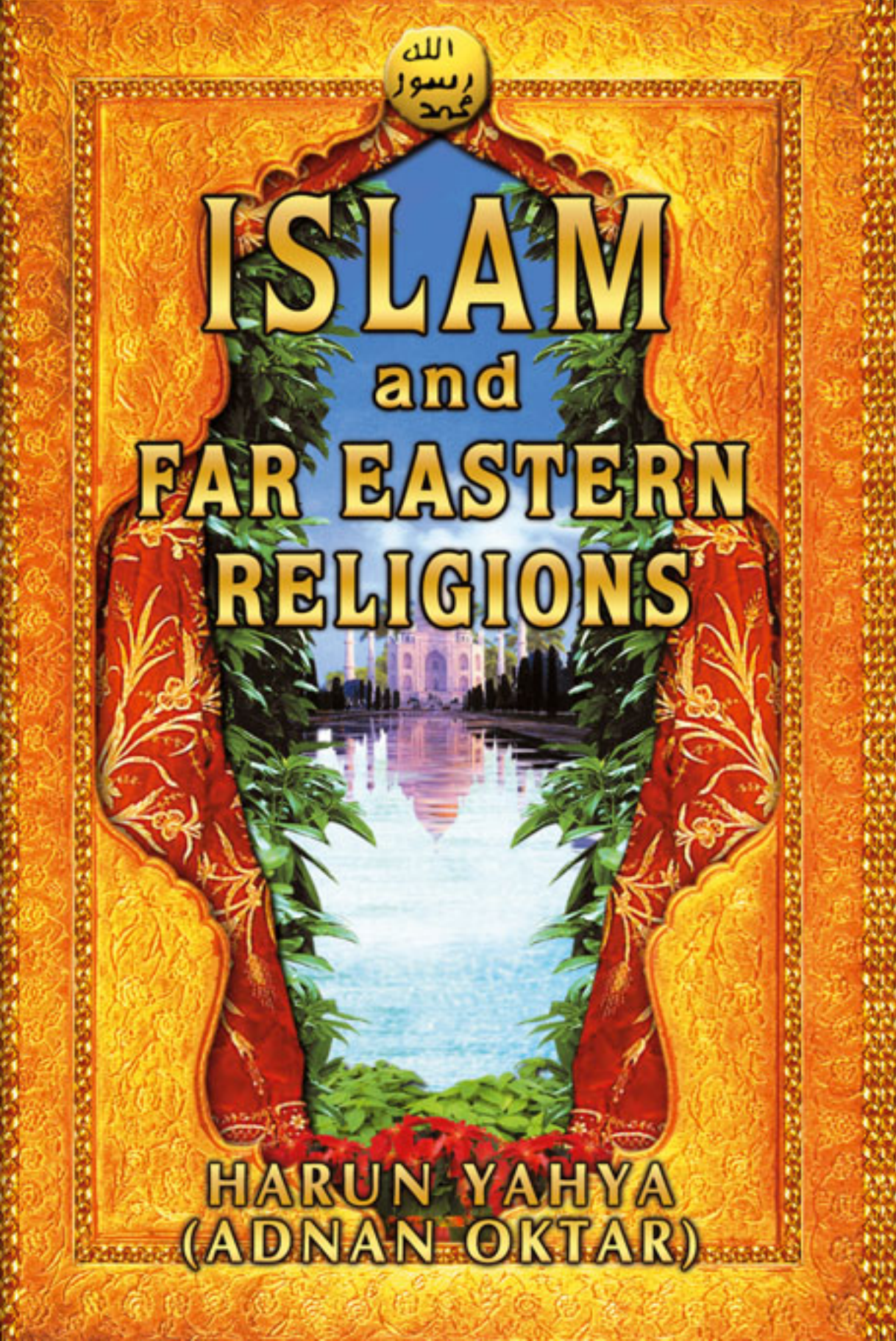

الله
رسول
محمد
ISLAM
and
FAR EASTERN
RELIGIONS
HARUN YAHYA
(ADNAN OKTAR)

The superstitious Far Eastern religions are a mystery to most. When superstitious faiths like Hinduism, Jainism, Buddhism, Sikhism, Shinto, Confucianism and Taoism are mentioned, people tend to think of religious communities who worship or pray to idols carved out of stone or wood, make offerings to and put on shows of seeming respect for them and perform mysterious ceremonies in dimly lit temples. The superstitious Eastern religions with their 1.5 billion believers worldwide, represent a gloomy life filled with pagan rituals, social injustices and miserable conditions, that is to say, a warped life. The most fundamental mistake of the believers in these superstitious faiths is that they deny the certainty of Allah's existence (Allah is beyond that) and put their faith into hundreds of millions of idols, perversely worshipping them and ignorantly hoping for help and salvation from them.

This book will reveal the flawed aspects, perversions, irrational and illogical practices, as well as the teachings that sanction the racism, violence and cruelty of these superstitious Eastern religions, as well as the teachings that, in their own minds, sanction racism, violence and cruelty. We hope that the practitioners of these religions will come to realize the perverted nature of their lifestyles and the losses that following blindly in the footsteps of their forefather's causes them in this life, as well as in the Hereafter, so they can leave these pagan beliefs behind and surrender to Allah.



ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Adnan Oktar, who writes under the pen-name Harun Yahya, was born in Ankara in 1956. Since the 1980s, the author has published many books on faith-related, scientific and political issues. He is well-known as the author of important works disclosing the imposture of evolutionists, their invalid claims, and the dark liaisons between Darwinism and such bloody ideologies as fascism and communism.

All of the author's works share one single goal: to convey the Qur'an's message, encourage readers to consider basic faith-related issues such as Allah's existence and unity and the Hereafter; and to expose irreligious systems' feeble foundations and perverted ideologies. His more than 300 works, translated into 72 different languages, enjoy a wide readership across the world.

By the will of Allah, the books of Harun Yahya will be a means through which people in the twenty-first century will attain the peace, justice, and happiness promised in the Qur'an.


بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم
الله
رسول
محمد





ISLAM

FAR EASTERN RELIGIONS

HARUN YAHYA
(ADNAN OKTAR)



To the Reader

- A special chapter is assigned to the collapse of the theory of evolution because this theory constitutes the basis of all anti-spiritual philosophies. Since Darwinism rejects the fact of creation—and therefore, Allah's existence—over the last 150 years it has caused many people to abandon their faith or fall into doubt. It is therefore an imperative service, a very important duty to show everyone that this theory is a deception. Since some readers may find the opportunity to read only one of our books, we think it appropriate to devote a chapter to summarize this subject.
- All the author's books explain faith-related issues in light of Qur'anic verses, and invite readers to learn Allah's words and to live by them. All the subjects concerning Allah's verses are explained so as to leave no doubt or room for questions in the reader's mind. The books' sincere, plain, and fluent style ensures that everyone of every age and from every social group can easily understand them. As a result of their effective, lucid narrative, they can be read at one sitting. Even those who rigorously reject spirituality are influenced by the facts these books document and cannot refute the truthfulness of their contents.
- This and all the other books by the author can be read individually, or discussed in a group. Readers eager to profit from the books will find discussion very useful, letting them relate their reflections and experiences to one another.
- In addition, it will be a great service to Islam to contribute to the publication and reading of these books, written solely for the pleasure of Allah. The author's books are all extremely convincing. For this reason, to communicate true religion to others, one of the most effective methods is encouraging them to read these books.
- We hope the reader will look through the reviews of his other books at the back of this book. His rich source material on faith-related issues is very useful, and a pleasure to read.
- In these books, unlike some other books, you will not find the author's personal views, explanations based on dubious sources, styles that are unobservant of the respect and reverence due to sacred subjects, nor hopeless, pessimistic arguments that create doubts in the mind and deviations in the heart.

www.harunyahya.com - www.en.harunyahya.tv
www.a9.com.tr

ISLAM

FAR EASTERN RELIGIONS

That is because those who are unbelievers follow falsehood whereas those who believe follow the truth from their Lord. In that way Allah makes comparisons for mankind. (Surah Muhammad, 3)

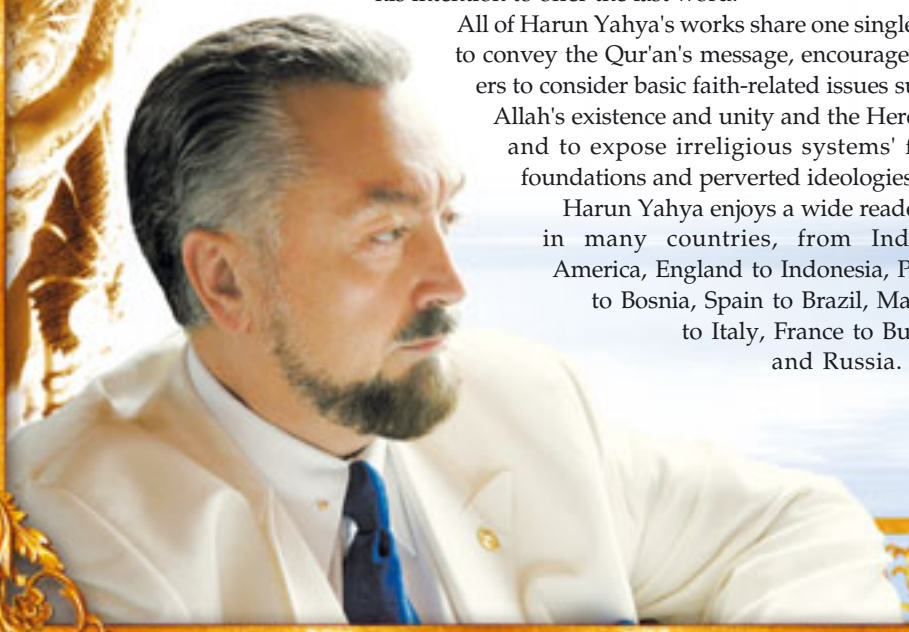
HARUN YAHYA
(ADNAN OKTAR)

About the Author

Now writing under the pen-name of HARUN YAHYA, Adnan Oktar was born in Ankara in 1956. Having completed his primary and secondary education in Ankara, he studied fine arts at Istanbul's Mimar Sinan University and philosophy at Istanbul University. Since the 1980s, he has published many books on political, scientific, and faith-related issues. Harun Yahya is well-known as the author of important works disclosing the imposture of evolutionists, their invalid claims, and the dark liaisons between Darwinism and such bloody ideologies as fascism and communism.

Harun Yahya's works, translated into 72 different languages, constitute a collection for a total of more than 55,000 pages with 40,000 illustrations.

His pen-name is a composite of the names Harun (Aaron) and Yahya (John), in memory of the two esteemed Prophets who fought against their peoples' lack of faith. The Prophet's seal on his books' covers is symbolic and is linked to their contents. It represents the Qur'an (the Final Scripture) and Prophet Muhammad (saas), last of the prophets. Under the guidance of the Qur'an and the Sunnah (teachings of the Prophet [saas]), the author makes it his purpose to disprove each fundamental tenet of irreligious ideologies and to have the "last word," so as to completely silence the objections raised against religion. He uses the seal of the final Prophet (saas), who attained ultimate wisdom and moral perfection, as a sign of his intention to offer the last word.



All of Harun Yahya's works share one single goal: to convey the Qur'an's message, encourage readers to consider basic faith-related issues such as Allah's existence and unity and the Hereafter; and to expose irreligious systems' feeble foundations and perverted ideologies.

Harun Yahya enjoys a wide readership in many countries, from India to America, England to Indonesia, Poland to Bosnia, Spain to Brazil, Malaysia to Italy, France to Bulgaria and Russia. Some

of his books are available in English, French, German, Spanish, Italian, Portuguese, Urdu, Arabic, Albanian, Chinese, Swahili, Hausa, Dhivehi (spoken in Maldives), Russian, Serbo-Croat (Bosnian), Polish, Malay, Uygur Turkish, Indonesian, Bengali, Danish and Swedish.

Greatly appreciated all around the world, these works have been instrumental in many people recovering faith in Allah and gaining deeper insights into their faith. His books' wisdom and sincerity, together with a distinct style that's easy to understand, directly affect anyone who reads them. Those who seriously consider these books, can no longer advocate atheism or any other perverted ideology or materialistic philosophy, since these books are characterized by rapid effectiveness, definite results, and irrefutability. Even if they continue to do so, it will be only a sentimental insistence, since these books refute such ideologies from their very foundations. All contemporary movements of denial are now ideologically defeated, by means the books written by Harun Yahya.

This is no doubt a result of the Qur'an's wisdom and lucidity. The author modestly intends to serve as a means in humanity's search for Allah's right path. No material gain is sought in the publication of these works.

Those who encourage others to read these books, to open their minds and hearts and guide them to become more devoted servants of Allah, render an invaluable service.

Meanwhile, it would only be a waste of time and energy to propagate other books that create confusion in people's minds, lead them into ideological confusion, and that clearly have no strong and precise effects in removing the doubts in people's hearts, as also verified from previous experience. It is impossible for books devised to emphasize the author's literary power rather than the noble goal of saving people from loss of faith, to have such a great effect. Those who doubt this can readily see that the sole aim of Harun Yahya's books is to overcome disbelief and to disseminate the Qur'an's moral values. The success and impact of this service are manifested in the readers' conviction.

One point should be kept in mind: The main reason for the continuing cruelty, conflict, and other ordeals endured by the vast majority of people is the ideological prevalence of disbelief. This can be ended only with the ideological defeat of disbelief and by conveying the wonders of creation and Qur'anic morality so that people can live by it. Considering the state of the world today, leading into a downward spiral of violence, corruption and conflict, clearly this service must be provided speedily and effectively, or it may be too late.

In this effort, the books of Harun Yahya assume a leading role. By the will of Allah, these books will be a means through which people in the twenty-first century will attain the peace, justice, and happiness promised in the Qur'an.

Contents

Introduction: Knowing the Pagan Far Eastern Religions 10

FIRST BOOK
THE DARK WORLD OF HINDUISM

Hinduism is an Idolatrous Religion 24

Hinduism's False Beliefs About Death and the Hereafter 60

A Life Based on False Teachings 72

The Merciless Social Order in India 98

A Fascist Interpretation of Hinduism: the Hindutva Movement 156

The Primary Target of Fascist Hindus are the Muslims 188



2nd BOOK
OTHER FAR EASTERN RELIGIONS

A Religion of Self Inflicted Suffering: Jainism.....228

Shintoism: The Perversion of Worshipping the Dead and Nature.....246

Pagan Chinese Religions 280

The New Age: A Pagan and Materialistic Religion.....340

Conclusion
What Should Be the Attitude of Muslims Towards the Far Eastern Religions?.....374

The Deception of Evolution 388

Introduction

KNOWING THE PAGAN FAR EASTERN RELIGIONS

The superstitious Far Eastern religions are a mystery to most. When superstitious faiths like Hinduism, Jainism, Buddhism, Sikhism, Shinto, Confucianism and Taoism are mentioned, people tend to think of religious communities who worship or pray to idols carved out of stone or wood, make offerings to and put on shows of seeming respect for them and perform mysterious ceremonies in dimly lit temples. Whereas Divine and monotheistic religions like Islam, Christianity and Judaism *(–the original state of Christianity and Judaism is referred to here as they have been tampered with and altered since their revelation—)* are based on revelation and call humanity to an enlightened, happy, safe and just life. The superstitious Eastern religions with their 1.5 billion believers[1] worldwide, represent a gloomy life filled with pagan rituals, social injustices and miserable conditions, that is to say, a warped life. The most fundamental mistake of the believers in these superstitious faiths is that they deny the certainty of Allah's existence (Allah is beyond that) and put their faith into hundreds of millions of idols, perversely worshipping them and ignorantly hoping for help and salvation from them.

The majority of Asian people believe in pagan religions like Hinduism and Buddhism. Buddhists prostrate before Buddha idols, making supplications and offerings to them, and Hindus worship literally millions of different idols. The irrationality and perversion of believing in the power of stone idols, of believing that such idols have the power to punish or reward, of respecting or fearing them is self-evident. Even worse, Hinduism demands reverence to cows, apes, mice, trees, rivers etc., which leads to even greater spiritual perversion, ignorance and darkness.

However, people who have such pagan beliefs have always existed in all periods of history. The narratives in the Qur'an of the many holy prophets reveal that they had met such people, whom they invited to stop worshipping other deities, and to worship and believe in Allah Almighty instead. The Surat al-'Ankabut reveals how Allah's beloved servant the Prophet Abraham (pbuh) spoke to his people:

> **Instead of Allah you worship only idols. You are inventing a lie. Those you worship besides Allah have no power to provide for you. So seek your provision from Allah and worship Him and give thanks to Him. It is to Him you will be returned. (Surat al-'Ankabut: 17)**

The modern day pagans are no different to the Prophet Abraham's (pbuh) nation. They too foolishly defended their beliefs by saying: **"No, but this is what we found our fathers doing."** (Surat ash-Shuara: 74). These people whose minds have been dulled with myths and pagan teachings are unable to realize their irrationality and misguided spirituality. They have given themselves up to these superstitious religions' inherited from their ancestors, whereas if they were to question their perverse beliefs rationally and conscientiously, if they were to seek to find the truth rather than to follow their ancestors path, they surely would realize the infinite might and power of our Lord Who has created them as well as everything else in the universe. Consequently, they would then also free themselves from their lives being determined by myths and find Allah's path of wisdom revealed to mankind by His messengers.

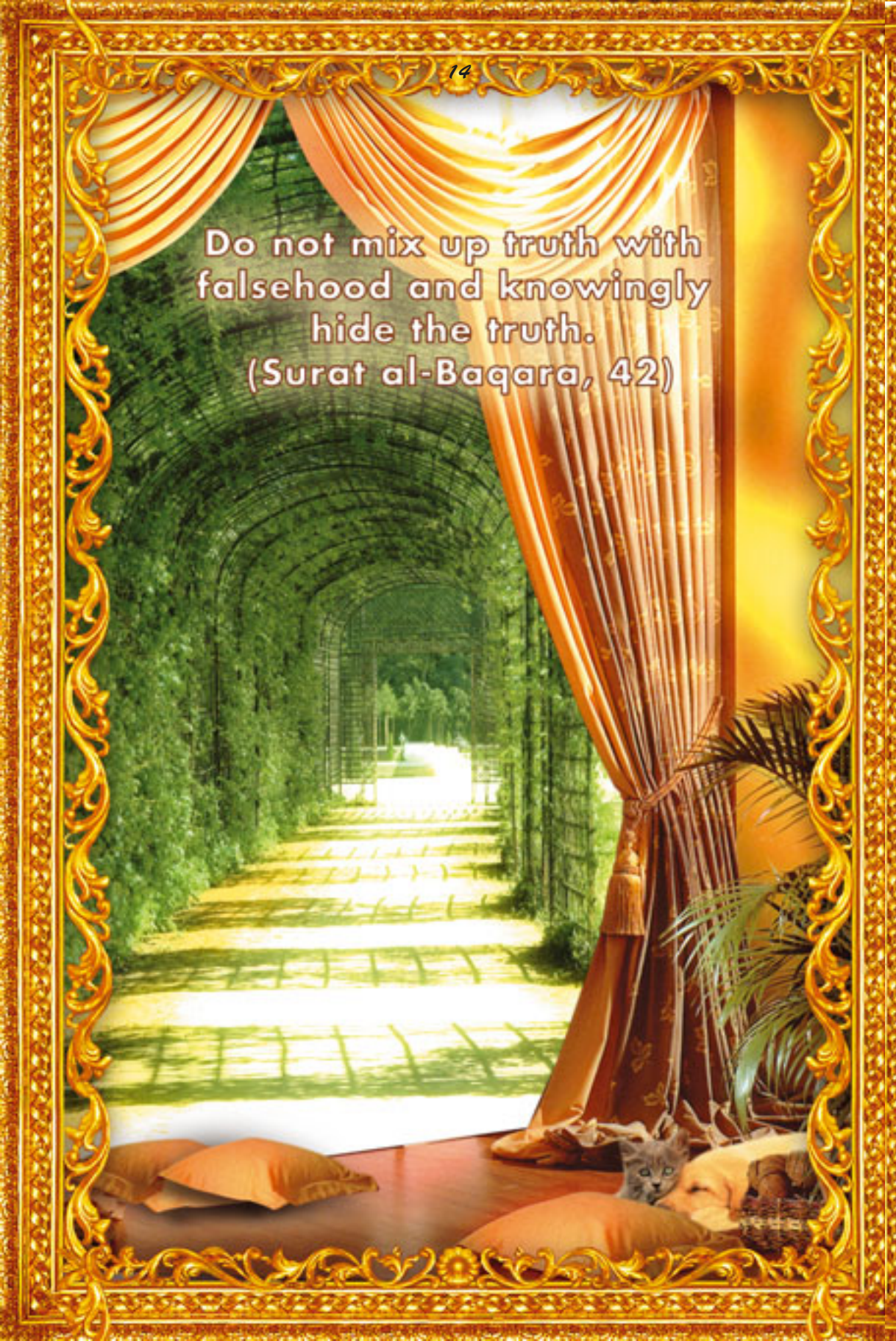
This book will reveal the flawed aspects, perversions, irrational and illogical practices, as well as the teachings that sanction the racism, violence and cruelty of these superstitious Eastern religions, as well as the teachings that, in their own minds, sanction racism, violence and

cruelty. We hope that the practitioners of these religions will come to realize the perverted nature of their lifestyles and the losses that following blindly in the footsteps of their forefather's causes them in this life, as well as in the hereafter, so they can leave these pagan beliefs behind and surrender to Allah.

We will also examine the far-reaching effects of these superstitious beliefs on the Western culture. The influence of superstitious Eastern religions on Western society is not easily recognizable at first. The Enlightenment of the 18th century followed by the materialism of the 19th century distanced European people from Divine religions and the spiritual void thus created enabled false Eastern religions like Hinduism and Buddhism to move into Western thought. These false religions played a major role in removing the good and positive morality of religions, in promoting the materialist worldview, and in misleading people in search of spirituality by misleading people with "a false religion opposed to belief in Allah."

The comprehensive propaganda campaign on behalf of the New Age movement which comprises all pagan teachings of the Far Eastern cultures, and is sometimes termed to be "the religion of the 21st century" or "the millennium religion", proves that New Age-like movements will be an issue in the 21st century Western world. Many Christian churches, especially the Vatican, consider such movements based on superstitious Far Eastern religions as one of the biggest threats to Christianity. A report prepared by the Vatican titled "A Christian reflection on the New Age", seen as a new interpretation of Christianity by some, just shows how big a threat this movement is considered to be by the Christian world.[2]

No doubt it is necessary that all people who genuinely believe in Allah unite and begin a coordinated ideological resistance against such


Do not mix up truth with
falsehood and knowingly
hide the truth.
(Surat al-Baqara, 42)

movements which distance people from the belief in Allah, and try to replace the good morality revealed by the Divine religions with materialist and pagan beliefs. One of the things that needs to be done in this respect is to demonstrate the huge gulf between the world of peace, happiness, security, justice, equality, solidarity, compassion, mercy and love recommended. and called for by the Divine religions. and the pagan religions worldview based on materialistic and spiritual perversion. It must not be forgotten that most people who are inclined to fall for these pagan religions in some Western world are people who seek attention by being different and original and mistakenly hope to find happiness in these superstitious religions. They are being led away from the true religions revealed to them by Allah through His Messengers into an abyss of spiritual darkness, gloom, fear and suffering.

It must be known that true happiness in this life as well as in the hereafter is only attainable by believing genuinely in Allah and by abiding by His will, because **"… Allah is the Real and what you call on apart from Him is false. Allah is the All-High, the Most Great…"** (Surat al-Hajj: 62)

> **He is Allah – there is no god but Him. He is the King, the Most Pure, the Perfect Peace, the Trustworthy, the Safeguarder, the Almighty, the Compeller, the Supremely Great. Glory be to Allah above all they associate with Him. (Surat al-Hashr: 23)**

First Book

THE DARK WORLD OF HINDUISM

The first religion that springs to mind when Eastern Religions are mentioned is the superstitious religion of Hinduism with its 900 million followers. This is a significant number. Around 15% of the world population follows Hinduism and a great proportion of India, Nepal and Indonesia are Hindu. Approximately 90% of India's population or 700 million of its people believe in Hinduism.

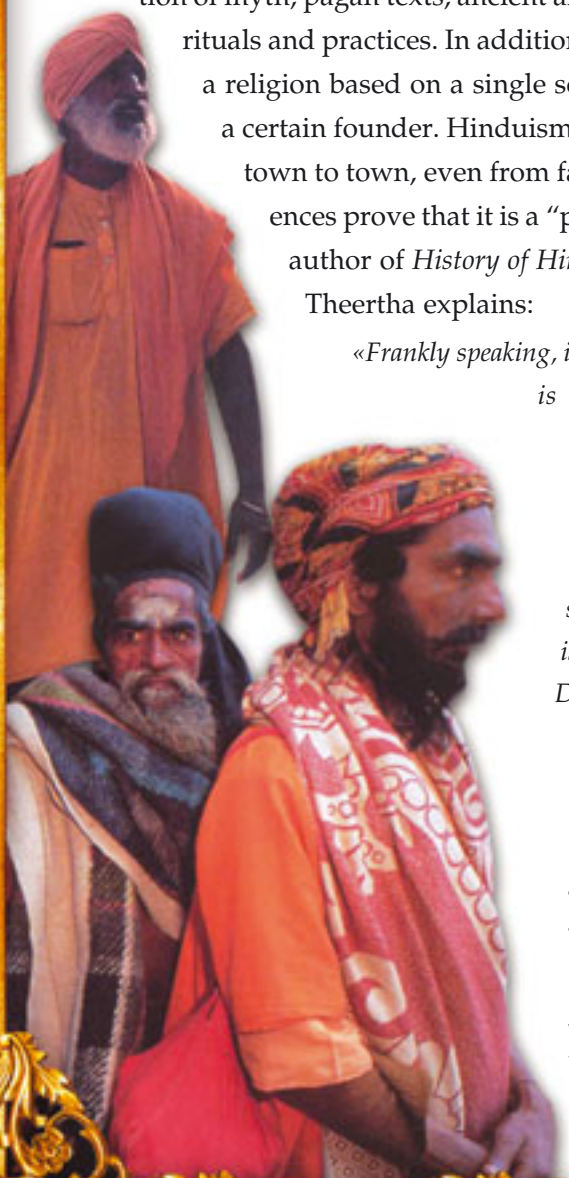
Strictly speaking it is wrong to call Hinduism a religion, because whereas Islam, Christianity and Judaism (though *Christianity and Judaism were altered after their revelation*) are true religions based on Divine revelation, Hinduism is a philosophy, a way of life and a culture originating from superstitious traditions that developed over many centuries. When we say "Hinduism is a false religion", we are speaking of the centuries old pagan Hindu culture.

Throughout history the lands around the Indus River have been populated by different cultures with different beliefs and traditions. India has been occupied many times. The oldest known conquerors of these lands are the Aryans who, descended from the North West and occupied Northern India between BC 2500-1500. This was not just a military occupation of Indian lands; the Aryans established their own civilization formed by synthesizing their own culture with elements of the native traditions. Whilst the native Indians were dark-skinned, Aryans were a white-skinned and tall race and the new culture was racist; it privileged the whites at the expense of the native population.

The Vedas written by the Aryans in Sanskrit around 1000 BC are generally acknowledged to be the oldest known Hindu texts. In the subsequent periods more texts by different authors were added to the Vedas, which when combined, became acknowledged as the so-called

sacred texts of Hinduism containing the perverted beliefs of the superstitious Hindu religion. Hinduism is therefore a "man-made" belief system based on the texts of the Aryan warriors who conquered India as opposed to Allah's revelation. With the British occupation of India in 1829 this perverse faith began to be called Hinduism, which is an amalgamation of myth, pagan texts, ancient and primitive traditions, folklore, rituals and practices. In addition, it is not possible to define it as a religion based on a single source book, established rules or a certain founder. Hinduism changes from village to village, town to town, even from family to family and these differences prove that it is a "personal, pagan way of life." The author of *History of Hindu Imperialism*, Swami Dharma Theertha explains:

«Frankly speaking, it is not possible to say definitely who is a Hindu and what Hinduism is. These questions have been considered again and again by eminent scholars, and so far no satisfactory answer has been given. Hinduism has within itself all types of religions such as theism, atheism, polytheism, Adwitism, Dwaitism, Saivism, Vaishnavism,



Hindu recluses believe that a life of hunger, destitution and pain will lead them to Brahma. Their state of self-inflicted suffering is an aberration disapproved of by Islam. Allah says in the Qur'an that "He does not want any injustice for His servants" (Surah Ghafir: 31)

and so forth. It contains nature worship, ancestor worship, animal worship, idol worship, demon worship, symbol worship and self worship. Its conflicting philosophies will confound any ordinary person. From barbarous practices and dark superstitions, up to the most mystic rites and sublime philosophies, there is place for all gradations and varieties in Hinduism. Similarly, among the Hindu population there are half barbarian wild tribes, and depressed classes and untouchables, along with small numbers of cultured, gentle natures and highly evolved souls.»[3]

Independent India's first prime minister (1947-1964) Pandit Nehru defines Hinduism in a similar way:

Hindu recluses walk the streets semi-naked, hungry and thirsty. Hair and beard are indiscernible and their appearance is filthy and dusted. They consider this way of life a virtue. These practices under the name of worship will neither benefit them on earth nor in the hereafter.



"Hinduism, as a faith, is vague, amorphous, many-sided, all things to all men. It is hardly possible to define it, or indeed to say definitely whether it is a religion or not, in the usual sense of the word. In its present form, and even in the past, it embraces many beliefs and practices, from the highest to the lowest, often opposed to or contradicting each other."[4]

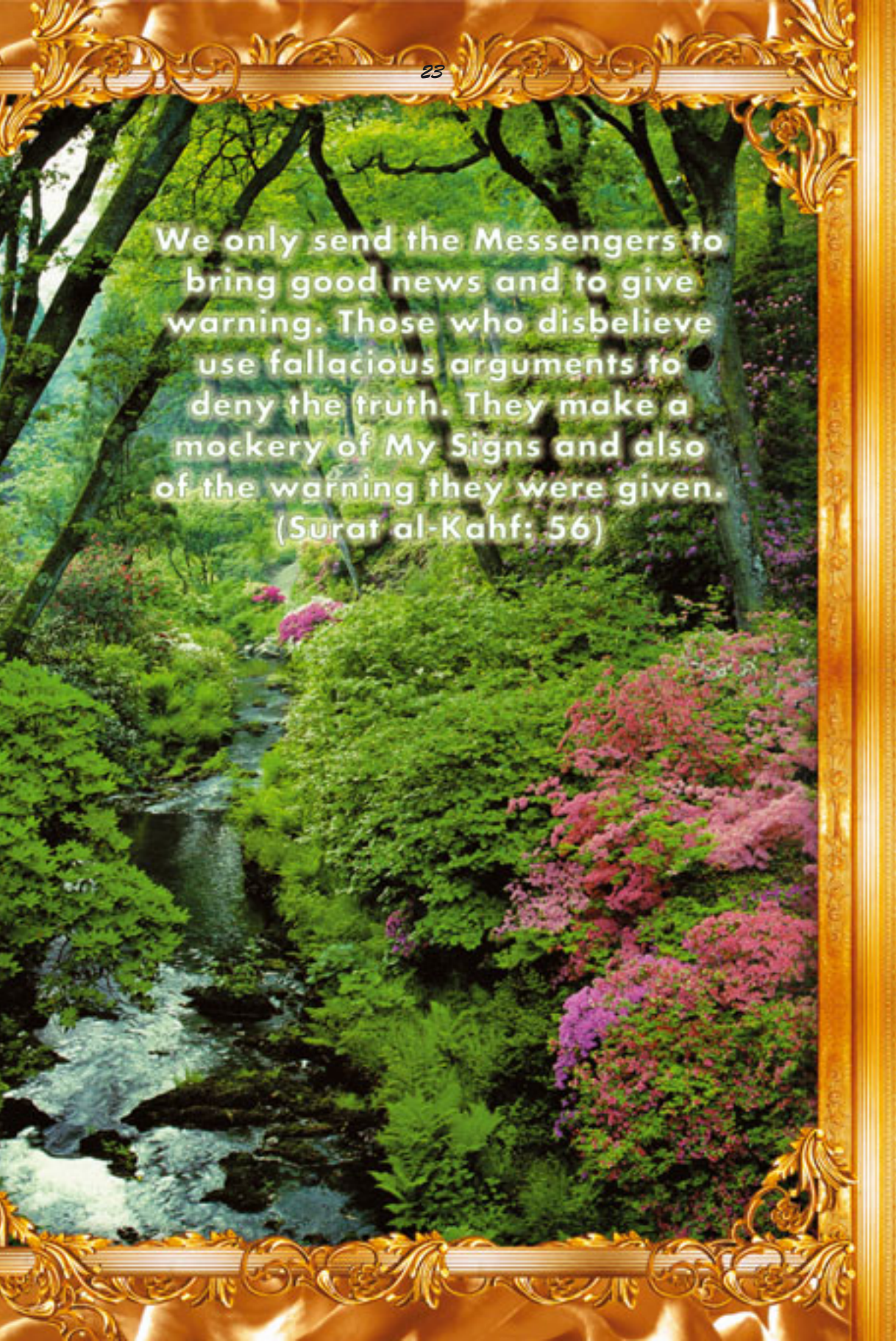
To sum up, Hinduism permits idolatry, the lowest forms of paganism, and unites people who worship satan, idols, trees, mountains, rivers and plants under one heretical system of belief. People are free to choose which idols they serve or to make some of their own, to create

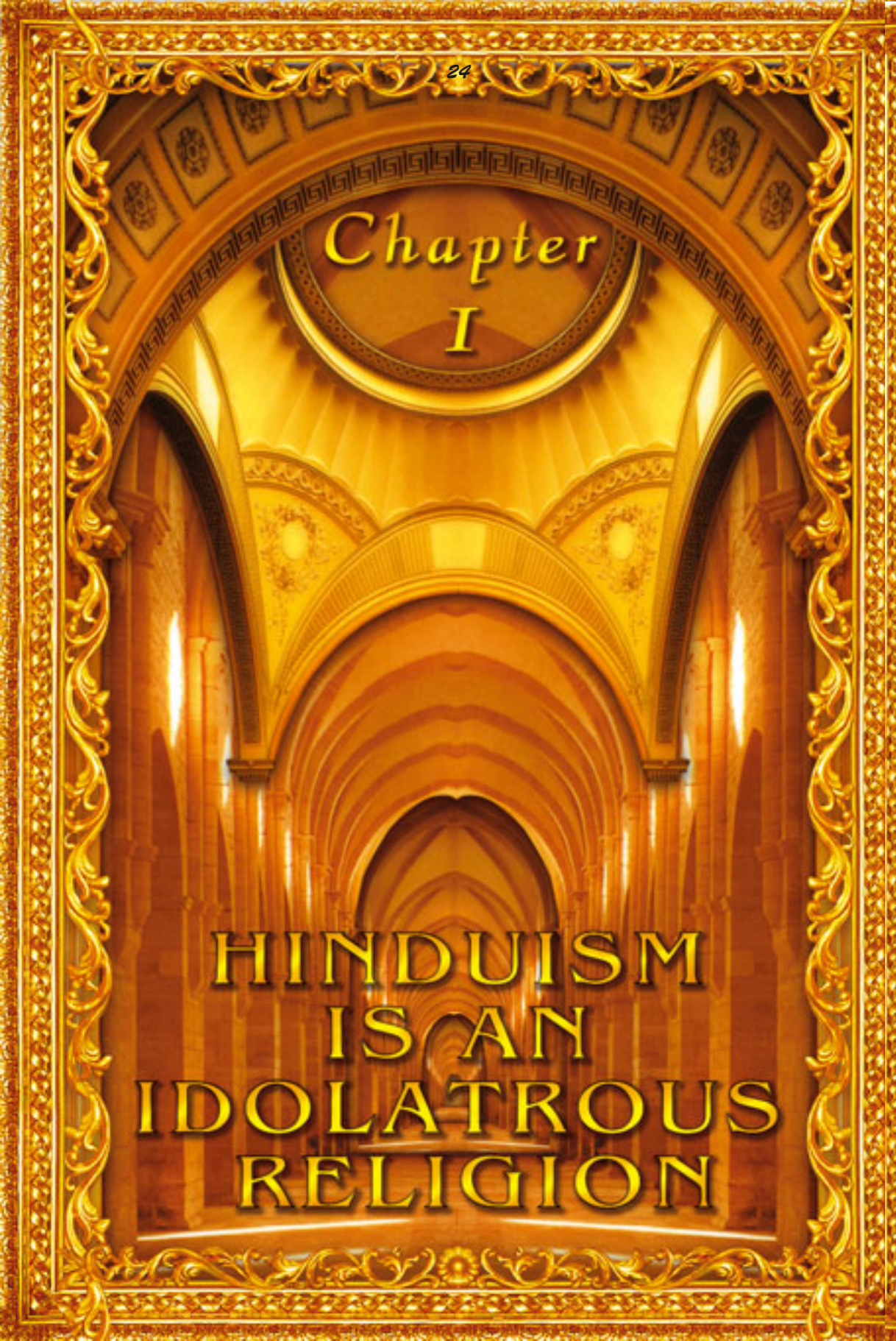




their own form of deviating beliefs and to bless them in their own shallow minds. This twisted mentality makes Hinduism, which is a wholly corrupted system of belief with its 300 million odd idols, a perverse religion and a dark way of life with endless variations. It is an oppressive and totalitarian way of life that controls it adherents round the clock. We will examine superstitious Hindu traditions, inter personal relations, and unjust social system in great detail over the next few chapters. It is possible to see it everywhere in life; in a twisted nationalism that is more akin to racism, in its hostility towards other nations, in national policies and in every other aspect of life, from how to eat to how to wash. Hindus believe that if they live their whole lives according to Hindu scriptures, they will be on the "right path". Because of this, they make a grave error by being a Hindu as it cannot provide anything of benefit in this life, or the hereafter. Hinduism is a false religion that is destined to be wiped off the face of the earth in light of the true faith. Our Lord states:

> **Say: "Truth has come and falsehood has vanished. Falsehood is always bound to vanish." (Surat al-Isra': 81)**


We only send the Messengers to
bring good news and to give
warning. Those who disbelieve
use fallacious arguments to
deny the truth. They make a
mockery of My Signs and also
of the warning they were given.
(Surat al-Kahf: 56)


Chapter
I
HINDUISM
IS AN
IDOLATROUS
RELIGION



s Hinduism has so many variations it is not possible to clearly identify this pagan belief's teachings or to categorize all its perverse aspects. The most fundamental fact about the superstitious Hindu religion is that it is a pagan belief that sanctions and encourages the worship of idols.

It is not an easy task to determine what kind of divinity Hindus believe in as they vary from community to community, town to town, and from one family to another. The only thing that can be said for sure about this superstitious religion is that it is heretical and pagan. Hindus interpret their ancient traditions in many different ways. Despite the fact that they worship millions of different idols, believe in their super natural powers of reward and punishment, they nevertheless do not consider themselves idolatrous. As they believe in a "universal spirit" called "Brahma" of which all the other idols are reflections of, they claim that Hinduism is a monotheistic religion.

In reality this is a perverse interpretation incompatible with Islam and as such, it is idolatrous. There is no need for a comprehensive investigation or long term observation to expose Hinduism as an idolatrous religion; the billions of idols spread across India reveal this fact by observation.

Idolatry is clearly defined in the verses of the Qur'an. The Arab idol worshippers of our Prophet Muhammad's (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) era believed in Allah as the Creator and Governor of the universe, but also believed in the powers of the idols they worshipped besides Him (Allah is beyond that) and often only because they thought of them as a "way" to Allah. There are obvious similarities between the ignorant Arab societies' idolatrous beliefs and the Hindus' be-

lief in Brahma. Allah reveals the error of such people in the following verse:

> **Indeed is the sincere religion not Allah's alone? If people take protectors besides Him – "We only worship them so that they may bring us nearer to Allah" – Allah will judge between them regarding the things about which they differed. Allah does not guide anyone who is an ungrateful liar. (Surat az-Zumar: 3)**

The ignorance of idolatry resembles Hinduism as Hindus, too, by their own foolish rationale, worship their so-called idols, make offerings to them, and revere and fear them. Hinduisms teachings clearly demonstrate that it is an idolatrous system of belief.

For a Muslim it is quite easy to define Hinduism as Muslims have a guide that distinguishes between right and wrong. The Qur'an is a guide sent by Allah for the enlightenment of all people.

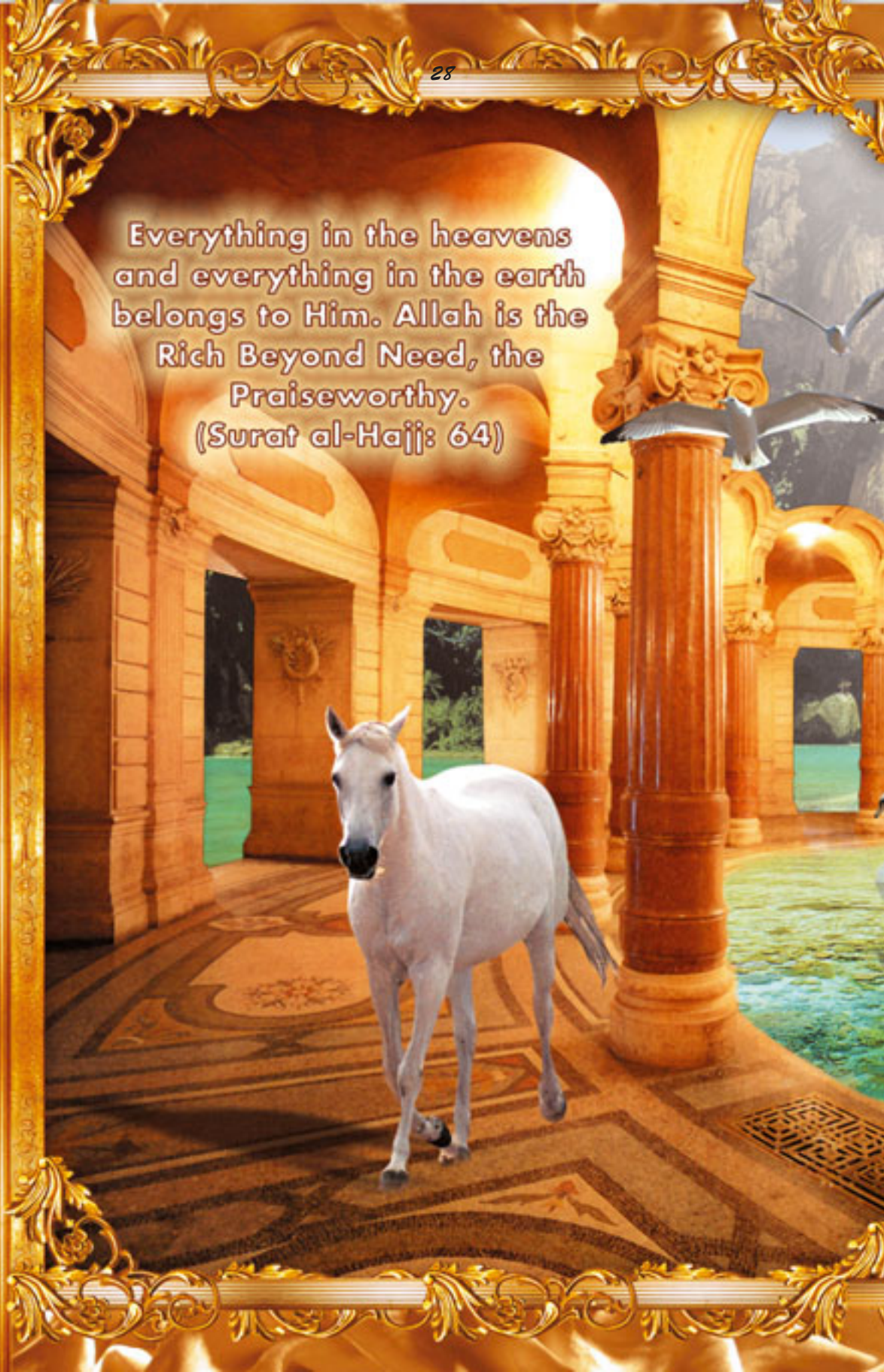
Islam acknowledges Allah to be the *One and Only* Allah and the system of faith is based on this principle and Muslims are people who believe in *La Ilahe IllAllah* (no god but Allah). Allah reveals the creation purpose of man: **"I only created jinn and man to worship Me."** (Surat adh-Dhariyat: 56) Every human being is responsible for surrendering and praying only to Allah, to ask only Allah for His help and not to associate anything or anyone else with our Lord and His attributes Allah reveals in the following verse:

> **Say: "I am commanded to worship Allah, making my religion sincerely His." (Surat az-Zumar: 11)**

And the following verse reminds us of this reality:

> **So set your face firmly towards the Religion, as a pure natural believer, Allah's natural pattern on which He made mankind... (Surat ar-Rum: 30)**

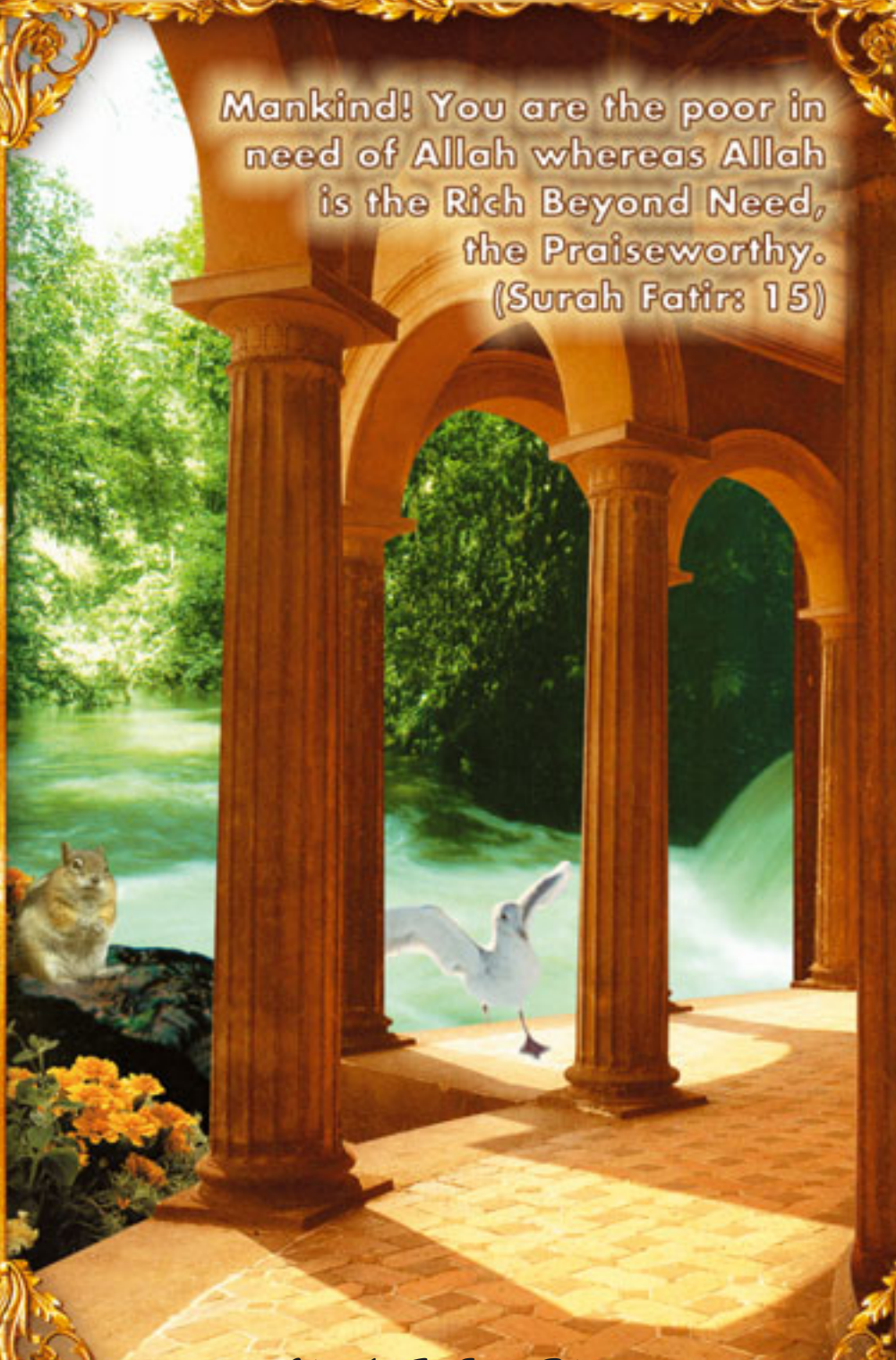

Yes, indeed! Everyone in the heavens
and everyone on the earth belongs to
Allah. Those who call on something
other than Allah are not really
following their partner-gods.
They are only following conjecture.
They are only guessing.
(Surah Yunus: 66)


Everything in the heavens
and everything in the earth
belongs to Him. Allah is the
Rich Beyond Need, the
Praiseworthy.
(Surat al-Hajj: 64)

Allah is the Sole Proprietor, Creator and Keeper of the universe and its inherent order. He is the One Who created the universe from nothing, gave it its form and order, created every living being found in the skies, the earth and in between and gave them life and sustenance. Allah reveals in Surah Fatir as:

> **He makes night merge into day and day merge into night, and He has made the sun and moon subservient, each one running until a specified time. That is Allah, your Lord. The Kingdom is His. Those you call on besides Him have no power over even the smallest speck. (Surah Fatir: 13)**

Our Lord Who created the whole universe in perfection is All-Knowing. Those who associate other beings with Him are committing a grave sin by prostrating before lifeless idols, which they also unwisely revere, because Allah owns everything that exists and only He deserves reverence, obedience and gratefulness. This fact is revealed in the verses:


Mankind! You are the poor in need of Allah whereas Allah is the Rich Beyond Need, the Praiseworthy.
(Surah Fatir: 15)

Say, "O Allah! Master of the Kingdom! You give sovereignty to whoever You will, You take sovereignty from whoever You will. You exalt whoever You will You abase whoever You will. All good is in Your hands. You have power over all things." (Surah Al 'Imran: 26)

Our Lord rules everything alive or lifeless and He is witness to everything we say, think or do. He is the One Who knows what people think and secretly scheme and He knows the best kept secrets.

You do not engage in any matter or recite any of the Qur'an or do any action without Our witnessing you while you are occupied with it. Not even the smallest speck eludes your Lord, either on earth or in heaven. Nor is there anything smaller than that, or larger, which is not in a Clear Book. (Surah Yunus: 61)

Every being on the face of the earth is dependent on Allah, Who is above human weaknesses and does not depend on anything Himself. Allah is the Only being to seek refuge with and depend on and it is only Him that faith and hope belong to. Allah has always been, and always will be, and He always was, is and will be alive:

Allah, there is no god but Him, the Living, the Self-Sustaining. He is not subject to drowsiness or sleep. Everything in the heavens and the earth belongs to Him. Who can intercede with Him except by His permission? He knows what is before them and what is behind them but they cannot grasp any of His knowledge save what He wills. His Footstool encompasses the heavens and the earth and their preservation does not tire Him. He is the Most High, the Magnificent. (Surat al-Baqara: 255)

Allah is All-powerful and everything happens within His knowledge and will. Everything that happens between the heavens and earth, does so by His will. Death and birth, natural phenomena and everything conceivable; they all happen by His will. Every decision, from the smallest to the biggest and every subsequent action, they all happen by His

will. Every single one of the trillions of cells in our bodies with all their parts and functions down to the last detail, including the systems that sustain them, is controlled by Allah. Everything on the Earth, itself spinning around in the emptiness of the universe, even the sustenance and reproduction of the little ants, are by the will of Allah. He reveals this reality with the following verse:

> **… There is no creature He does not hold by the forelock… (Surah Hud: 56)**

No human being or any other creature has any power independent of Allah and all beings surrender to Him. Everything in the heavens and on the earth has submitted to Allah and is under His control. No one can move outside of Allah's will and control, not even say a word. Allah owns all the worlds and all power rests with Him. Forgetting this reality and hoping for the help from beings carved out of stone, that can neither help themselves nor others in the slightest way unless Allah wills it, will bring people nothing but disaster on earth as well as the hereafter. Allah states in the Surat al-A'raf:

> **Do they make things into partner-gods which cannot create anything and are themselves created; which are not capable of helping them and cannot even help themselves? If you call them to guidance they will not follow you. It makes no difference if you call them or stay silent. Those you call on besides Allah are servants just like yourselves. Call on them and let them respond to you if you are telling the truth. Do they have legs they can walk with? Do they have hands they can grasp with? Do they have eyes they can see with? Do they have ears they can hear with? Say: "Call on your partner-gods and try all your wiles against me and grant me no reprieve. My Protector is Allah Who sent down the Book. He takes care of the righteous." Those you call on besides Him are not capable of helping you. They cannot even help themselves. If you call them to guidance, they do**

He created the heavens and the earth with truth. He is exalted above anything they associate with Him.
(Surat an-Nahl: 3)



not hear. You see them looking at you, yet they do not see. (Surat al-A'raf: 191-198)

Examining Hinduism reveals a practice full of perverted, pagan, primitive, irrational and illogical rituals. Hindus spend their entire lives worshipping their imaginary gods in ignorance. It is possible to see these idols everywhere in India: in temples, homes, small roadside shanties, in carved stone images, in advertising, calendars, movie posters, shops, jewelry, statuettes and house decorations, in short, they are imbedded in every area of life in Hindu dominated lands.

Allah reveals the situation of such people in the Surah Fatir:

If you call on them they will not hear your call, and were they to hear, they would not respond to you. On the Day of Resurrection they will reject your making associates of them. No one can inform you like One Who is All-aware. (Surah Fatir: 14)

One of the reasons why Hindus claim not to be idolatrous is that they know that the rest of the world is aware of the nonsensical nature of their superstitious religion. When they claim that the idols they worship are in reality not idols but means by which they reach "Brahma" or the "universal spirit", they are not aware of the fact that throughout history, all idolatrous people have made the same claim. As we have already stated, the deniers by association at the time of our Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) claimed too that they worshipped idols only in order to reach Allah. The reason for this heretical belief is that the deniers of the ignorant era who ascribed partners to Allah, like the Hindus, blindly and without questioning, followed the teachings inherited from their forefathers. Allah reveals in the Qur'an the inherent bigotry of the Prophet Abraham's (pbuh) nation in a conversation between him and them:

Instead of Allah you worship only idols. You are inventing a lie. Those you worship besides Allah have no power to provide for you...
(Surat al-'Ankabut: 17)



A bronze statue of the Hindu deity Brahma

When he said to his father and his people, "What do you worship?" They said, "We worship idols and will continue to cling to them." He said, "Do they hear you when you call or do they help you or do you harm?" They said, "No, but this is what we found our fathers doing." (Surat ash-Shu'ara': 70-74)

The leading propagators of the propaganda to enhance the so-called appeal of Hinduism are not necessarily Hindus themselves. Materialistic and Darwinist circles play an important role in this propaganda machine as we will see in the coming chapters in greater detail. However, there is a natural dislike originating in the Christian traditions of the west against idolatry. Even though Christianity itself has been altered over time and suffered degeneration, it nevertheless preserved some of its original core values. As such, Christianity considers idolatry as a form of perversion and regards Hinduism as an idolatrous religion. Circles wishing to introduce Hinduism into western society use the term "universal spirit" in order to conceal its inherent perversions and to dissociate it from idolatry. Exposing this fraud for what it is can be done by inviting the adherents of the Hindu faith to listen to the voice of their conscience, to reflect and to use their reason. Allah reveals that we must appeal to the conscience of people who err by acquiring other gods besides Him:

… Say: "So why have you taken protectors apart from Him who possess no power to help or harm themselves?" Say: "Are the blind and seeing equal? Or are darkness and light the same? Or have they assigned partners to Allah Who create as He creates, so that all creating seems the same to them?" Say: "Allah is the Creator of everything. He is the One, the All-Conquering." (Surat ar-Ra'd: 16)

HINDUS WORSHIP MILLIONS OF IDOLS

In our book titled *Islam and Buddhism* we examined in detail the heretic beliefs of Buddhism that instruct the twisted worship of Buddha statues, making offerings of food to them and to devote oneself to Buddha in hunger and destitution. (See: *Islam and Buddhism*, Harun Yahya, May, 2003). The number of idols worshipped in Hinduism reaches 300-350 million as every Hindu can make his own according to the perverted teachings of Hinduism, or worship any being of his choice, alive or dead. There is one idol for every three Hindus. And this demonstrates sufficiently that the whole religion is just one great myth.

Hindus can ascribe divinity to virtually everything and anything; to people, animals, plants, even to places or natural phenomena, such as rivers, mountains, etc. Each town has its own invented divinity and there are idols of monkeys, snakes and many others at the gateway to each town. Every Hindu has a shrine with his own idols in his home and even within the same household there can be different idols for different members of the family to whom they bow down. In the mornings they wake their idols with lights and songs, clean them and make offerings to them in the form of flowers, food and milk. Allah reveals that these idols of idolatrous nations by which people are misled, have no power whatsoever:

> **"Do they have legs they can walk with? Do they have hands they can grasp with? Do they have eyes they can see with? Do they have ears they can hear with? (Surat al-A'raf: 195)**

Hindus do not ponder the great error, irrationality or warped logic inherent in their worship; indeed, they regard every action of theirs as a so-called act of worship. This kind of worship offered to idols or so called divinities of stone or wood is a strictly forbidden sin in all reli-

gions based on Divine revelation. Those who worship anything besides Allah, alive or dead, are termed to be *idolaters* in the Qur'an, meaning to ascribe partners to Allah. Ascribing partners to Allah means to value other beings on equal terms with Him or to value them higher (Allah is beyond that). Someone who ascribes partners to Allah in grave ignorance directs his love and attention to these other beings rather than Him and thus he will have acquired these other beings as his gods. Whilst some deniers by association deny Allah's existence outright, others worship their other "divinities" alongside Him. There are many verses in the Qur'an revealing that Allah will not forgive those who ascribe partners to Him and the following are some of them:

Allah does not forgive anything being associated with Him but He forgives whomever He wills for anything other than that. Anyone who associates something with Allah has committed a terrible crime. (Surat an-Nisa': 48)

"…Tribe of Israel! Worship Allah, my Lord and your Lord. If anyone associates anything with Allah, Allah has forbidden him the Garden and his refuge will be the Fire." The wrongdoers will have no helpers. (Surat al-Ma'ida: 72)

Allah does not forgive anything being associated with Him but He forgives whomever He wills for anything other than that. Anyone who associates something with Allah has gone very far astray. (Surat an-Nisa': 116)

Luqman's (pbuh) advise to his son is related in another verse:

… "My son, do not associate anything with Allah. Associating others with Him is a terrible wrong." (Surah Luqman: 13)

The mindless rituals of Hindu beliefs are so numerous and detailed that they cannot be recounted one by one. There are different sects, myths, rituals and perverse sacrificial ceremonies dedicated to each idol in the Hindu scriptures. These myths tell of the family lives, enemies,

weaknesses, ambitions, supernatural powers and methods of punishment of these idols. Hindus also ignorantly revere every being, living or dead that is touched by, used for transport or spend time with these idols. Their daily lives are divided into periods for the reverence of different idols at different times and Hindus genuinely believe in their existence and power. The most revered divinities of Hindus are the following three: Brahma, Vishnu and Shiva. Brahma is the imaginary creator, Vishnu the protector and Shiva is the destroyer. Hinduism is based on millions of such superstitious beliefs. Fantastic stories belonging to the world of fairytales are presented here as a superstitious religion. Islam on the other hand is based on the Qur'an, described as follows by our Lord:



Brahma, Vishnu and Shiva are the three most revered Hindu deities. According to the pagan beliefs of Hinduism, these three imaginary deities have many powers. It is impossible for a person of common sense to believe that idols carved of stone or wood could help them in the belief that they have powers and might.



Hindus use every opportunity to revere their idol Ganesha. These strange rituals are incompatible with reason and will cause them nothing but a loss here as well as in the hereafter.

Falsehood cannot reach it from before it or behind it –it is a revelation from One Who is All-Wise, Praiseworthy. (Surah Fussilat: 42)

… The Qur'an was sent down as guidance for mankind, with Clear Signs containing guidance and discrimination. (Surat al-Baqara: 185)

Someone who believes in Allah will spend his entire life according to Allah's good pleasure and will abide by Allah's commandments revealed in the Qur'an. A Believer is recognized by his deep love for, and fear of Allah, genuine faith and strong conscience. As he follows the voice of his conscience at all times in his life, he can distinguish between right and wrong, has insight as well as foresight and is rational. He is well aware of the great loss that is harvested by people who distance themselves from the morality of the Qur'an and instead simply follow the traditions inherited from their ancestors. The situation of the deniers who lack these qualities is revealed in the verses:

Instead of Allah you worship only idols. You are inventing a lie. Those you worship besides Allah have no power to provide for you. So seek your provision from Allah and worship Him and give thanks to Him. It is to Him you will be returned. (Surat al-'Ankabut: 17)

Say: "Call on those you make claims for besides Allah. They have no power over even the smallest particle, either in the heavens or in the earth. They have no share in them. He has no need of their support." (Surah Saba': 22)

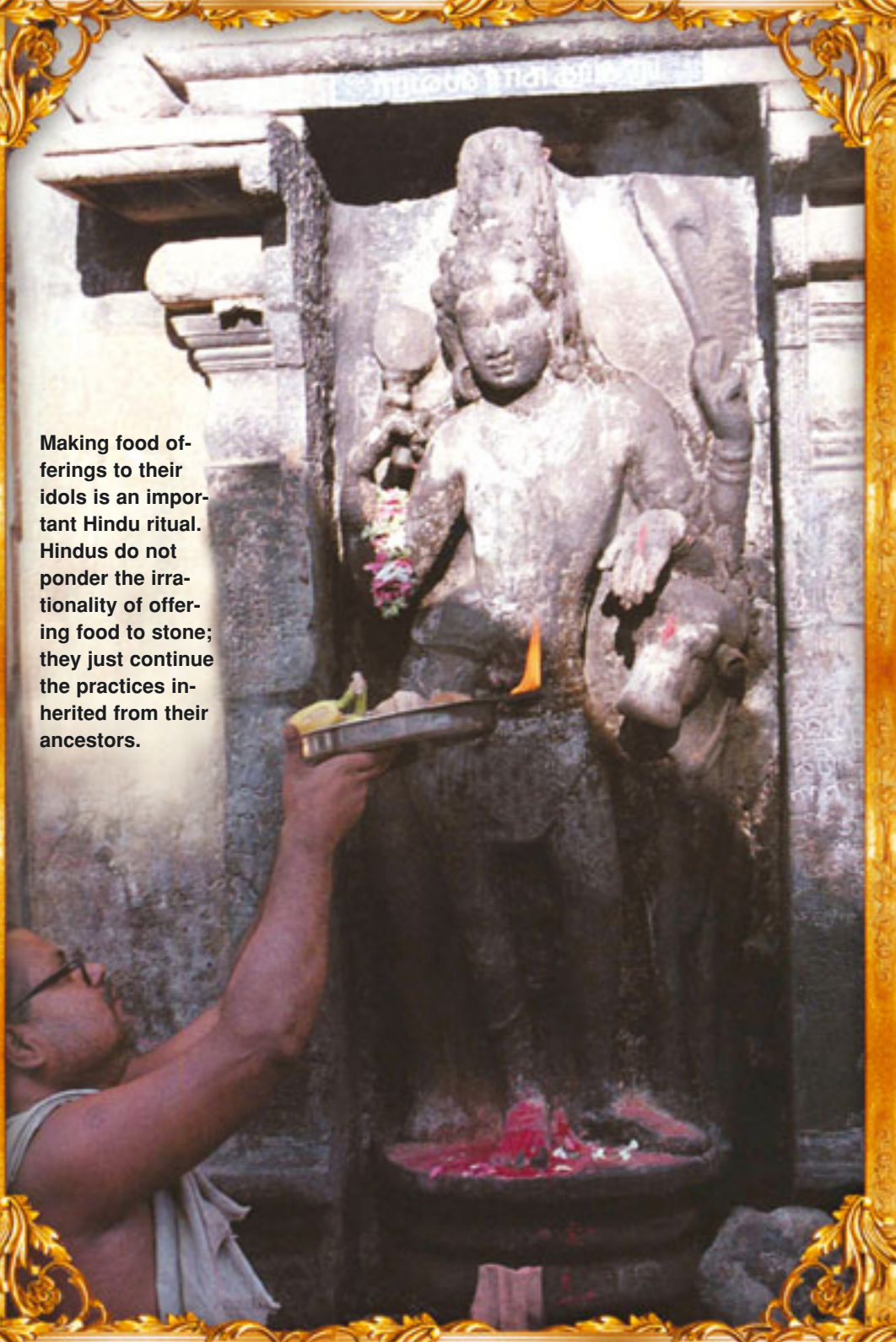
Like all people who ascribe partners to Allah, Hindus too fall into the same mistake by believing that the idols they worship have powers independent of Allah. They believe that the idols of stone or wood before which they prostrate themselves can hear them and are aware of the sins they commit and that they can harm or curse them. In reality they commit a grave sin by believing in this falsehood and they enter an irrational and illogical dead-end in this way. Allah offers them salvation in the following way:

Allah is He Who created you, then provides for you, then will cause you to die and then bring you back to life. Can any of your partner-gods do any of that? Glory be to Him and may He be exalted above anything they associate with Him! (Surat ar-Rum: 40)

The superstitious rituals of Hinduism are so numerous that it is impossible to recount them all. For instance, Hindus genuinely revere the icons in their shrines. Like divine guests, they are offered love, services and very much devotion. They are given water to drink and wash, clothing, flowers, incense and much more. These idols are awakened each morning like a human being, dressed, visited by other Hindus, supposedly worshipped and then left to rest. During religious Hindu festivals communal offerings are made to them, they are given presents, fasted for and everybody tries to prove his devotion and reverence to these powerless things in great ignorance.[5] Hindus are not aware of the futility and debasement of their actions. They cannot comprehend the irrationality and nonsense of awakening and dressing them, or talking to them, and they are ignorant of the fact that only schizophrenics live under such illusions. Allah reveals the superstitious beliefs of idolaters:

He said, "Do they hear you when you call or do they help you or do you harm?" They said, "No, but this is what we found our fathers doing." (Surat ash-Shu'ara': 72-74)

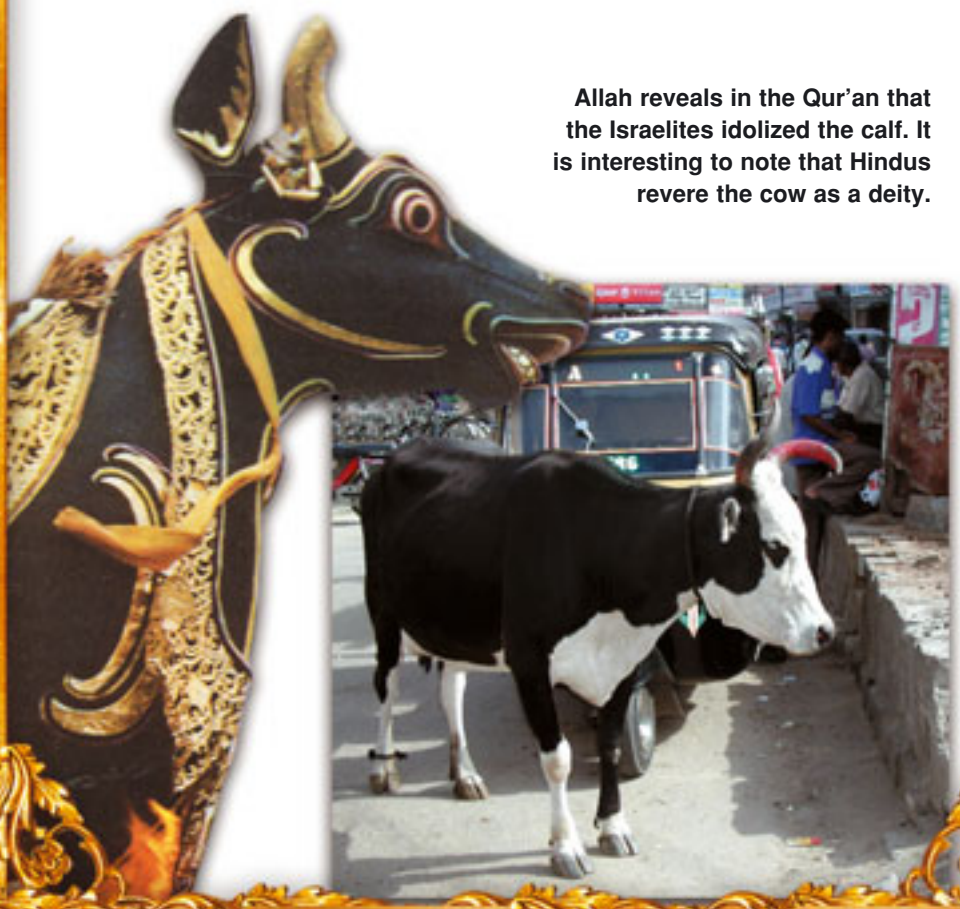
According to the superstitious beliefs of Hinduism, cows, monkeys, some bird, bear and crocodile species, deer, elephants, cats, mice, vultures, ravens and dogs are sacred[6] and Hindus therefore revere these creatures with the same reverence as they would with their other divinities. For instance, in the Karni Mata Temple in Deshnoke, India no one harms or hinders the rats who live there as this is acknowledged to be a big sin.[7] The most sacred and revered animals of all is the cow. A Hindu, if he encounters a cow or the picture of a cow on his way, per-



Making food offerings to their idols is an important Hindu ritual. Hindus do not ponder the irrationality of offering food to stone; they just continue the practices inherited from their ancestors.

versely begins to offer his respects as he ignorantly believes that the cow is a most sacred and divine creature with supernatural powers, the "mother of mankind".

The cow is considered to be the mother of the heavens, the air and the earth in the Hindu faith. (Allah is beyond that) This is why cows can freely roam on roads, shopping centers or wherever they wish. The eating of its flesh is forbidden, and killing a cow is prohibited by law. The excrement and urine of cows is considered sacred and valuable in equal measures. As Hindus believe that they have healing as well as soul purifying properties, the excrement and urine of the cow is revered, and can be eaten or drunk.[8] It goes without saying that the worship of cows



Allah reveals in the Qur'an that the Israelites idolized the calf. It is interesting to note that Hindus revere the cow as a deity.

to this extent with such repulsive practices requires mental, spiritual and rational degeneration. The fact that not even university educated Hindus of a certain intellectual capacity will compromise on these perverse practices, shows clearly the dark and dangerous hold of the Hindu faith on people. These people's minds are so clouded by the superstitious Hindu traditions that they are no longer aware of what they are doing and why they are doing it; they have lost the ability to distinguish between right and wrong. There is another factor they are unaware of: even if all their idols were to join their forces, "nothing and no one and no way" could they prevent a disaster sent to them by Allah. Allah says in the Surat al-A'raf:

> **Do they make things into partner-gods which cannot create anything and are themselves created; which are not capable of helping them and cannot even help themselves? (Surat al-A'raf: 191-192)**

It is interesting to observe that cows are sacred animals in the Hindu faith, because Allah reveals many verses of the Qur'an regarding those who perversely worshipped the calf: **As for those who took the calf (for worship), anger from their Lord will overtake them together with abasement in the life of this world. That is how we repay the purveyors of falsehood.** (Surat al-A'raf: 152) It is revealed in the verses that when the Prophet Moses (pbuh) left his nation, some of the Israelites began to idolize the calf and worshipped it in his absence. Allah reveals in Surat al-Baqara as:

> **And when We allotted to Moses forty nights. Then you took the calf (for worship) when he had gone and you were wrongdoers. (Surat al-Baqara: 51)**
>
> **Then he produced a calf for them, a physical form which made a lowing sound. So they said, "This is your god – and Moses's god as well, but he forgot." Could they not see that it did not reply to them and**



It is obvious that worshipping cows is a perversion of reason, ethics and the soul. It is truly surprising to see that a whole nation can have such an irrational belief in the 21st century.

that it possessed no power to either harm or benefit them? (Surah Ta Ha: 88-89)

Moses brought you the clear signs; then, after he left, you took the calf (for worship) and were wrongdoers. Remember when We made a covenant with you and lifted up the Mount above your heads: "Take hold vigorously of what We have given you and listen." They said, "We hear and disobey." They were made to drink the calf into their hearts because of their disbelief. Say, "If you are believers, what an evil thing your faith has made you do." (Surat al-Baqara: 92-93)

After he left, Moses's people took the calf (for worship) made from their ornaments, a form which made a lowing sound. Did they not see that it could not speak to them or guide them to any way? They adopted it and so they were wrongdoers. (Surat al-A'raf: 148)

As for those who took the calf (for worship), anger from their Lord will overtake them together with abasement in the life of this world. That is how we repay the purveyors of falsehood. (Surat al-A'raf: 152)

They said, "We will not stop devoting ourselves to it until Moses returns to us." (Surah Ta Ha: 91)

As revealed in the verses some of the Israelites devoted themselves to the calf and Aaron (pbuh) was forced to warn them repeatedly to stop this perversion. The Surah Ta Ha reveals Aaron's (pbuh) warning:

Aaron had earlier said to them, "My people! It is just a trial for you. Your Lord is the All-Merciful, so follow me and obey my command!" (Surah Ta Ha: 90)

When the Prophet Moses (pbuh) returns to his nation, he finds them worshipping the calf:

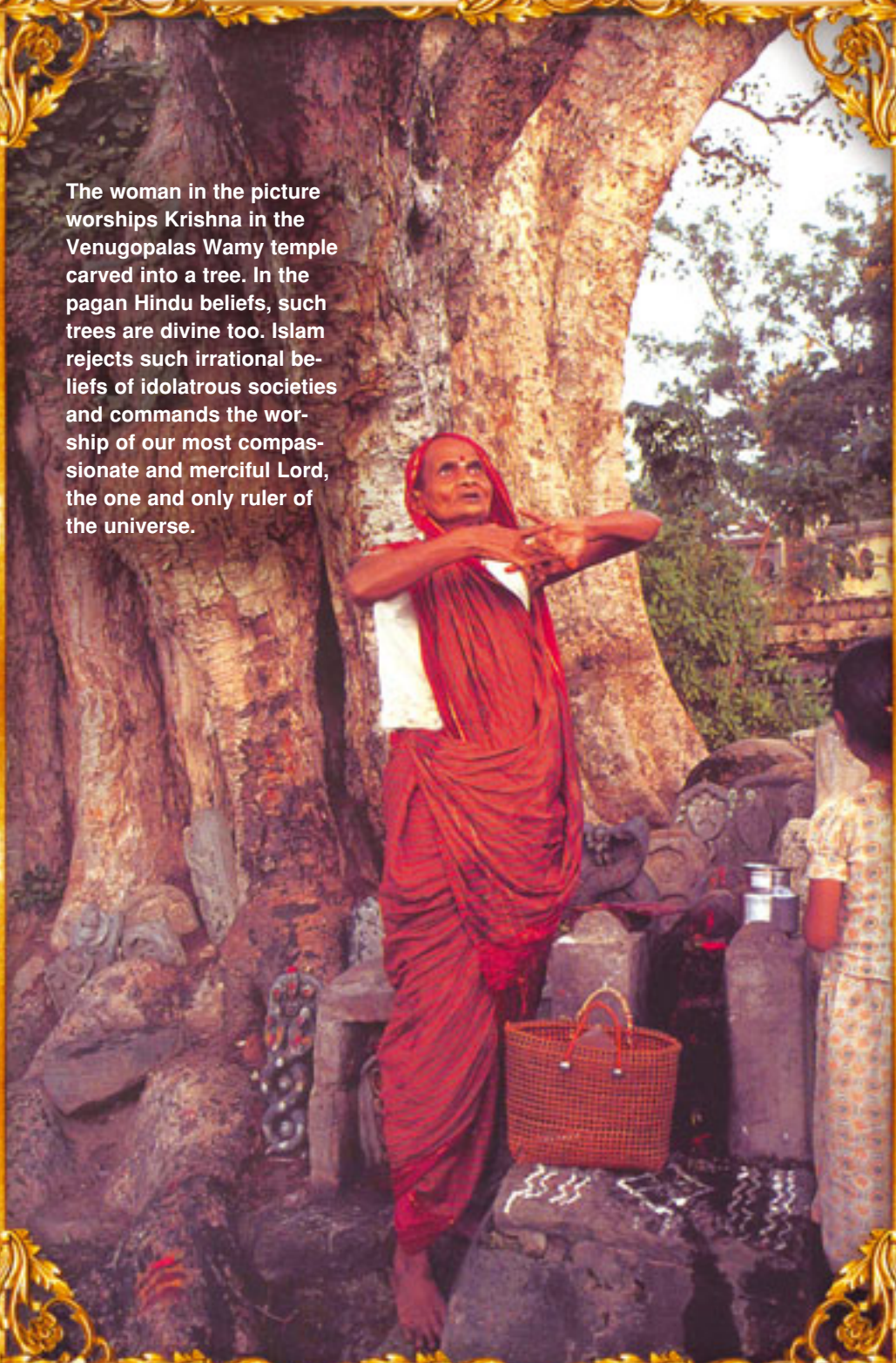
And when Moses said to his people, "My people, You wronged yourselves by taking the calf (for worship) so turn towards your Maker and kill yourselves. That is the best thing for you in your Maker's

Sight." And He turned towards you. He is the Ever-Returning, the Most Merciful. (Surat al-Baqara: 54)

The similarity between modern Hindus, who worship the cow, and some of the Israelites of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) era who took the calf as their chosen divinity, is striking. The Hindus too, out of grave ignorance, chose the cow to which Allah refers to in many of His verses and not an other animal or object as their god and committed a grave sin by doing so. However, some of the Israelites at the time of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) subsequently realized their big error and Allah accepted their repentance and forgave them their sin. The Hindus too should realize the perversion of such a belief, repent with a true heart and surrender truthfully to Allah. It can be hoped that Allah will forgive them too and guide them onto the righteous path. Allah reveals in Surat al-Baqara as:

Except for those who repent and put things right and make things clear. I turn towards them. I am the Ever-Returning, the Most Merciful. But as for those who disbelieve and die while they are disbelievers, the curse of Allah is upon them and that of the angels and all mankind. They will be under it for ever. The punishment will not be lightened for them. They will be granted no reprieve. (Surat al-Baqara: 160-162)

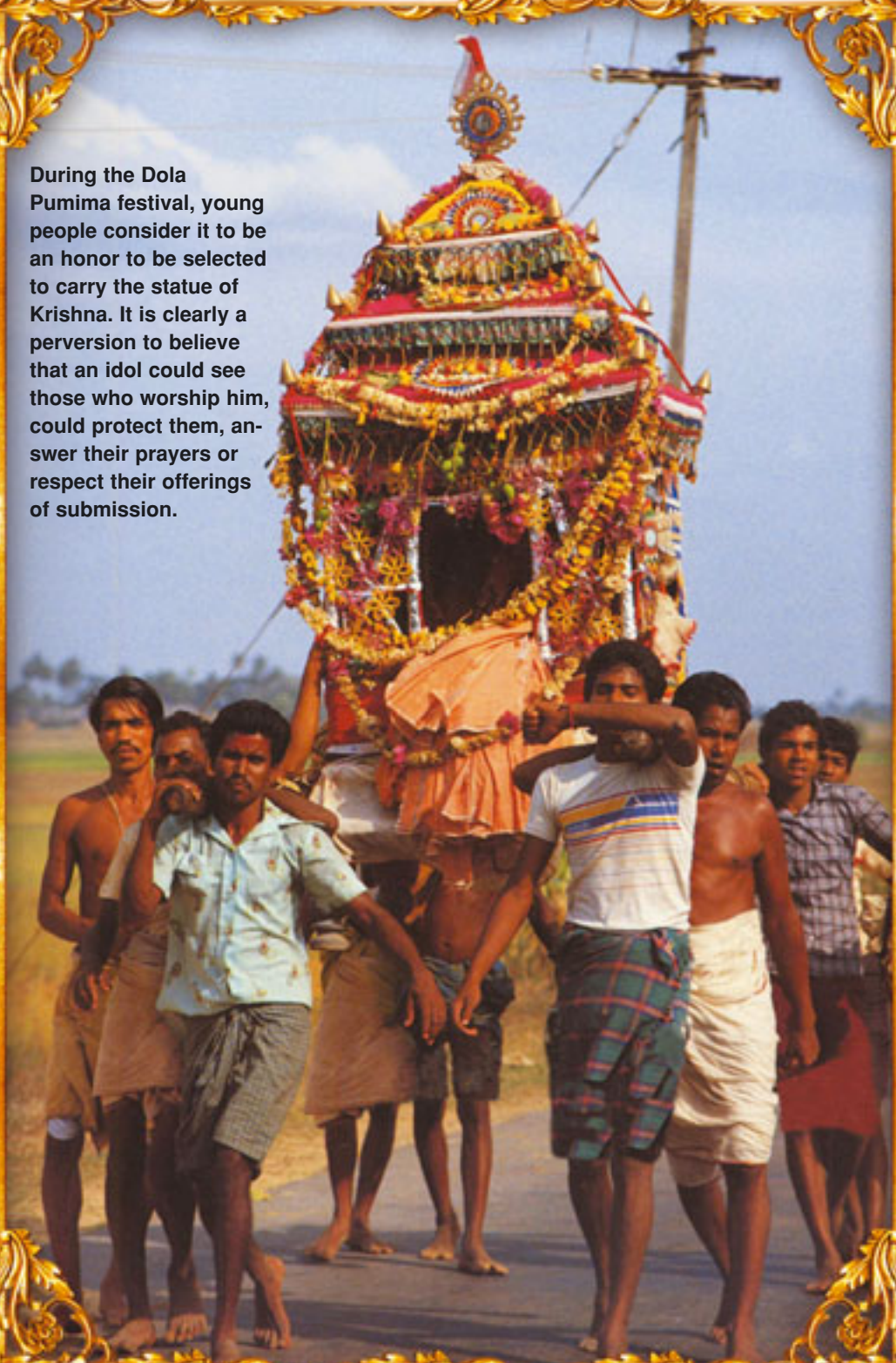
In Hinduism it is not only people and animals that are idolized. Almost anything one can encounter in everyday life has been made (in great ignorance) into something sacred and thus into a so-called object of worship. For instance, the streams that flow and join by the will of Allah, the trees that grow from the fallen seed by His will and the mountains Allah holds down are revered by Hindus as supposedly sacred. In reality all these things bow to Allah:



The woman in the picture worships Krishna in the Venugopalas Wamy temple carved into a tree. In the pagan Hindu beliefs, such trees are divine too. Islam rejects such irrational beliefs of idolatrous societies and commands the worship of our most compassionate and merciful Lord, the one and only ruler of the universe.



The idolatrous Hindus first wash their idols, then paint their faces and finally decorate them with flowers. This pagan ritual is performed across all of India. Whereas they consider to be doing something worthwhile with such acts of worship, they are in reality making a grave mistake.

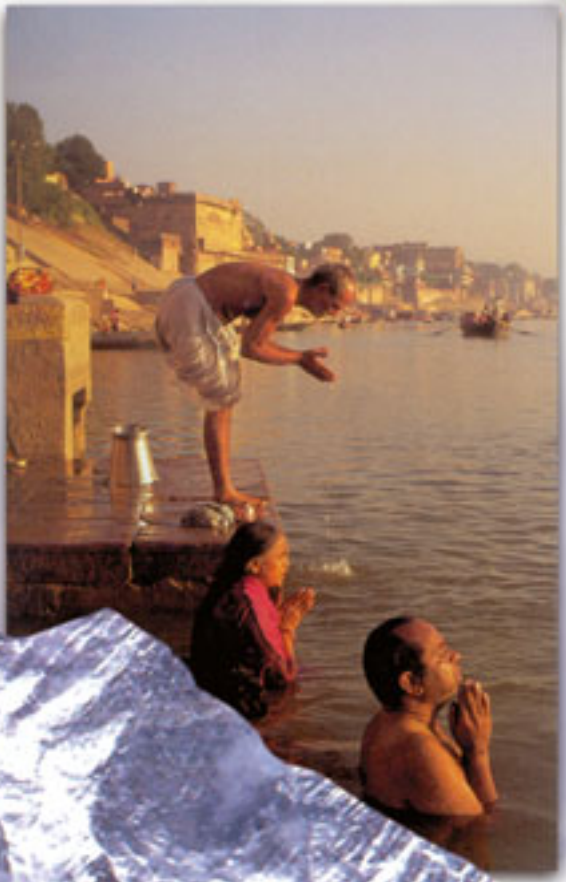


During the Dola Pumima festival, young people consider it to be an honor to be selected to carry the statue of Krishna. It is clearly a perversion to believe that an idol could see those who worship him, could protect them, answer their prayers or respect their offerings of submission.

Do you not see that everyone in the heavens and everyone on the earth prostrates to Allah, and the sun and moon and stars and the mountains, trees and beasts and many of mankind?... (Surat al-Hajj: 18)
Everything in the heavens and every creature on the earth prostrates to Allah, as do the angels. They are not puffed up with pride. (Surat an-Nahl: 49)

This superstitious belief leads the Hindus to concoct irrational myths on mountains and rivers according to which they have life and soul. The Ganges is the best known river Hindus revere and the Himalayas are their most sacred mountains.[9] In the perverse Hindu be-



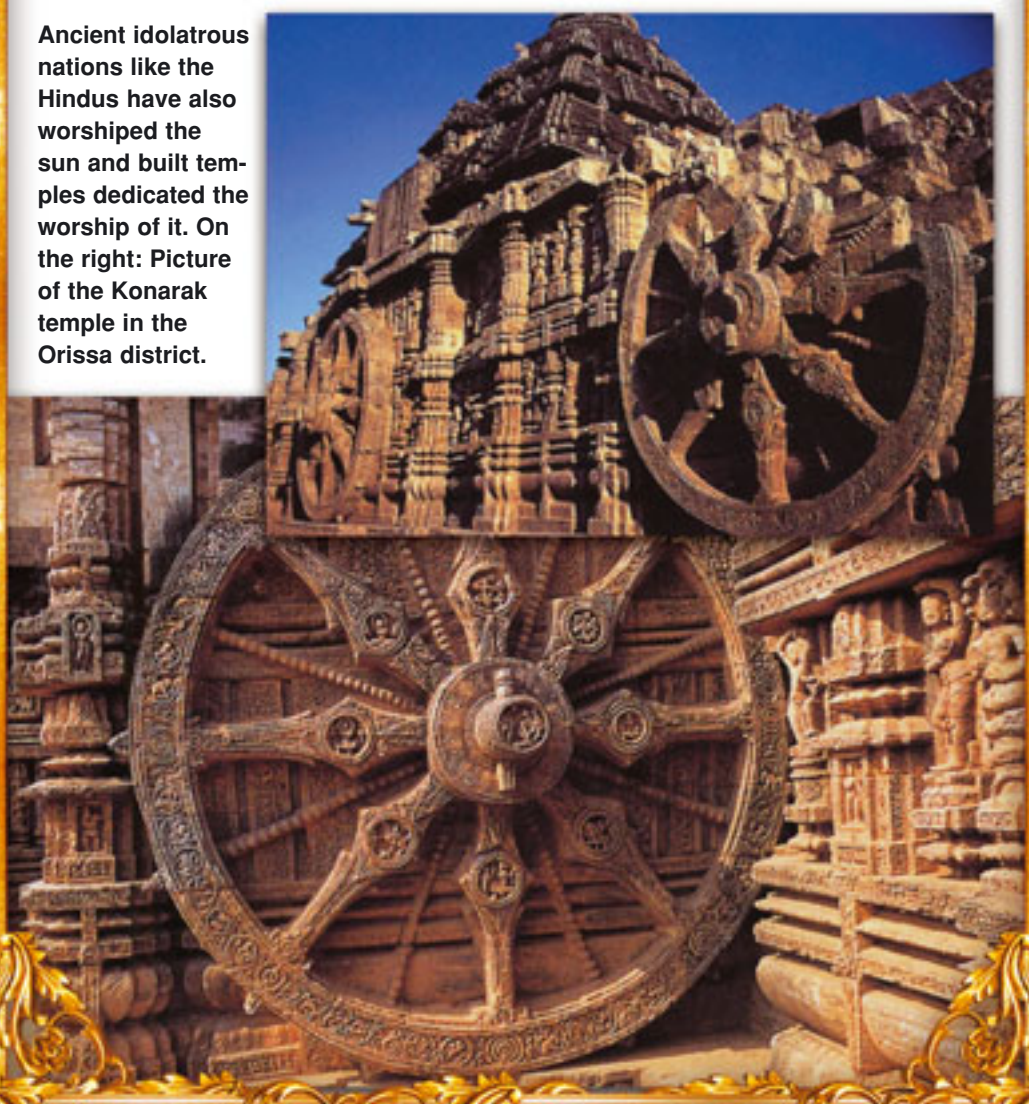


Hindus worship millions of idols in sheer ignorance and consider the Ganges and the Himalayas divine. People who forsake Allah for the worship of stone, earth and water are being led to great suffering unless they abandon such heretical beliefs.



Hindu beliefs command people to believe in the irrational myth that washing in the Ganges cleanses all sins.

lief, Agni is the divinity of fire, Surya the sun divinity, Varuna of the oceans, Vayo of the winds, Vishkarma of buildings, and Yama is the divinity of death. Just these by themselves are sufficient to demonstrate the irrational and mythical nature of Hinduism, as no one of an adequate intellectual capacity could or would believe in the supernatural and invincible power of a river. These are things only people whose mental faculties are hindered by false convictions can believe and yet, there are



Ancient idolatrous nations like the Hindus have also worshiped the sun and built temples dedicated the worship of it. On the right: Picture of the Konarak temple in the Orissa district.

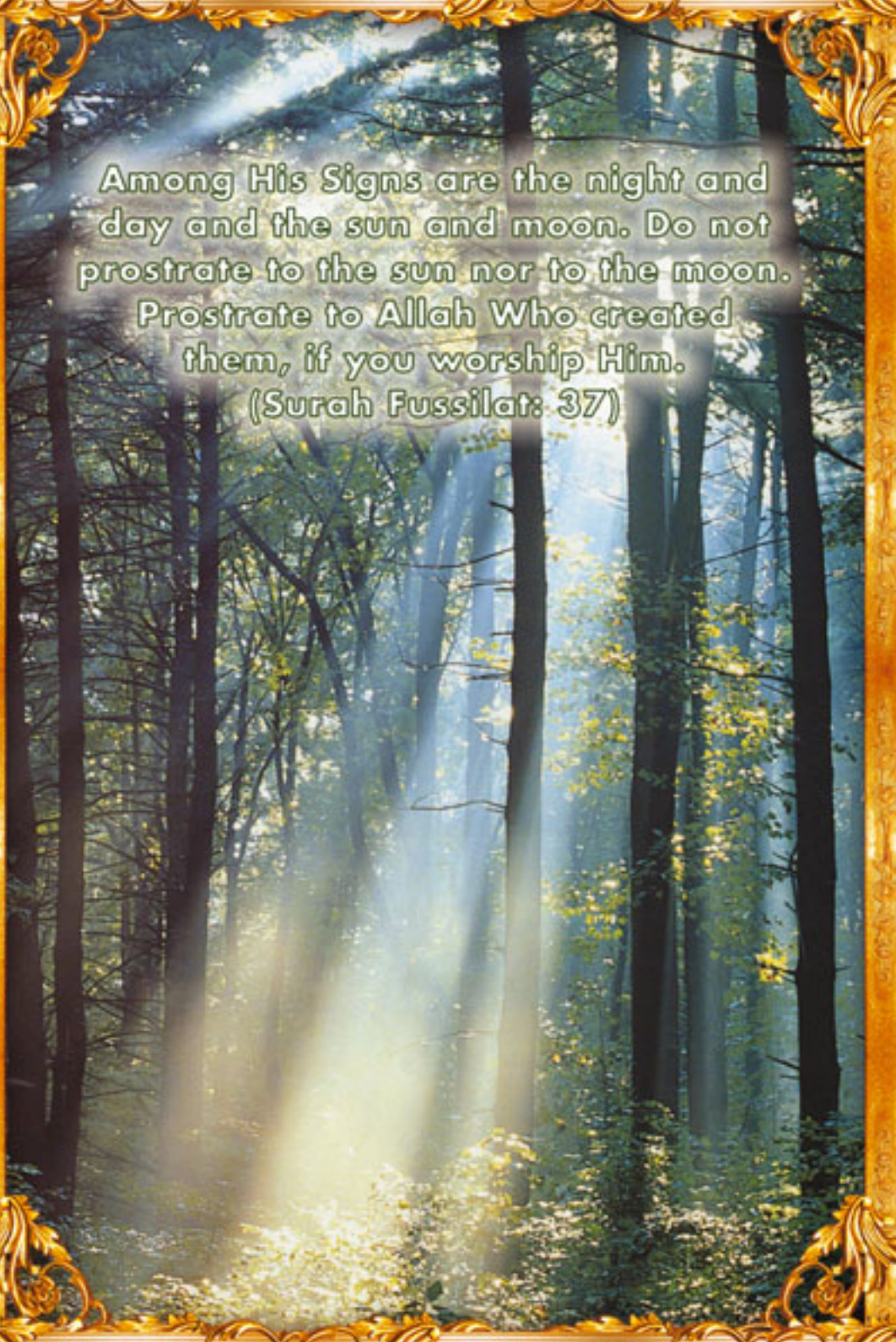
around 1 billion people who blindly put their faith into this superstitious religion.

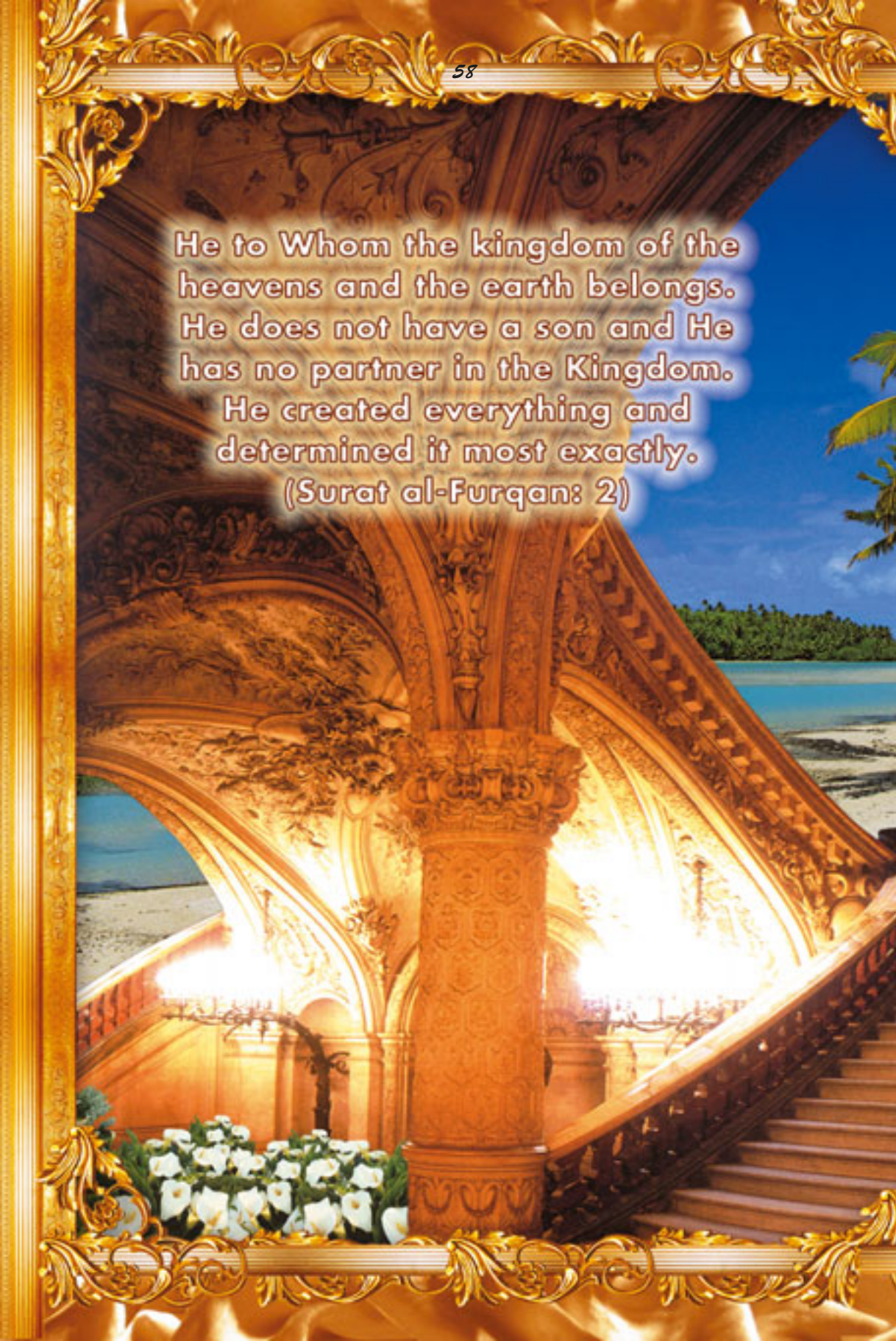
Today, the perversity of worshipping the Sun still persists in India. The most important temple dedicated to the worship of the Sun is the Konarak Temple in the Orissa district.[10] Worshipping the Sun is another feature of the Hindus that bears resemblance to ancient pagan cultures and it is one of the oldest aberrations of mankind. Some people who realized that the Sun provides them with light and warmth were misled to believe that the Sun gave them life and thus they came to form the primitive belief in the Sun as a divinity. This false belief led many a civilization away from Allah's religion in the history of mankind, a fact revealed in the Qur'an which tells the story of the People of Sheba who ignorantly worshipped the Sun at the time of the Prophet Solomon (pbuh):

> **I found both her and her people prostrating to the sun instead of Allah. Satan has made their actions seem good to them and debarred them from the Way so they are not guided and do not prostrate to Allah, Who brings out what is hidden in the heavens and the earth, and knows what you conceal and what you divulge. (Surat an-Naml: 24-25)**

A careful examination of the situation reveals that it is ignorance and irrationality that leads people to worship the Sun. True enough, the Sun is our source of light and heat, but we owe gratefulness to its Creator Allah, not the Sun, which is a huge mass of hydrogen and helium created by Allah that will one day expire or be destroyed by Him before then. Allah has created all the stars in the universe, including the Sun, from nothing and it is therefore only Him Who must be exalted and praised. The following is one of the verses that reveal this fact:

> **Among His Signs are the night and day and the sun and moon. Do not prostrate to the sun nor to the moon. Prostrate to Allah Who created them, if you worship Him. (Surah Fussilat: 37)**


Among His Signs are the night and
day and the sun and moon. Do not
prostrate to the sun nor to the moon.
Prostrate to Allah Who created
them, if you worship Him.
(Surah Fussilat: 37)


He to Whom the kingdom of the
heavens and the earth belongs.
He does not have a son and He
has no partner in the Kingdom.
He created everything and
determined it most exactly.
(Surat al-Furqan: 2)

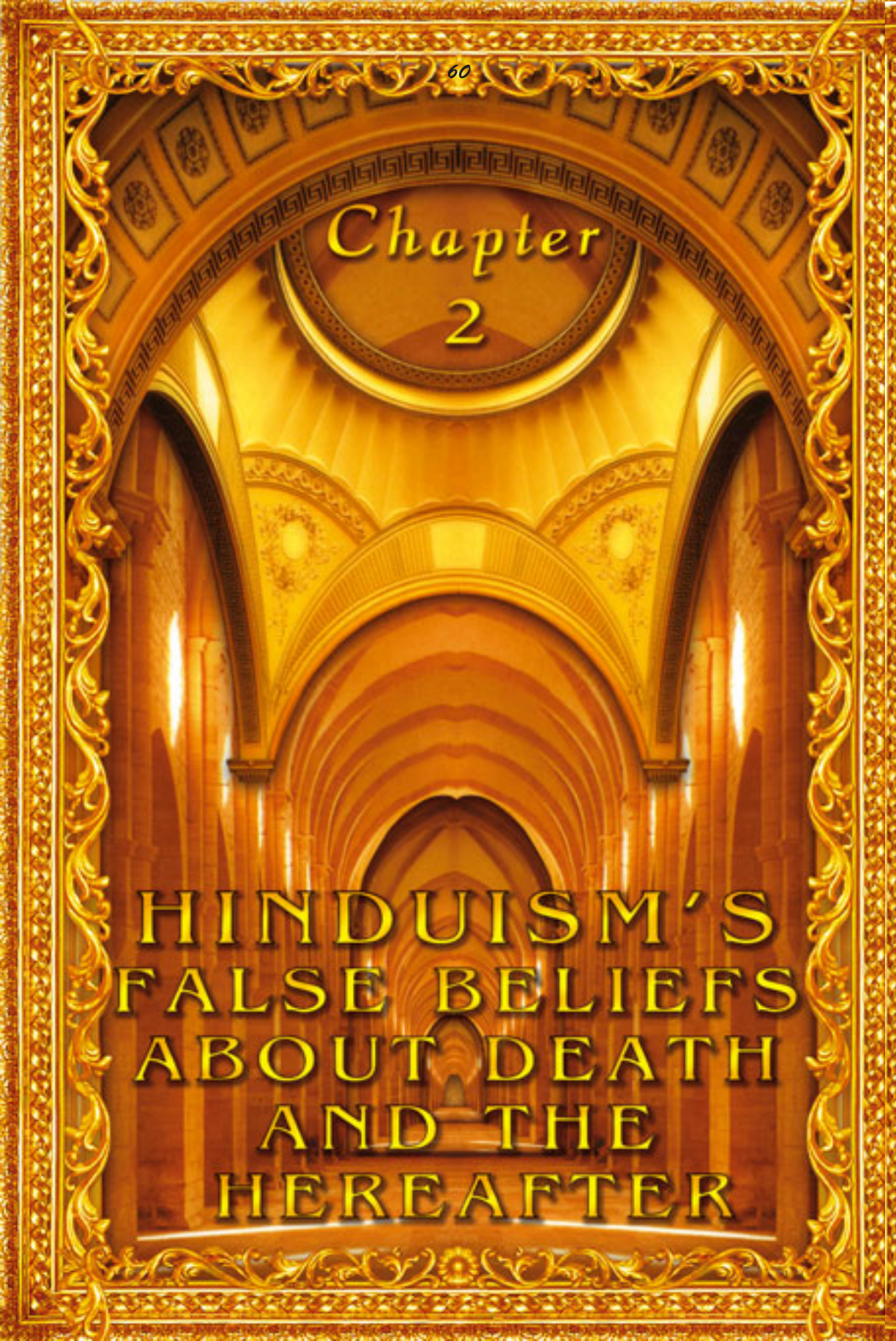


There is no doubt that in the eternal life in the hereafter those people who forgot Allah and worshipped instead powerless stone idols and thus lived in aberration, will suffer the greatest loss of all. They waste their entire lives trying to please their idols whilst believing in the lie that they will be reincarnated time after time without ever dying in the true sense of the word, but on death, they will realize that the lies they believed in only served to led them astray. Allah reveals this fact in the Surat al-'Ankabut:

> **He said, "You have adopted idols apart from Allah as tokens of mutual affection in this world. But then on the Day of Resurrection you will reject one another and curse one another. The Fire will be your shelter. You will have no helpers." (Surat al-'Ankabut: 25)**

Our Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) said the following about people who ascribe partners to Allah: "Whosoever dies as someone who ascribes partners to Allah, will enter hell."[11] But he also revealed the reward people who do not contaminate their faith by ascribing partners to Allah:

> *"Whosoever dies without ascribing partners to Allah, who genuinely believed in His unity and worshipped Him with a true heart and who performed prayer and did the prescribed charity, will have died having earned Allah's good pleasure."*[12]


Chapter
2
HINDUISM'S
FALSE BELIEFS
ABOUT DEATH
AND THE
HEREAFTER

The rejection of the belief in the hereafter is one of the most fundamental aspects of pagan Eastern religions. They instead have an imaginary system of karma by which the lives of sentient beings revolve in endless cycles of death and reincarnation. The superstitious Hindu religion's view of death and the life on earth is based on these principles.

Reincarnation is the name given to the mistaken belief that can be summarized as the return of the soul after each death into another body In Hinduism, reincarnation goes by the name of samsara and works by an imaginary system based on causality called "karma". According to the Karma belief, for which there is no supporting evidence, evil deeds committed in the present life will form a negative karma which results in a reincarnation into a "lower" body in the next life. Likewise, good deeds make good karma and in the subsequent reincarnation, the person is born into a "higher" being. In this way, people are continuously reborn into a different body. However, no one seems to be able to provide an answer as to who formed this imaginary system or how it can work. According to the manmade Hindu belief, every living being goes through 8.400.000 forms of being before becoming a human.[13] It is not revealed under whose control these reincarnations take place but the ultimate purpose is to break the «life-death-rebirth-life-death» cycle by attaining so-called freedom, "enlightenment," the state of "Nirvana" or meeting "Brahma". All this however are only myths and tales of human origin, based on the Hindu scriptures and therefore, the beliefs of karma and reincarnation are nothing but irrational nonsense.

The Hindu scriptures define clearly the "laws of karma". Through these manmade laws Hindus can anticipate what their next incarnation will hold for them based on what they do in the present life. For instance,

according to Hindu scriptures, someone who steals corn will become a mouse in his next life. A dog that steals fruit or a hedgehog that steals dyed fabric will be reborn as a leper.[14] However, it is not known how these cause and effect rules operate, who the maker of these laws is, who determines right and wrong and who operates this system. There is no rational explanation available that would clarify the situation and no Hindu inquires into this matter, nor does he seek answers in this respect from the scriptures.

According to Hindu belief, washing in the Ganges River cleanses all sins and provides for a higher form of existence. The dead body being incinerated and its ashes strewn into the Ganges occupies a major place in superstitious Hindu belief. The corpses of the dead are brought to the shores of the Ganges River on buses, and then incinerated by priests



From the 4th century Hindus have pictured the Ganges and Yamuna rivers in the human form, often used to decorate temple entrances. Pagan Hindu faith suggests that rivers respond in a number of ways to reverence offered by people.



who then also perform the last rites. It is believed that if even a fraction of the ashes is not cast into the river, the subsequent life will bring much suffering.[15] These scriptures, written thousands of years ago by ignorant people, are not based Allah's revelation and yet there are around 1 billion people who blindly believe in them.

Much has been written over the centuries about this religion which has no divine or rational basis. They are the product of the Aryan power of imagination. Especially in recent years the karma belief has been much discussed in the West. When reincarnation is considered in the light of the verses of the Qur'an and Allah's revelations about the life on earth, the fact that this is a grave aberration is seen right away:

He Who created death and life to test which of you is best in action. He is the Almighty, the Ever-Forgiving. (Surat al-Mulk: 2)

It is revealed in this verse that people will be tried throughout their earthly lives. The world is a temporary abode where genuinely faithful people as well as deniers are revealed for who and what they are. It is a place of learning where believers are purified, attain the spirituality of paradise, and mature by their efforts of winning the good pleasure of Allah, Who has clearly revealed His limits that must be observed and what He approves and disapproves of. According to his morality in his life on earth, every human being will either meet with reward or punishment in his eternal life in the hereafter and therefore every moment of our lives on earth, is either a step towards paradise or hell.

Man will not be reincarnated time after time as the false reincarnation belief suggests, but he will meet his death which will terminate his worldly life. Everyone around him, his friends, relatives and everybody else on earth will most certainly die like the billions of people who have come before them. Allah reveals this fact: **"Every self will taste death…"** (Surat al-Anbiya': 35). Forgetting this inevitable reality is one of the

worst mistakes anyone can make. Man, who will never be able to prevent his death, will die at a place and time unknown to him from one cause or another. The situation of people who forget about death and immerse themselves into this life is revealed in the verses:

> **As for those who do not expect to meet Us and are content with the life of this world and at rest in it, and those who are heedless of Our Signs, their shelter will be the Fire because of what they earned. (Surah Yunus: 7-8)**

In spite of the inescapable reality of death and Judgment Day, some people close their eyes to this reality and choose instead false beliefs like karma and reincarnation. They unceasingly condition themselves to disregard death and fool themselves by saying that they "do not fear dying", but this type of aberration earns them a great loss on earth as well as in the hereafter. Those who believe in karma consider death to be the portal into their next life and reject the idea of the Day of Judgment and the hereafter. This is nothing but self denial, because irrespective of how much they refrain from contemplating death and Judgment Day, they will nevertheless meet both. This escape can only last for the duration of ones lifetime or 60-70 years. Every human being will die, be judged, and receive the return for his actions whether or not he ponders this unavoidable reality. Allah reveals this fact:

> **The throes of death come revealing the truth. That is what you were trying to evade! (Surah Qaf: 19)**
>
> **Allah will not give anyone more time, once their time has come. Allah is aware of what you do. (Surat al-Munafiqun: 11)**

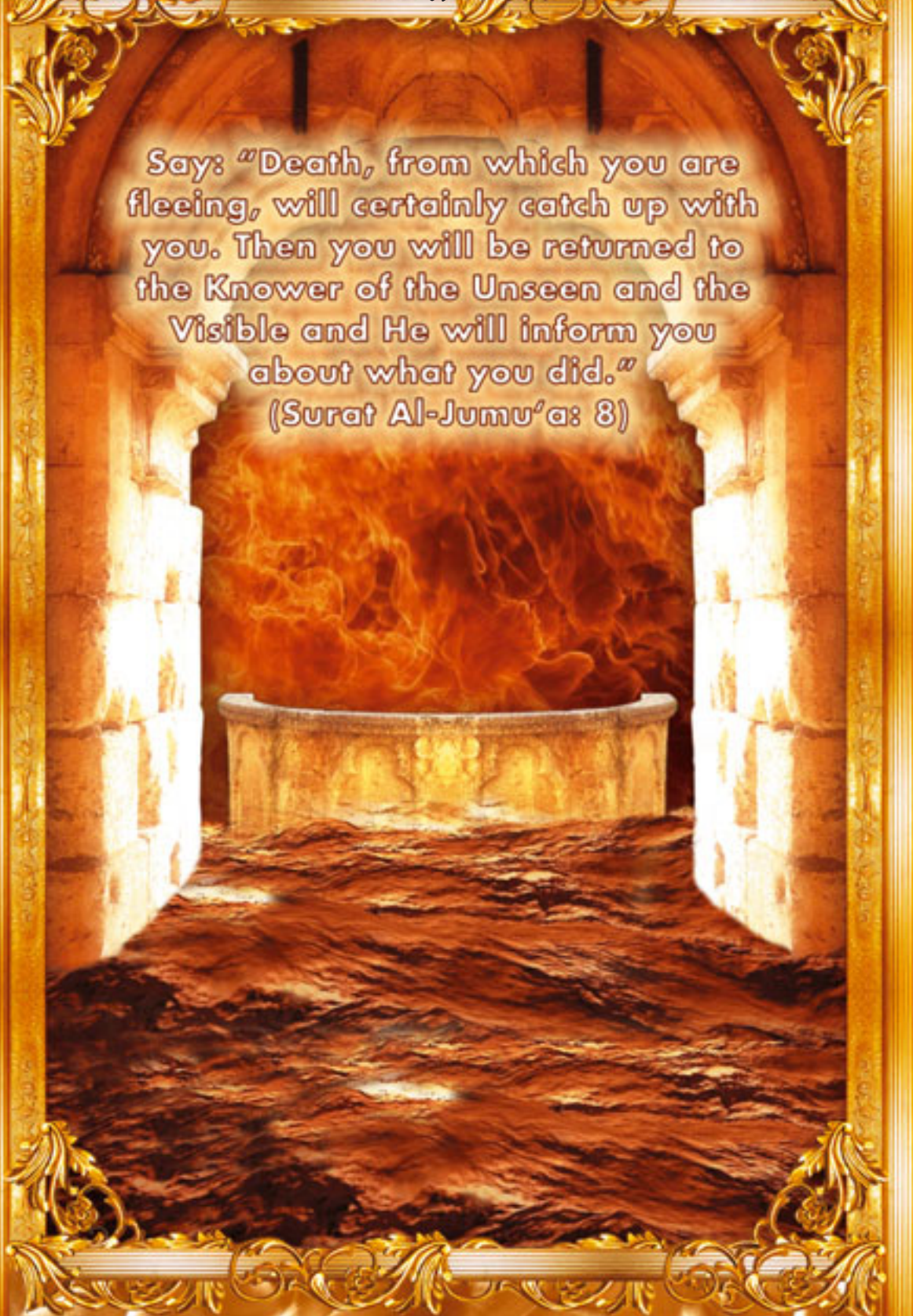
Those who disregard the reality of death in the belief that death is but the beginning another cycle of rebirth into the next life will have to answer for all their actions on the Day of Judgment. In the end, they too will believe in Allah and the hereafter, and will come to now that evading the Day of Judgment is impossible:

They will shout out in it, "Our Lord! Take us out! We will act rightly, differently from the way we used to act!" Did We not let you live long enough for anyone who was going to pay heed to pay heed? And did not the warner come to you? Taste it then! There is no helper for the wrongdoers. (Surah Fatir: 37)

Every moment of life that passes is a step towards death. On that day, everybody will realize, that the things he chased after in his life, have no meaning for the hereafter and that only the good deeds and good morality done for the good pleasure of Allah can benefit him in the hereafter. This is the reason why people who have been misled into believing that the world order operates on the basis of "karma" and who have rejected the idea of the hereafter that begins with death, should quickly abandon their superstitious beliefs as. People must free themselves from such false beliefs and prepare for certain death and the hereafter whilst having their lives on earth. Whereas the faithful who fear Allah, who do much good, who have spent their lives in the cause of Allah, who have strictly abided by Allah's laws are given the good news on that day, those who subscribe to false beliefs are promised a tragic end. A variety of sufferings in eternal hellfire is waiting for the followers of false religions who have rejected the idea of Allah's existence and the hereafter, who have closed their ears to the reminders that were delivered to them and who have persisted in denial by association. On that day every human being's deeds will be measured by accurate scales, and, as revealed in the following verse, all their sins as well as their good deeds will be exposed:

Everything they did is in the Books. Everything is recorded, big or small. (Surat al-Qamar: 52-53)

Another verse warns those who stray from Allah's path of righteousness in the following way: **"… Those who are misguided from the**


Say: "Death, from which you are fleeing, will certainly catch up with you. Then you will be returned to the Knower of the Unseen and the Visible and He will inform you about what you did."
(Surat Al-Jumu'a: 8)

Way of Allah will receive a harsh punishment because they forgot the Day of Reckoning." (Surah Sâd: 26)

THE QUR'AN REFUTES SUPERSTITIOUS REINCARNATION

People in general have little knowledge of reincarnation and karma, and some people even believe that these false beliefs are compatible with Allah's religion conveyed to mankind by His messengers. Reincarnation has no basis in Islam, and Muslim's point of view in this regard (as with everything else too) is the perspective of the Qur'an. Those who try to present reincarnation and karma as natural laws are in clear violation of the Qur'an.

Allah reveals in the Qur'an that death and resurrection happen once. Man comes into being by the life Allah gives, lives this one life and, when the appointed time of his death has come, he dies. After his death, it is not a new life on earth that begins but the life of the hereafter. All people are judged after their death and sent to hell or paradise accordingly where they will spend their eternal lives. Allah reveals with the following verse that every human being will die: **"… Death, from which you are fleeing, will certainly catch up with you."** (Surat al-Jumu'a: 8). Our Lord's message to those who follow false beliefs like the karma is clear:

> **There is a ban on any city We have destroyed; they will not return. (Surat al-Anbiya': 95)**

Allah reveals the phases of human life in the following verse: **"… you were dead and then He gave you life, then He will make you die and then give you life again, then you will be returned to Him?** (Surat al-Baqara: 28). In another verse he says: **"Allah is He Who created you, then provides for you, then will cause you to die and then bring you**

back to life. Can any of your partner-gods do any of that? Glory be to Him and may He be exalted above anything they associate with Him!" (Surat ar-Rum: 40)

Our Lord reveals in the 28th verses of the Surat al-Baqara that to begin with man was dead, or in other words that before His creation, he was dead matter like soil, water and mud. Then Allah gave this lifeless mass life: **"He Who created you and formed you and proportioned you"** (Surat al-Infitar: 7). Then, after a certain amount of time has passed since his creation, man is made to die and returned to soil where he decomposes into soil himself. This is his second death and his final creation is awaiting him, which is in the hereafter. Every human being will be resurrected in the hereafter, realize that there is no way back to earth and be held accountable for all his actions in his life there. Allah reveals in the verses that there is only one death once life on earth has begun:

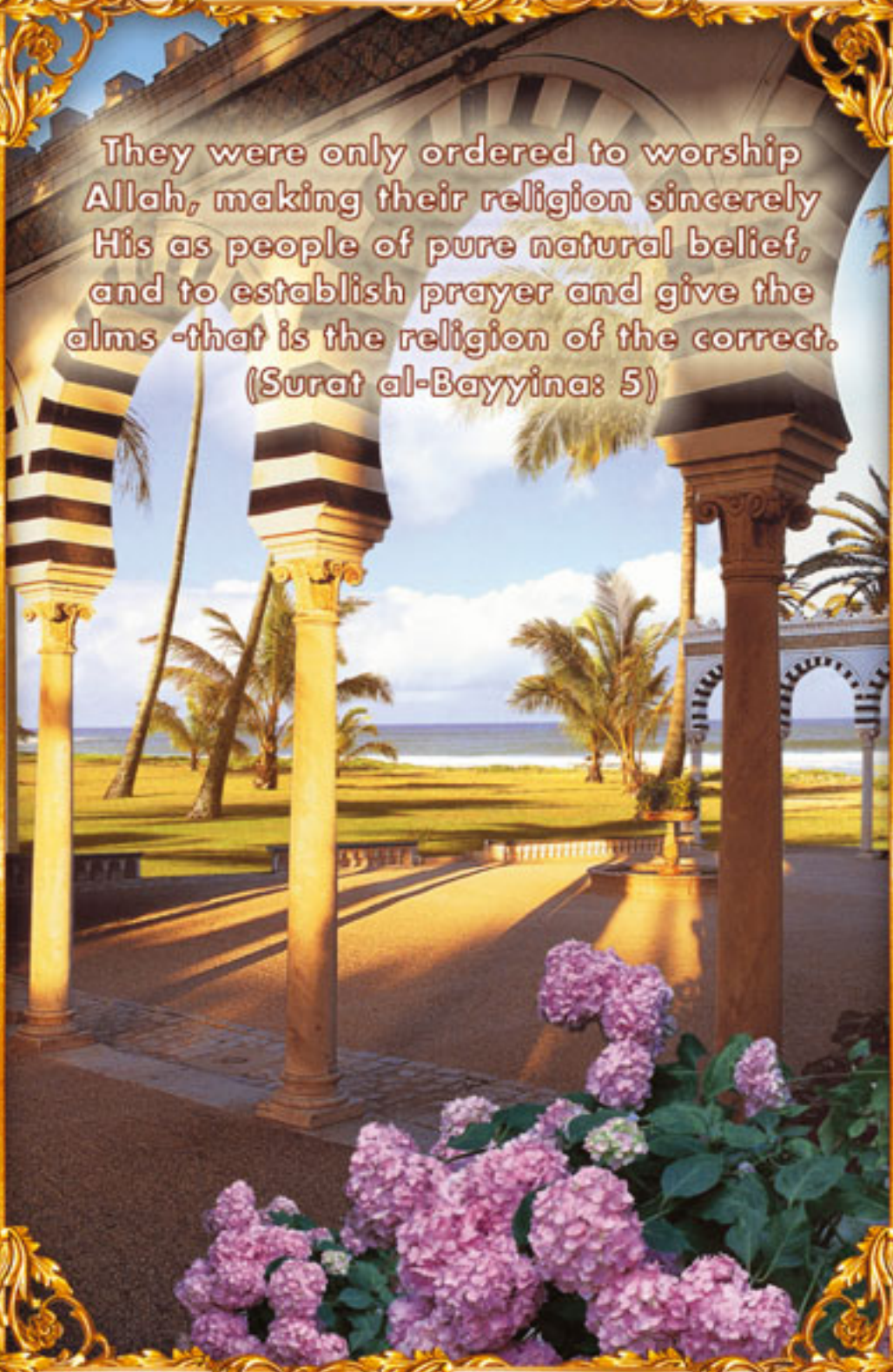
> **They will not taste any death there – except for the first one. He will safeguard them from the punishment of the Blazing Fire. A favor from your Lord. That is the Great Victory. (Surat ad-Dukhan: 56-57)**

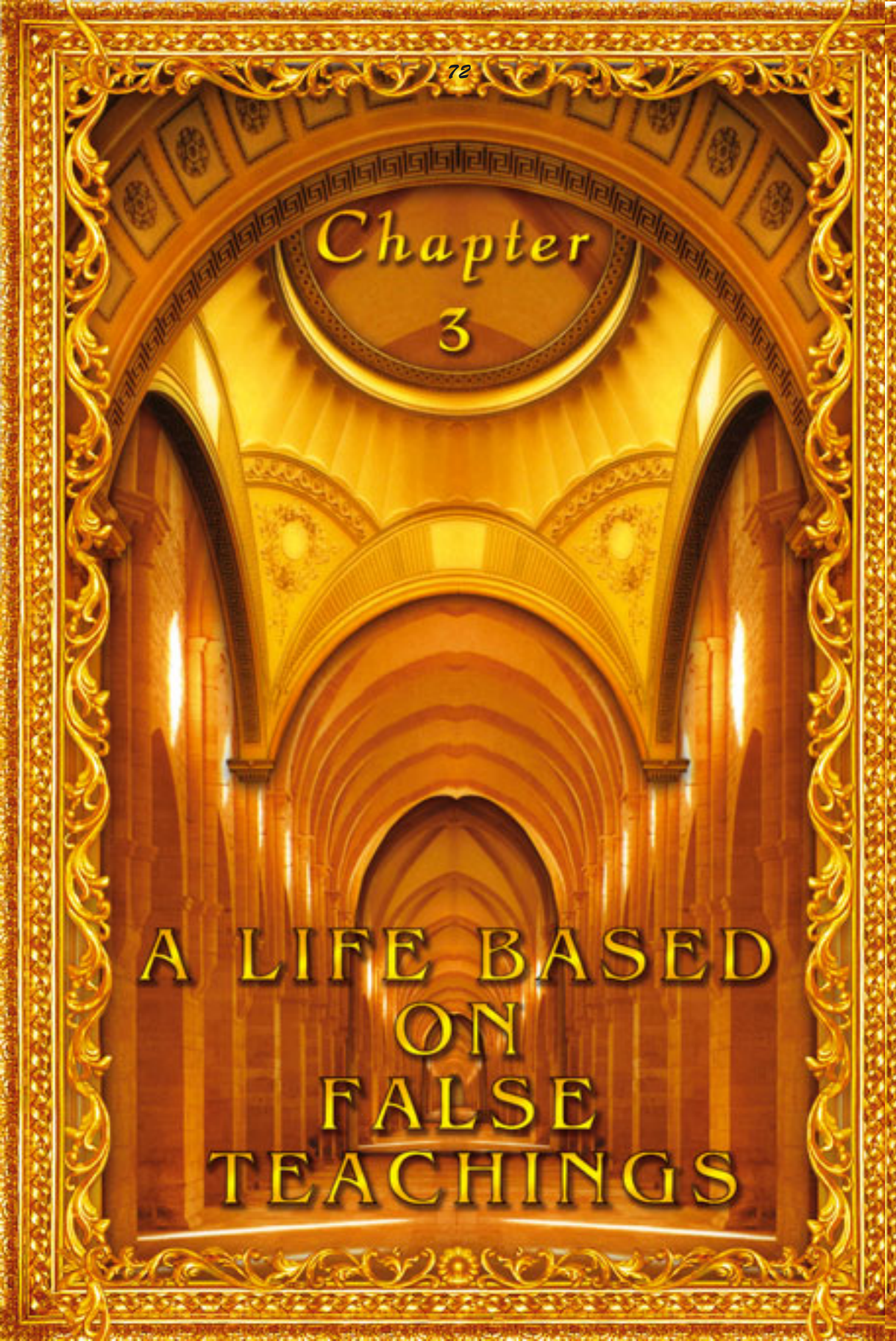
The above verses very clearly state that death is only once irrespective of how much some people try to make themselves foolishly believe in karma and reincarnation in order to defeat their fear of death and the hereafter and to deceive themselves, the truth is they will never return to earth. Every person will die just once and then his eternal life in the hereafter will begin as determined by Allah, Who will either reward him for his good actions on earth with paradise or punish him with hell for his evil. Allah is infinitely just, compassionate, and merciful and everybody will receive his fair due. It is no doubt a great loss to seek salvation in false beliefs in the hope of escaping death and the probability of hell. Allah warns people who believe that their lives will never end thus disregard the reality of the hereafter:

No indeed! We have given these people enjoyment, as We did their fathers, until life seemed long and good to them. Do they not see how We come to the land eroding it from its extremities? Or are they the victors? (Surat al-Anbiya': 44)

Conscientious and rational people should turn to Allah with a true heart and abide by the Qur'an and the Sunnah of our Prophet (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) in order to escape hell and to win paradise if they have fears in this regard. No one should forget that to date, no amount of wealth, nor youth, power or beauty has saved anyone from death and no one should therefore disregard the reality of death. Irrespective of whether death is disregarded or not, it will come: **"… On the Day that the Hour arrives, that Day the liars will be lost."** (Surat al-Jathiyya: 27)




They were only ordered to worship
Allah, making their religion sincerely
His as people of pure natural belief,
and to establish prayer and give the
alms -that is the religion of the correct.
(Surat al-Bayyina: 5)


Chapter
3
A LIFE BASED
ON
FALSE
TEACHINGS

Our Lord has sent Messengers to every nation who called on their people to believe in Allah. They conveyed to them Allah's commandments and recommendations and taught them ways of worship. In Hinduism and other false beliefs on the other hand, superstitious practices and traditions developed over the centuries are continue in the form of "pseudo -worship" and under the pretext of loyalty to ancestors. In reality it is superstitious ritualistic idolatry. Hindus believe that this ritualistic worship brings them closer to their gods and that they are doing good which will benefit them in their next incarnation. Surely all these beliefs are a grave error. Allah reveals the situation of people who deny by association in the following way:

… Which are not capable of helping them and cannot even help themselves? (Surat al-A'raf: 192)

The world of the Hindus is a dark one. Superstitious rituals, idolatrous ceremonies, perverted practices and offerings dominate every moment of the lives of a billion people, preventing them from the peace of believing in Allah, and from experiencing the dignified and happy life prescribed by Him, by keeping them imprisoned in a dark and gloomy world. A Hindu is obliged to follow certain superstitious rituals from birth until death and one of the meanings of the word "Hindu" (darkness) is fairly descriptive of this religion.[16]

There are over one hundred religious festivals in the Hindu calendar, the examination of which reveals many astonishing, bizarre and irrational practices. For instance, the Naga Panchami festival is dedicated to a god called "eternity snake". Millions of Hindus, many of whom are well educated, make and mindlessly worship huge snake idols. First, they wash the stone idols with milk and then make offerings of milk and

cake to living cobras.[17] The Ganesha Chaturthi festival is dedicated to Ganesha, a god represented as half elephant, half man. During this festival, an idol made of clay measuring 8 meters (26 feet) is brought home. For between 2 and 10 days this idol is perversely revered and then caste into the sea or a lake by a large crowd with offerings of coconuts and balls of sweet cakes.[18] (According to the so called sacred Hindu scriptures Ganesha is a god prominent with his elephant head and it is believed that he is the son of the gods Shiva and Parvarti, themselves important deities in the Hindu tradition. One day, Parvati cuts Ganesha's head off by mistake. Saddened by this, Parvati puts the head of the first creature that passes by Ganesha and thus revives him. This idol invariably has offerings of cake and milk before him.) The Hindus' superstitious love and reverence for their deities is an act of ignorance committed by the deniers by association. Allah reveals:

> **Some people set up equals to Allah, loving them as they should love Allah. But those who have faith have greater love for Allah. If only you could see those who do wrong at the time when they see the punishment, and that truly all strength belongs to Allah, and that Allah is severe in punishment. (Surat al-Baqara: 165)**

The few examples of the superstitious rituals cited above serve to expose the irrational aspects of the Hindu religion. Those who consider Hinduism as a so-called "religion of spiritual freedom and salvation" are in a great error as the myths of the superstitious Hindu faith force people to blindly follow a system of traditions without having a rational basis for them. The Hindu religion has made an educated, civilized and cultured people prostrate themselves before cows and obliges them to make food offerings to stone idols.

Accepting and practicing the traditions of their ancestors without questioning them rationally or conscientiously has been one of the great-



Throughout the Ganesha Chaturthi Festival, Hindus from all over the world compete to show their respect for the false deities the Ganesha. These people, brainwashed by ridiculous Hindu traditions, are unaware of this manifest illogicality.



It is impossible for these idols that Hindus prostrate themselves in front of, show great respect for, and carry on their backs to hear their pleas or answer their prayers.

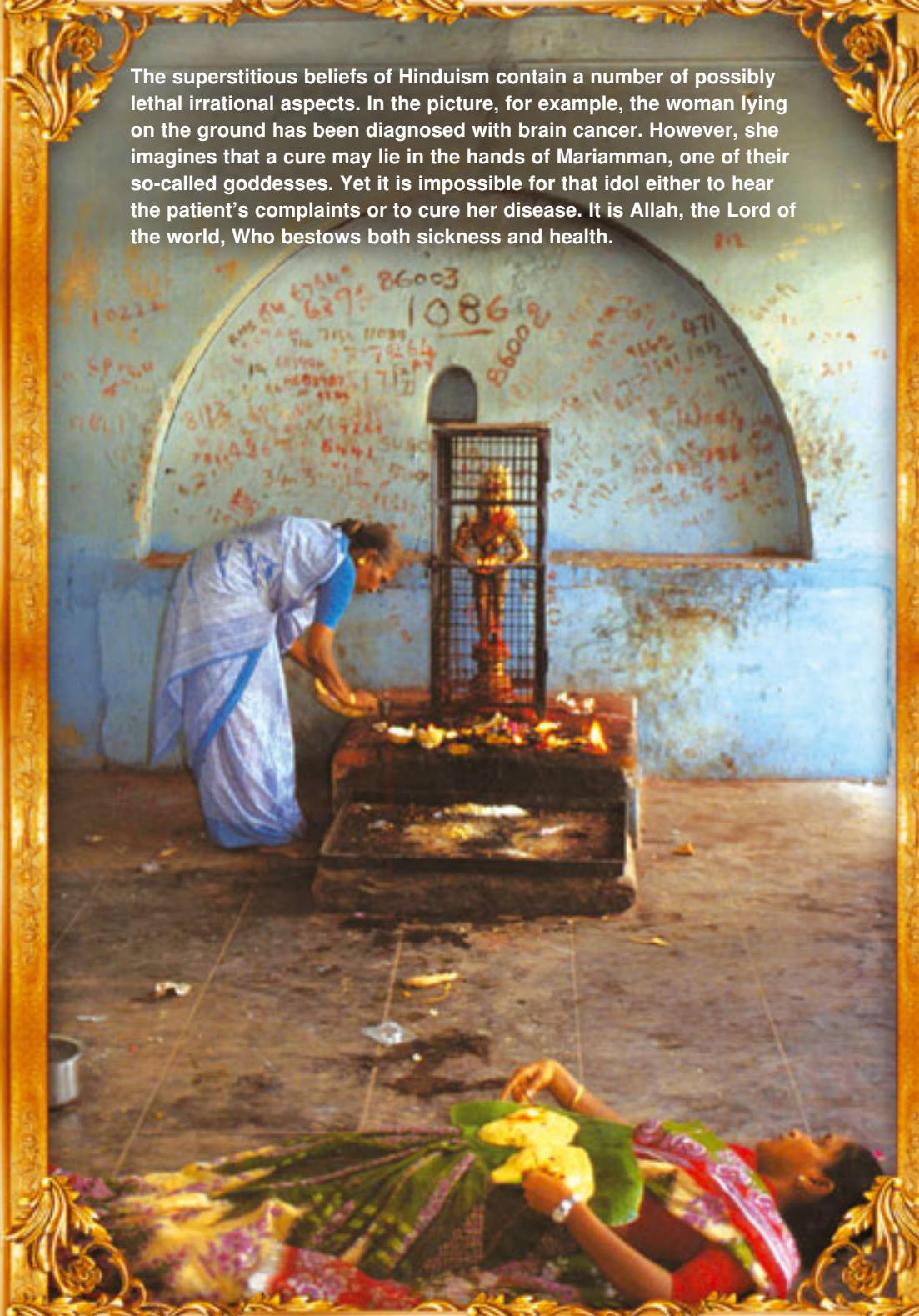


est predicaments afflicting pagans throughout history. Allah reveals this type of bigotry in the Surah Luqman:

> **When they are told: "Follow what Allah has sent down," they say, "No, we will follow what we found our fathers doing." What! Even if satan is calling them to the punishment of the Blazing Fire? (Surah Luqman: 21)**

Islam on the other hand invites people to follow the only absolute and permanent truth in the universe, Allah's revelation instead of superstitious traditions. People who enter Islam abide in Almighty Allah, He Who created them and all the universe, and His revealed book of guidance, and not some culture created by people at a certain time in history. Islam, the true religion of Allah, frees people from superstitious beliefs, myths, nonsensical traditions and unquestioned social rules. It calls a person only to abide and live by Allah's rules and His infinite wisdom which is the only way to find happiness and salvation as Allah, Who made this religion and created man, knows every need of man's soul and body, its weaknesses, necessities and remedies. Allah has chosen Islam as the religion for us, the people He created. Since the beginning of time, Allah has taught this religion to people through His messengers such as the Prophets Noah (pbuh), Abraham (pbuh), Moses (pbuh) and Jesus (pbuh) and revealed it again to us through his final messenger the Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless him and grant him peace). That is why Allah says: **"…Today I have perfected your religion for you and completed My blessing upon you and I am pleased with Islam as a religion for you"** (Surat al-Ma'ida: 3)

The true faith sent down by Allah purges believers of all irrationality, pessimism, idol-worship and nonsense. Hinduism, on the other hand, imprisons its believers in a bigoted world that depresses the spirit and represses the mind. The perverted rituals of Hinduism once again demonstrate this fact.



The superstitious beliefs of Hinduism contain a number of possibly lethal irrational aspects. In the picture, for example, the woman lying on the ground has been diagnosed with brain cancer. However, she imagines that a cure may lie in the hands of Mariamman, one of their so-called goddesses. Yet it is impossible for that idol either to hear the patient's complaints or to cure her disease. It is Allah, the Lord of the world, Who bestows both sickness and health.

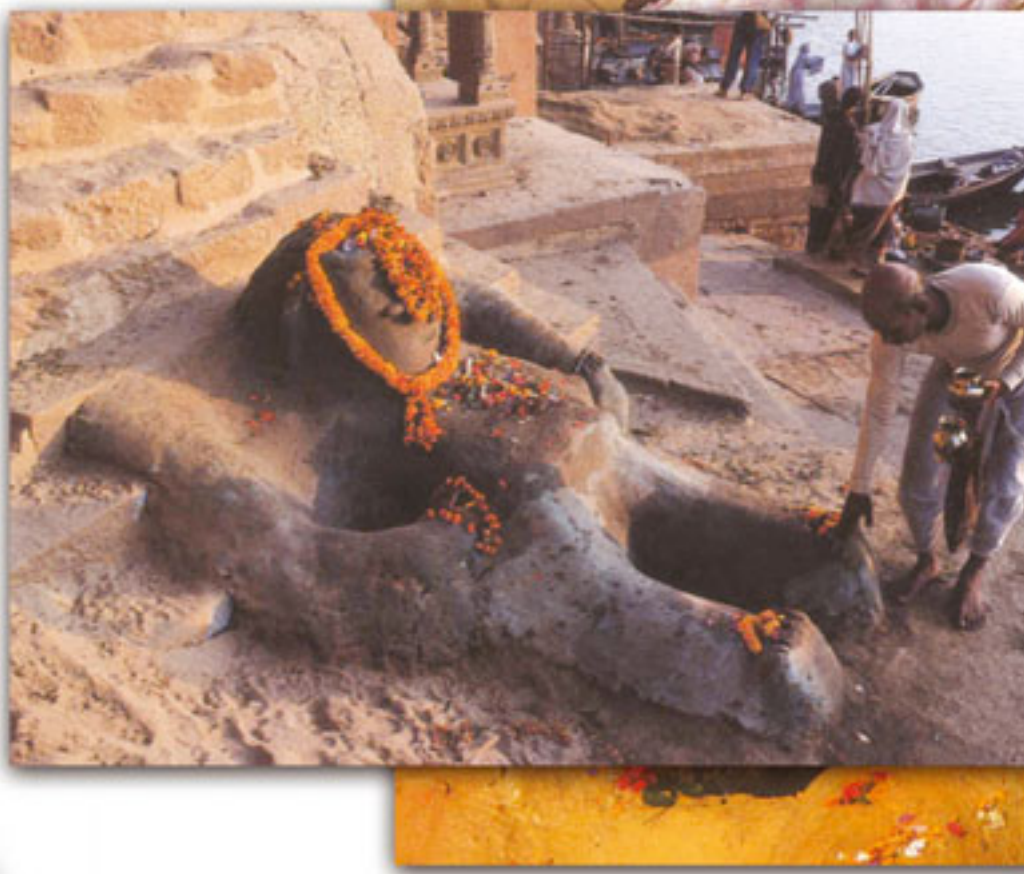


A great many of the imaginary deities of Hinduism are described in written texts as angry, hate-filled idols that perpetrate great slaughter and delight in inflicting suffering. Kali, who is shown slicing up the body in the picture, is, according to Hindu tradition, an imaginary goddess who delights in slaughter. Hindus describe Kali with the titles of "protectress" or "educator," and heretically believe that new-born children can partake of her power.

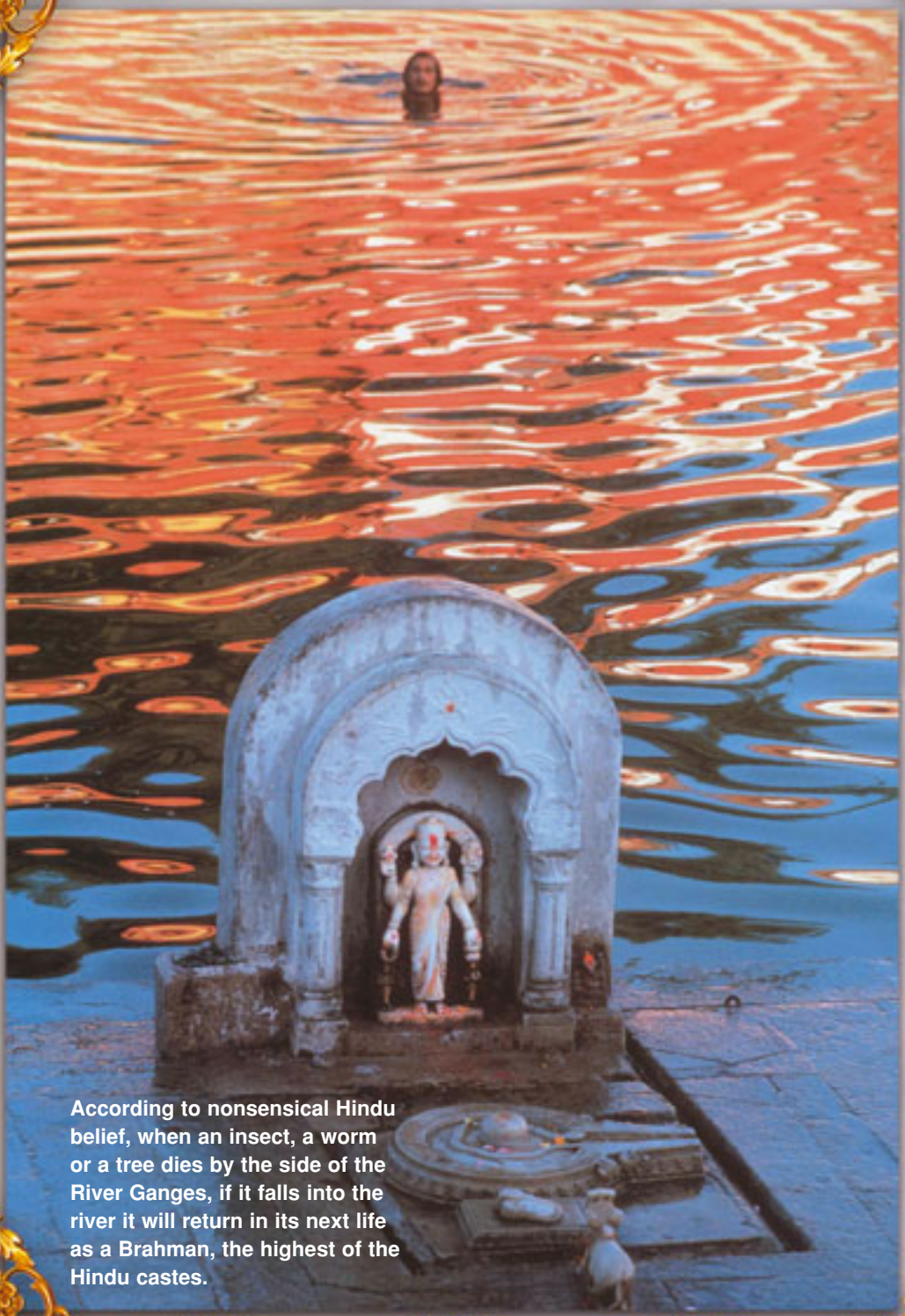


Ceremonies, festivals and rites devoted to various deities play an important part in the lives of Hindus. Every festival has its own rituals and its rites that need to be observed. At the Bhima Puja Festival, for example, Bhima shapes are made out of the mud of the River Ganges. Hinduism, which is almost a religion of rites and rituals, encourages Hindus to live empty, aimless and superstitious lives. There is no doubt that the losses they will suffer in the hereafter will be enormous.









According to nonsensical Hindu belief, when an insect, a worm or a tree dies by the side of the River Ganges, if it falls into the river it will return in its next life as a Brahman, the highest of the Hindu castes.

THE RIVER GANGES: The Center of Heretical Rituals

The River Ganges occupies a very important place in the Hindu religion. It is imagined that a Hindu who washes in the Ganges will be cleansed of all his sins. Because of that belief, elderly Hindus spend their time near the potentially lethally polluted waters of the river. Why is this river regarded as sacred? How does the river take away the sins of those who wash in it? Can someone who commits the most heinous crimes be spiritually cleansed merely by entering and leaving those waters? Hindus prefer not to think about such questions, because a single moment's thought would reveal how ridiculous this belief actually is. Some of the superstitious Hindu rituals involving the Ganges are:

- Hindus who picture the Ganges and Yamuna rivers in human form use these in the entrances to their temples.[19]

- In accordance with superstitious tradition, Hindu priests poured 850 liters of milk from silver ewers into the Yamuna, a tributary of the River Ganges, in order to purify it.[20]

- The Ganges and the Yamuna meet at the city of Allahabad. Hindus hold the superstitious belief that they will be freed from all their sins when they wash at the confluence of these two waterways. Hundreds of thousands of Hindus therefore pour into the region during the year. It is obvious what a facile and nonsensical religion Hinduism is from the way that it links purification from sins to such a meaningless ritual like entering and leaving a river, rather than, as is the case with Islam, repenting, asking for Allah's forgiveness and committing never to commit the same sins again.

The cruelties that Hindus inflict on the seriously ill also reveal what a dark life this false religion offers. The patient is taken by his friends and family to the River Ganges. Rather than looking for ways of curing his disease, they believe that carrying the patient to the banks of the river is a far more meaningful task. The patient's worst and filthiest covering is laid over the vehicle in which he is being carried. The patient is then placed on top of it and then left on a rock, supposedly, "to be cured," but actually to die there. There are many sick people on the brink of death along the banks of the Ganges. Filth and discomfort of all kinds abound here. Everywhere can be heard the sounds of weeping and wailing caused by people's sicknesses. As death approaches, half the person's body is immersed in water, and he dies in that position.[21] These inhumane practices are literally intended to kill. Many people have lost their lives because of the unhygienic conditions and unhealthy influences all around, even though they had the opportunity to receive hospital treatment. This ritual is literally no different to murder.

Before visiting these false deities, which they call Durga, every morning, Hindus first wash, put on their clothes and adorn themselves with jewelry. If you see someone doing this you may imagine that he has lost his mind. The only difference in Hinduism is that this "loss of reason" has continued as a tradition for thousands of years.





Many Hindus have shrines for their idols in the kitchen or some other room. There are various pictures and symbols there. Every day they offer food, water, incense and light to these lifeless statues, which have no will or power of their own. There is no difference between this and offering food to anything in your room, such as a chair or a table.





Deviant rituals are scrupulously observed in every Hindu household. Even if the household shrines differ, what goes on in them never changes. People who have been brainwashed with superstitious teachings pray for hours to their hand-made idols and persist in the error that these can be of benefit to them.





Hindus also believe that plants, created by Allah and with no special powers, are sacred. Indeed, for them all living things are sacred. In their view, groves are abodes of the gods. They have invented homes for these imaginary "gods" of their own invention. The small picture shows a shrine made inside a tree for their supposed deity Durga. Hindus also regard the tulsi plant, a kind of basil, and the pipal tree as sacred. Trees such as the pipal are worshipped every day, some every month, and others during special festivals. According to Hindu legends, the tulsi was once the beloved of the imaginary deity Vishnu. Another fictitious deity, Lakshmi, then became jealous and turned her into a tree.[22]

This nonsense, made up thousands of years ago by someone whose name is unknown, is still believed in by Hindus.

Hindus also believe that trees are inhabited by spirits. As a result of this completely irrational idea, tree-worship is quite widespread among Hindus. They constantly offer food to these so-called tree gods, and worship and pray to them by tying shreds of clothing to their branches and placing red-painted stones at their bottom. The Hindu in the picture is paying his respects before this pipal tree that his people worship. None of them ever wonders whether or not the trees hear them, or whether or not there really is a spirit that can hear them in the tree. They never receive any response to their prayers. Nonetheless, they continue to perform this ritual, solely because their forbearers did so.







Hindus make a terrible mistake by imagining that they will be rewarded for the offerings they make to the trees. The fact is that those who regard lifeless entities as equal to Allah will find themselves helpless, friendless and utterly alone in the hereafter.

HINDUISM'S SO-CALLED SACRED SCRIPTURES ARE FULL OF ERRONEOUS MYTHS

Our Lord has sent forth a messenger to every nation to guide them to salvation. Messengers lead their nations by the word of Allah, He Who has created the universe out of nothing and knows the truth of everything. Allah revealed the Torah to the Prophet Moses (pbuh) the Psalms to the Prophet David (pbuh) and the Gospel to the Prophet Jesus (pbuh). The source of Islam is the holy book of the Qur'an, revealed to our Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) by our Lord. Allah reveals in the Qur'an that the Torah, Psalms and the Gospel have been tampered with and falsified by people since their revelation, but the Qur'an has reached us exactly as it was revealed to our Prophet (may Allah bless him and grant him peace). Allah says: **"It is We Who have sent down the Reminder and We Who will preserve it."** (Surat al-Hijr: 9)

The Qur'an was revealed for us to read, to understand and to learn from, to get to know our Lord, He Who has created the universe out of nothingness, and to know how to serve Him and to respect His limits. Allah explains His verses by many examples and narratives. As Allah reveals with the following verse, the Qur'an is complete and faultless: **"... We have not omitted anything from the Book."** (Surat al-An'am: 38). Many details of this life on earth as well as the hereafter are revealed in great detail and in the most befitting way in the Qur'an, and Allah reveals this fact with this verse: **"We have sent down to you a Book containing your Reminder. So will you not use your intellect"** (Surat al-Anbiya': 10) The Qur'an is Allah's word and guidance to salvation for all people. It addresses every human being on earth and covers all eras since it revelation.

Hinduism on the other hand is a sum total of superstitions without divine foundations, produced by certain people thousands of years ago reflecting their false beliefs, narrow-mindedness and ignorance. It there-

fore defies logic and reason. The scriptures considered to be the Hindus' sacred books, have been written by the Aryan conquerors of India and various Hindu leaders, and contain myths, tales and pure fantasy. However, Hindus do not wish to acknowledge this fact but chose to consider the Hindu texts, especially the Vedas, as so-called Divine guidance. They persist in regarding the erroneous teachings of these scriptures and their invented, irrational, and illogical tales as infallible guidance. For this reason they consider, according to their own ignorant minds, their dark and gloomy world as the ideal social model of life.

Throughout history, many nations persisted in allegiance to the false religions and traditions inherited from their ancestors despite being taught Allah's true religion:



An illustration depicting the Epic of the Mahabharata. This describes a great war that broke out as the result of a struggle for power between two tribes. This fictitious tale, which Hindus regard as being absolutely true but that are in reality irrational and illogical nonsense, portray supposed deities as having superior powers. Krishna, one of the illusory deities to whom Hindus attach the greatest importance, is the fictitious hero of this epic.

When they are told, "Come to what Allah has sent down and to the Messenger," they say, "What we found our fathers doing is enough for us." What! Even if their fathers did not know anything and were not guided! (Surat al-Ma'ida: 104)

When they are told, "Follow what Allah has sent down to you," They say, "We are following what we found our fathers doing." What, even though their fathers did not understand a thing and were not guided! (Surat al-Baqara: 170)

They said, "Have you come to us to turn us from what we found our fathers doing, and to gain greatness in the land? We do not believe you." (Surah Yunus: 78)

It is possible to define Hinduism as the accumulated total of ways of life promoted by various people without a basis in Allah's revelation, and brought together after a time under one name and then declared supposedly sacred by man. However, even false religions have a book or scriptures containing their rules and practices. Especially when the numbers of followers begin to swell and these false beliefs' reach widens, written scriptures become an ever greater necessity and thus the myths, worship rituals and erroneous beliefs that were circulating for centuries by word of mouth, come to be committed to paper. These books are written by various people. For this reason it is possible to find in such scriptures many contradictions, irrational and illogical narratives, much nonsense, tales glorifying moral and psychological degeneration and whole chapters promoting sexual misconduct and perversion. This is an invitation to a gloomy life based on myths.

The various branches of Hinduism are based on four books known as the Vedas, the Upanishads, the Puranas and the holy Brahmans. Hindus' lives, perverse worship, complex beliefs and rituals are all based on these superstitious books. The Brahman, termed to be the "science of sacrifice", contains detailed descriptions of rules and rituals and is essentially an explanation of the Vedas. Despite the fact that these



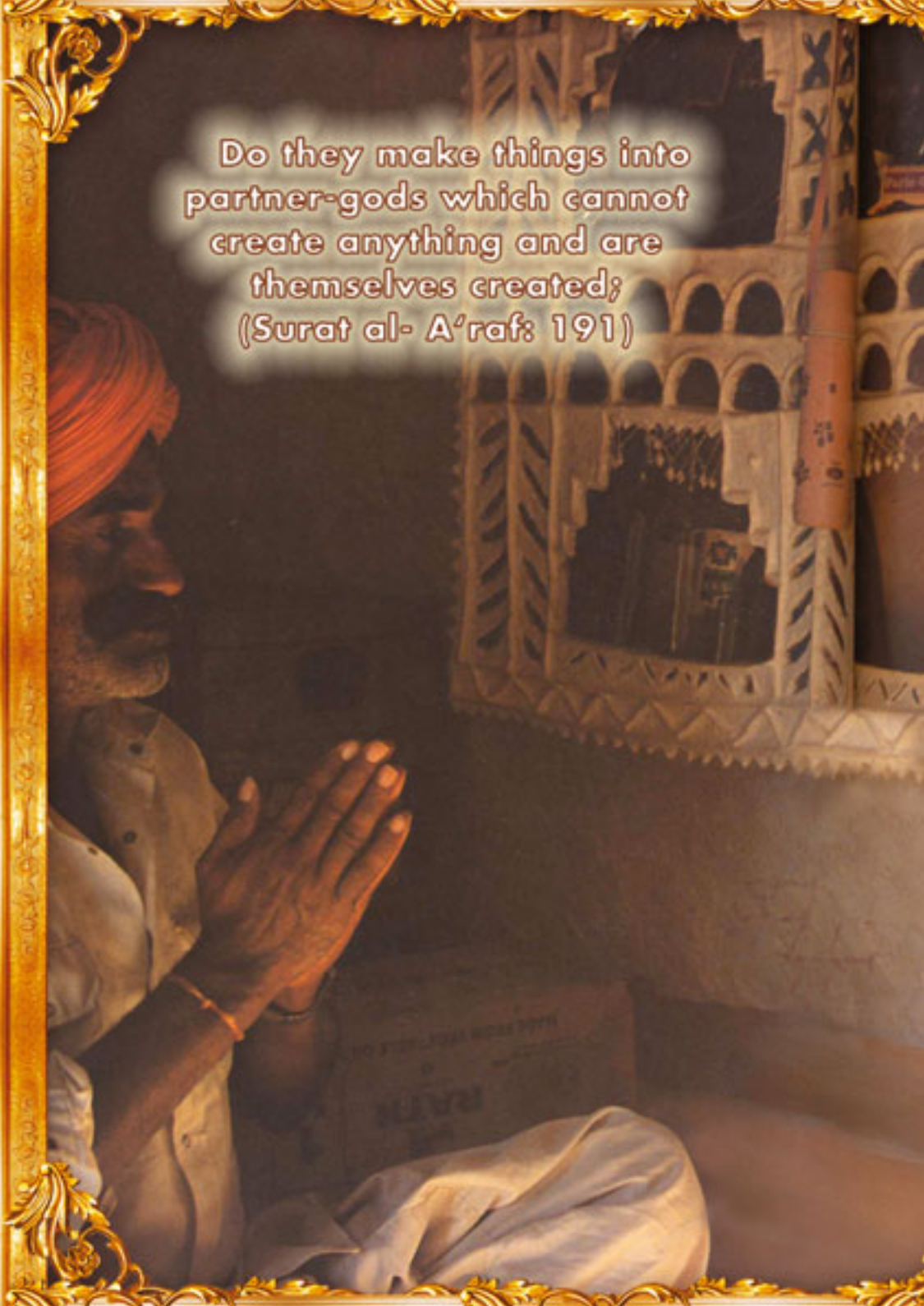
Hindus generally base their beliefs on the Vedas, written around 1000 BC. The Vedas are regarded as the first written references in Hinduism. They are divided into four: Rig Veda, Yajur Veda, Sam Veda and Atharva Veda. These books contain legends, obscure texts, hymns, sections that describe sacrificial rituals, and chapters about spells and magic. Despite the many inconsistencies, nonsense and moral perversions in them, they have become Hindus basic scriptures.

books are full of contradictions, nonsense and moral perversion, they have become the guiding principles of Hindus.

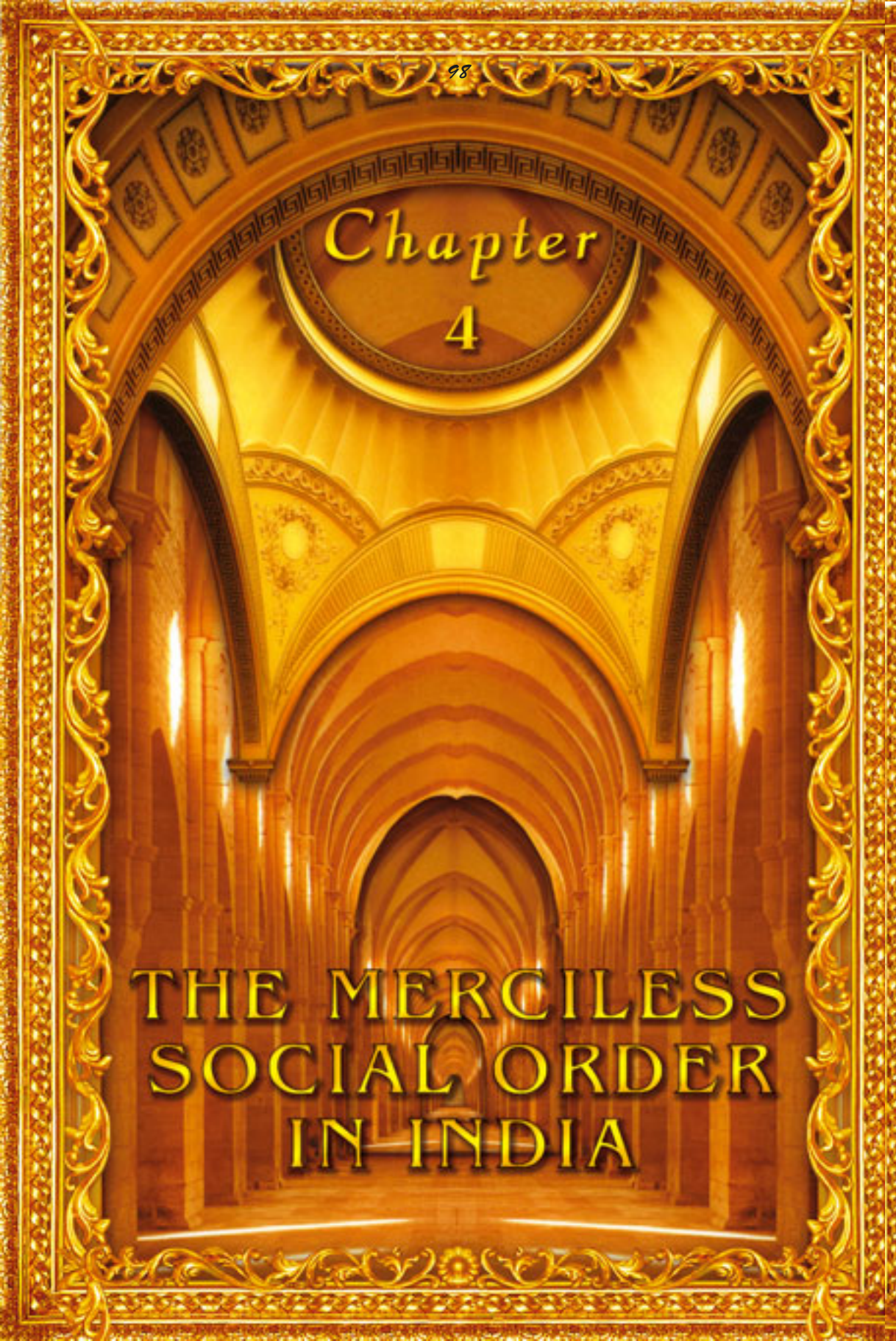
Almost the entire content of these scriptures, considered to be sacred by Hindus, are contradictory and nonsensical, which is why it is such a grave and surprising error on the part of the Hindus to adopt these texts as guiding principles which are strictly adhered to. This chosen, but false, religion brings them much grief in this world. Worshipping their deities for days, even months on end, praying to their idols in shocking rituals and all their other efforts made in this respect will not benefit them in any way. Unless they abandon this mistake of theirs, our Lord's revelation will bring everything the idolaters do to naught. (Surat al-An'am: 88)



Sun-worship still goes on in India. The picture shows a Hindu woman worshiping the imaginary sun goddess Surya with peculiar movements. This woman seeks to show her respect for Surya by crawling for hours on her knees. The fact is, however, that it is Allah, Lord of the worlds, Who created the sun and moon from nothing.


Do they make things into
partner-gods which cannot
create anything and are
themselves created;
(Surat al- A'raf: 191)




Chapter
4
THE MERCILESS
SOCIAL ORDER
IN INDIA

The first thing that strikes the visitor to India is the prevalence of destitution, poverty and misery. Daily life is gloomy, filthy and depressing. Beggars, homeless people, and the exceedingly poor are ubiquitous and one does not need to be a sage to realize that they are living in a great deal of misery. One of the foremost causes of this misery is the caste system that has been ruling India mercilessly for over 3000 years known as Jati.

The caste system is the legacy of the Aryans who occupied India between 2500-1500 BC. It is a barbaric social class and hierarchy system devised by the Aryans at the time when they developed the Hindu civilization with the view to continue widespread slavery among Hindus. In this way, they laid the foundations of the racist order that separated their own tall, white-skinned and high nosed race from the indigenous dark-skinned (Munda, Dasyu, Dravid) people. This system continues to this day. Throughout history the caste system has been the fundamental reason behind the killings, murders, arsons, rapes, injustices, conflicts and other social ills prevailing in India. Worst of all, this system formulated by the Aryans, is considered to be a religious necessity based on the so -called sacred scriptures and considered sacrosanct by all Hindus. For this reason the caste system is deeply rooted in Indian society and thus far, no social or legal, local or international pressure has been able to remove it.

The mythical Hindu scriptures base the emergence of this discriminatory system on an exceedingly nonsensical legend, according to which the supposed first human is Manu. From the head of Manu; the priest class, from his arms; the princes and warriors, from his legs; farmers and tradesmen and from his feet, the lower classes were created. In other words, inequalities emerged as the result of this process. This su-

perstitious order in which Hindus have been suffocating for hundreds of years is rooted in this nonsensical myth.

There are four castes subdivided into hundreds of classes:

1-Brahman (Priests and Sages)

2-Kshatria (princes and worriers)

3-Vaikya (traders, shopkeepers and farmers)

4-Sudra (laborers, craftsmen)

Whilst the Aryans took up their places at the top, they termed the lower classes sudra (slave). In this way they created a weak and oppressed society made up of different classes. Sudras were prohibited learning, development and advancement so they were forced to live a miserable life. One's caste depends on birth and it is not possible to move from one caste to another according to the rules made by the Brahmans. Because of these perverse rules people were destined to live their entire lives without any hope of improving their standing. Then, there are the "untouchables" (dalit- filth that contaminates the upper classes) who are considered as outside the caste system.

The untouchables have been forced to live outside of villages and towns and away from the upper caste people. They are not permitted to enter their temples, schools or to set foot on any public area frequented by them. Neither were they allowed to drink from a well used by the members of the higher castes. Hindu scriptures suggest that making physical contact with untouchables makes the higher caste member impure which then requires highly sophisticated cleansing rituals to be performed by the "contaminated" person. For this reason, untouchables were condemned to live in areas where they would not mingle with the higher caste people, and in many parts of India they were not permitted to walk the streets in daylight, because aside from physical contact, even the shadow of an untouchable was forbidden to fall on a higher caste

member, as this is considered to be a "contamination". Today, these reprehensible practices are legally forbidden but nonetheless still exist across India.

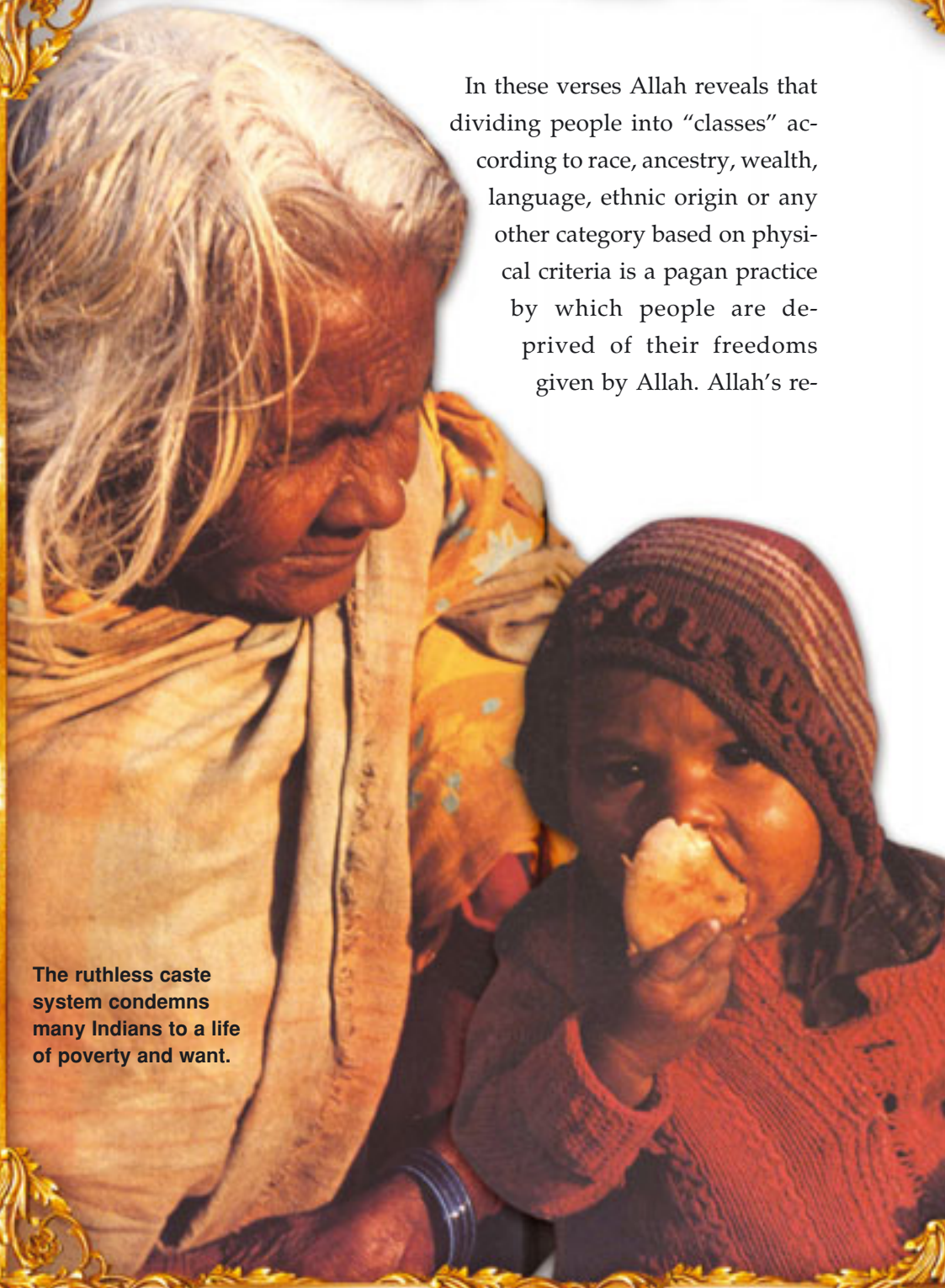
The Brahmans on the other hand, occupied the highest echelons of the caste system and their spiritual superiority, obtained by right of birth, required them to conduct ceremonies and other pagan rituals. According to Aryan texts, Brahmans owned everything on the face of the earth and even if they knew or learned nothing, they were still deemed to be superior. The Hindu author Swami Dharma Theertha sums up this unjust system formulated by the Aryans in the following way:

> *When the ancient priests set themselves up a an exclusive caste of Brahmans in order to establish their self-assumed superiority, they had to inflict degradation on all other Hindus (i.e., original Indians) and press them down to various layers of subordination. They had to keep the people divided, disunited, weak and degraded, to deny them learning, refinement and opportunities of advancement, and permanently and unalterably tie them down to a low status in society. The Hindu social organization based on hereditary castes was evolved by the Brahmans with the above object and was enforced on the people with the help of foreign conquerors.*[23]

This system, central to Hinduism is comparable to the order established by Pharaoh, cursed by Allah in the Qur'an. When Allah tells us of the situation of Pharaoh, He says that Pharaoh "divided his people into classes":

> **Pharaoh exalted himself arrogantly in the land and divided its people into camps, oppressing one group of them by slaughtering their sons and letting their women live. He was one of the corrupters. We desired to show kindness to those who were oppressed in the land and to make them leaders and make them inheritors. (Surat al-Qasas: 4-5)**

In these verses Allah reveals that dividing people into "classes" according to race, ancestry, wealth, language, ethnic origin or any other category based on physical criteria is a pagan practice by which people are deprived of their freedoms given by Allah. Allah's re-



The ruthless caste system condemns many Indians to a life of poverty and want.

ligion requires justice and freedom for people. Islam, revealed as guidance for mankind, delivers this freedom.

For this reason Islam has been instrumental in the liberation of innocent people in India over the past 1000 years and provided a sanctuary for all those who escaped the outrageous cruelty of the caste system. The most important blow ever dealt to the caste system was the spread of Islam on the Indian Subcontinent. The Indian academic Jagjeet S. Sidhu wrote the following in an article in which he compared *Islam and Hinduism*:

> *A further barrier to Hindu-Muslim understanding lay in their social differences. Hindu society was based on a caste system according to which every member belonged in a specific social tier. This ranged from the highest caste, Brahmans, to the lowest caste, the Untouchables. To Muslims, Islam was a brotherhood of the faithful devoid of any such caste system. Millions of Hindus who found themselves in the lowest caste converted to Islam in order to escape their misery. This action was never forgotten by the Hindu faithful.*[24]

That is why there is no caste system operating in Pakistan and Bangladesh, both based on Islamic principles and founded by Indian Muslims. However the caste system is still operational in India with all its cruelty and injustice.

THE CASTE SYSTEM IS ALIVE



For a nation to overcome injustice, the root causes of injustice need to be eradicated as well as creating the legal framework required to do so. India is an example for this. The 1949 constitution declared the class of "untouchables" unconstitutional and in the 1950's, laws that made this practice a criminal offence were passed. However these legal reforms have had little impact on the practices in real life. At present, there are around 250 million people suffering

great injustices and are deprived as a direct consequence of the Hindu caste system. In great swaths of the country, untouchables are still considered less than human and therefore cannot participate in social life. The sources that best describe the attitude towards the untouchables are the ancient Manu scriptures, which are held in high regard by Hindus. According to these sources, the untouchables fall into the same category as cockerels, frogs, ducks, moles, dogs or beasts used for transport.[25]

The caste system affects every aspect of life in India. It determines everything from the food that can be eaten, who can cook it, how to wash, the color and length of clothing, whether or not men can grow a moustache, even to who is allowed to have an umbrella; nothing is omitted. Punishments are administered according to the caste system too. Whilst a member of the higher castes gets away with little or no punishment for a certain crime, members of the lower castes can expect severe punishment for the same crime. Professions are delegated to the various castes and marriage is only possible within the same caste.

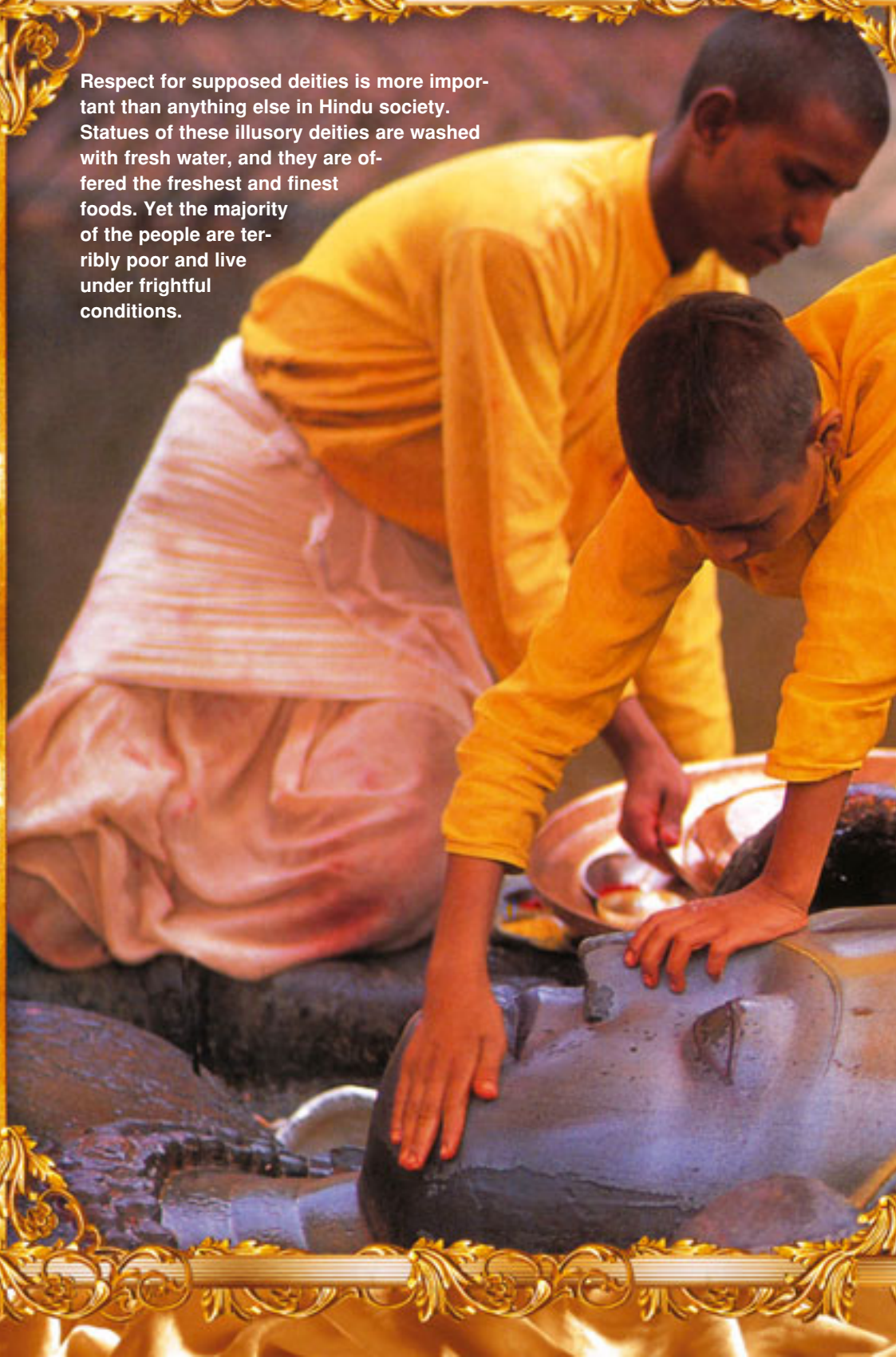
India is the only country on earth that has still such a cruel, unjust and irrational system in place and Hinduism is directly responsible for this. The caste system is a serious threat to social justice, unity, solidarity and peace. The Hindus are irreversibly divided into thousands of castes and sub-castes. The Vedas describe the caste system in great detail and these texts are full of hatred and racism that impose the caste system on the people. India's first justice minister and co-author of its constitution, Dr. B. R. Ambedkar describes the situation as follows:

> *Hinduism is a veritable chamber of horrors. The sanctity and infallibility of the Vedas, Smritis and Shastras, the iron law of caste, the heartless law of karma, and the senseless law of status by birth are, to the Untouchables, veritable instruments of torture which Hinduism has forged against untouchables.*[26]

Current examples of the situation described by Dr. Ambedkar can



There are various festivals in the Hindu tradition in which idols are revered. Prayers are offered to the accompaniment of strange dances during these festivals, and offerings are made. The fact is, however, that these supposed deities can neither hear their prayers nor see their dances.



Respect for supposed deities is more important than anything else in Hindu society. Statues of these illusory deities are washed with fresh water, and they are offered the freshest and finest foods. Yet the majority of the people are terribly poor and live under frightful conditions.



be observed through the airwaves and the printed media. For instance, in March of 2002, 5 dalits (untouchables) were beaten to death and then burned near a police station. Their "crime" was to skin a dead cow but rumors to the effect that they had killed the cow circulated and their fate was thus sealed. The killers' explanation for their crime came straight from the perverse Hindu belief: "They killed our mother!" they said, referring to the belief that cows are the "mothers" of humanity.[27] Such news is common in India where the caste system rules. For example, according to a report by the *The Times of India*, a member of the lower castes was violently beaten for making contact with the garb of a Hindu belonging to the higher castes.[28] The same newspaper printed another report by which members of the higher castes threw animal corpses and excrement into a well used by untouchables, but the police could not be persuaded to take action against the perpetrators.[29] An untouchable attempted to participate in a ceremony in a Hindu temple, but was raped and subjected to vicious torture.[30] A school expelled 38 Dalit (untouchable) children for attempting to drink from the same water as other children, because according to superstitious Hindu beliefs, dalits are forbidden to drink from the same source as higher caste members.[31] On the 11th of July, 1997, the Maharasthra police opened fire on a group of innocent untouchables who were peacefully protesting in Mumbai (Bombay). Thirty untouchables were killed and hundreds wounded. These were not warning shots, but shots meant to kill and many woman and children died in what can only be called a massacre. Later, the police did not permit the wounded to be taken to hospital which increased the death toll further. Following this barbaric attack, the UN called on the Indian government to restore law and order and to bring those who were responsible for this massacre to justice, but nothing concrete came of it. Such attacks, rapes and burnings continue across India.

The BBC News reports the ongoing violence and cruelty inflicted on the untouchables as follows:

Despite 50 years of reform, laws banning discrimination and education and economic development, India's 160 million dalits (about 16 % of the population) are dehumanised in a million ways every day. Why would an upper caste Hindu listen to people deemed so dirty and vile that their very shadow was polluting? Their children are denied education. If allowed into a classroom, they are forced to sit apart, or even outside.

Tea shops have a "two-cup" system which forces dalits to drink from separate cups. In villages, they live in segregated areas, do all the dirty jobs, cannot draw water from the same well as the higher castes or worship in the same temples.

Most are landless labourers at the mercy of landlords who will not flinch from lynching, raping and burning their huts if dalits dare to answer back or even defend themselves against abuse. A prize-winning Indian journalist, P Sainath, has described a dalit man's nostrils being pierced with a packing needle and a string drawn through his nose by upper-caste villagers in Rajasthan. His tormentors held the string like a horse's reins, made him walk in the streets and later tied him to a peg meant for cattle. Woe betide dalits trying to better themselves.

A couple of years ago, a young village woman in the southern state of Tamil Nadu found a job as a social worker in the nearest town. The first time she returned to visit her family, the upper castes fell into a rage because she had been "uppity" enough to wear shoes. She was manhandled and paraded naked for not knowing her place. [32]

Eric Margolis, a Canadian journalist with the Toronto Sun newspaper, described the inhuman system ruling in India in an article written in 2001 and titled "India's Hidden Apartheid", as follows:

Fair-skinned Brahmins, 3.5% of the population, are India's ruling elite, holding 78% of judicial positions and half of parliament's seats. In recent tests,

The Muslim Observer, 31 October 2002

India's Untouchables Denounce Hinduism and Convert to Islam

converted to Buddhism, Islam and Christianity from a single stage in a bylane next to to the Ravi Das mandir here on Sunday.

On October 15, the five Dalits were taking hides and a dead cow in a mini-truck from Farrukhnagar in the Gurgaon district to Karnal when they stopped outside the Dulena police station and decided to skin the cow as they could not stand its smell. Thinking that the Dalits were killing the cow alive, the villagers lynched them.

At Sunday's ceremony, Bhadant Lal Khairalia, a Valmiki by caste, caused a flutter when he announced he would embrace Buddhism by choosing to call himself Mohammad Hussain, Khairalia adding a bigger symbolic point. "It is now how the western media and Saddam, He is

lenge the VHP, Bajrang Dal and RSS to reconvert me. I will give up my life but never be a Hindu again," he said angrily. Silence prevailed as people from the nearby Hanuman temple watched the Dalits denounce and desert Hinduism.

The relatives of the Jhajjar victims were the first to be converted to Buddhism by priest Bhante Sheel Ratan. Udit Raj of the All-India SC/ST Confederation conferred 22 vows that Ambedkar had administered on October 14, 1956, to half a million Dalits.

Watching the conversion was filmmaker Mahesh Bhatt,



Udit Raj

who had come to express outrage

Continues on page 20

TIME-DATED MATERIAL - DO NOT

Volume 4 Issue 4



Cumhuriyet, 26 September 2001

Kast sisteminin uygulandığı Hindistan'da paryalar "dokunulmayacak kadar kirli" kabul ediliyor.

Parya çocuklarına su bile yok

YENİ DELHİ (Aşınbarış)- Hindistan'da yüksek kasttan arkadaşlarıyla aynı yerden su içmek isteyen 28 ilköğretim öğrencisi okuldaki

Newsweek, July 2000

CASTE STRUGGLE

CASTE STRUGGLE

After centuries of discrimination, India's Dalits are fighting back—using the vote and civil disobedience to claim their rights. By CARLA POWER





caste villagers, right of whom were Dalits. The massacre was Bihar's eighth major caste-related attack in the past six months. The Indian Constitution long ago outlawed discrimination against Dalits. India has a Dalit president and more than 100 Dalits in Parliament. But despite quota systems in government jobs and education, members of the upper castes like Brahmins and Kshatriyas have a monopoly on power: they dominate business, the media and government.

After centuries of suffering from intocar bomb in Bihar state capital Patna

FLASH VIOLENCE: Relatives grieve over one victim in Bihar; students in Delhi protest the massacre

back. The Dalits have begun their own civil-rights struggle. Inspired by the liberation campaigns of American blacks and South Africans, Dalits are becoming to use the vote, civil disobedience and even violence of their own to claim their rights. Their new assertiveness has angered the powerful and triggered an increasingly bloody struggle. According to the Human Rights Education Movement of India, a Madras-based nongovernment organization, every hour two Dalits are assaulted, three Dalit women are raped, two Dalits are murdered and two Dalit houses are burned.

The Dalit movement is young and fragmented. Even the term Dalit covers scores of subcastes and tribes, many speaking different languages. Unlike racial apartheid in Africa or gender discrimination in the Western world, casteism hasn't captured the West's attention—yet. But there are distinct change. Earlier this spring, the National Campaign on Dalit Human Rights asked that next year's U.N. Conference on Racism include casteism on the agenda. Says Bota Singh, a Dalit member of Parliament: "If Dalit can achieve [freedom] from the British, why can't the Dalits achieve inde-

Changing a system ensnarled by religious texts will be tough. Millions of Dalits have tried to escape the system by converting to Islam, Christianity or Buddhism. But the system is so rooted in South Asian society that caste persists among Christian and Muslim communities. Moreover, the Dalit movement threatens upper-caste privilege. Even upper-caste people are eager to overturn a social order that supplies them with cheap labor and social standing. Some upper castes have struck back at Dalits with "honor" killings: crimes are called in



Indian scientists discovered that high-caste Hindus, particularly Brahmins, are genetically closer to Europeans than they are to dark-skinned, Dravidian Indians. Caste became a rigid system whereby India's fair-skinned ruling class kept lower and swarthier others in their places - as laborers, landless peasants, and servants - exploiting them in the name of religion……

Dalits are forced to clean public toilets and remove human feces, usually with their hands. They sweep up after Indians defecate in the streets and move dead animals. According to an extensive report on caste by the respected Human Rights Watch, large numbers of Dalit women are routinely raped and forced to become sex slaves for Hindu priests and land owners. Of India's estimated 40 million indentured laborers - a modern form of slavery - most are Dalit children, often sold into lifelong servitude by starving parents.

When Dalits try to defend themselves from abuse and exploitation, they are attacked by higher-caste gangs and local police. Their shanties are burned and their women gang raped. Dalits, like Muslim Kashmiris, are frequently subjected to beatings, rape, torture and arson by India's brutal police, says Human Rights Watch.[33]

A considerable number of these "defenseless" dalits find the solution in leaving the dark world of the Hindu faith, as before in history, for a religion that represents justice, compassion and humanitarianism: Islam. According to a report by BBC News:

New conflicts arise just about every day in India and people are ruthlessly killed because of the caste system. A significant portion of the Dalits, exposed to this terrible oppression, abandon the dark teaching of Hinduism and, as in the past, turn to Islam, the representative of justice, compassion and humanity on Earth. A report which appeared in *The Muslim Observer* on 31 October, 2002, under the heading "India's untouchables denounce Hinduism and convert to Islam," described the oppression on the Dalits.

At least 400 members of the low caste (Dalit) community in the southern Indian state of Tamil Nadu, say they are planning to convert to Islam, because of what they describe as persistent unfair treatment by their higher caste Hindu neighbors. In the latest incident, the Dalit leaders are angry that higher caste Hindus in their village, near Kanchipuram have refused to allow a religious procession to pass through the streets where they live.

… The dalit community says they are not being coerced into converting to Islam, but they want to because in Islam everyone is treated equally.[34]

The reality that can be recognized so easily even by these people who have no in-depth knowledge of the Islamic faith is exceedingly important: whereas the superstitious Hindu religion oversees the rule of a cruel social system of caste segregation that sanctions the oppression of the poor by the rich and the weak by the strong, the Islamic morality commands justice, to do good, to act in goodwill, to respect the rights of other people, and to maintain devotion and compassion towards others. Therefore, in a society in which Islamic morality rules, people will at always side with the truth, will not compromise on honesty, and will invariably opt for righteousness. Allah says the following in the Surat Al-Ma'ida:

You who have faith! Show integrity for the sake of Allah, bearing witness with justice. Do not let hatred for a people incite you into not being just. Be just. That is closer to heedfulness. Have fear of Allah. Allah is aware of what you do. (Surat al-Ma'ida: 8)

Allah clearly reveals true justice in great detail in the Qur'an and informs us that if true Qur'anic morality is practiced in society, injustice cannot prevail and people will live in peace and happiness. In the Indian society which we have examined thus far, and also in many other countries of the world, people suffer from great injustices because of the color of their skin, because of their religious denomination or because of



Sadhus (Hindu ascetics) are Hindus who abandon the established order and their families and who begin living in the streets in order to draw closer to the so-called Brahman. This Hindu tradition encourages idleness and laziness instead of hard work in this world, and condemns people to live under very primitive conditions. Yet the moral values of Islam encourage people towards dynamism, to strive to attain ever more pleasant things, and to perform deeds that will be beneficial to others. In contrast to the dark and dirty world of Hinduism, that of Islam encourages a clean, enlightened and peace-filled life.


... Be equitable when you
speak–even if a near relative is
concerned; and that you fulfill
Allah's contract. That is what He
instructs you to
do, so that hopefully you
will pay heed.
(Surat al-An'am: 152)

their race or ethnicity. People of white skin are treated differently to black people, who are often discriminated against. For centuries, especially in the past two centuries, racially motivated wars were fought across the world in which tens of millions perished. The morality of the Qur'an does away with such divisive factors. Allah reveals the reason for creating different races and nations:

> **Mankind! We created you from a male and female, and made you into peoples and tribes so that you might come to know each other. The noblest among you in Allah's Sight is the one of you who best performs his duty. Allah is All-Knowing, All-Aware. (Surat al-Hujurat: 13)**

Allah willed to create His servants as different nations or tribes in order for them to acquaint themselves with one another, with each others cultures, languages, traditions and achievements. The fact that different races and nations co-exist must be considered as cultural diversity and as such, it should prevent conflicts and war between them. This diversity is the beauty in Allah's creation. Just as being tall or white cannot be the basis for supremacy as opposed to being short, yellow or black, it can neither be considered as inferiority. Such is Allah's will and wisdom; and in the Presence of Allah these differences have no bearing. Believers know very well that the only measure of superiority is the superiority in faith and fear of Allah.

In one verse we are told:

> **Among His Signs is the creation of the heavens and earth and the variety of your languages and colors. There are certainly signs in that for every being. (Surat ar-Rum: 22)**

Allah has created all different races according to His wisdom and Muslims must be just to all people and races, even if they are deniers:

> **Allah commands you to return to their owners the things you hold**

on trust and, when you judge between people, to judge with justice. How excellent is what Allah exhorts you to do! Allah is All-Hearing, All-Seeing. (Surat an-Nisa': 58)

Allah's recommended sense of justice requires treating everybody as equal, compassionately, and as peacefully as humanly possible without discriminating against one or the other. Our Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) stated that: *"All people are from Adam (pbuh) and Adam (pbuh) is from dust"*[35], hence we are all equal, as the human race. People's color, race, ethnic origin or language do not define supremacy or inferiority.

For a Muslim and in Islam, someone's social status in terms of wealth or poverty or his categorization into upper or lower class is of no relevance. Allah's decree in this regard is clear:

"... Be upholders of justice, bearing witness for Allah alone, even against yourselves or your parents and relatives. Whether they are rich or poor, Allah is well able to look after them. Do not follow your own desires Allah…" (Surat an-Nisa': 135)

According to this commandment of Allah's, a faithful believer who sincerely and respectfully fears Allah must be just to everyone, irrespective of wealth or poverty, and cannot discriminate or treat someone differently because of his financial or social status. He knows that wealth and poverty are temporary circumstances of this world, created by Allah in order to test people. When death comes, people's worldly wealth and property lose all their value and the only thing that matters then is his fear of Allah, Who values only truthfulness, justice, honesty and decency. One of Allah's verses on justice is the following:

You who have faith! Be upholders of justice, bearing witness for Allah alone, even against yourselves or your parents and relatives. (Surat an-Nisa': 135)

As this verse demands of the believers, they must strictly abide by Allah's verses and they cannot compromise on justice under any circumstances. It is evident that preferential and discriminatory treatment purely based on blood bonds or friendship will create discontent and friction in society. A Muslim acting on the principles of the Qur'an will comply with Allah's commandments, as in the following verse:

> **… That you are equitable when you speak – even if a near relative is concerned; and that you fulfill Allah's contract. That is what He instructs you to do, so that hopefully you will pay heed. (Surat al-An'am: 152)**

Abiding by these instructions is evidence for a Muslim's strong faith in Allah and his good character.

This is the social model prescribed by the morality of the Qur'an. Hinduism on the other hand is not based on Allah's revelation. Consequently, it has produced a vicious, oppressive, loveless and racist system.

THE FALSE HINDU RELIGION AND SIKHISM

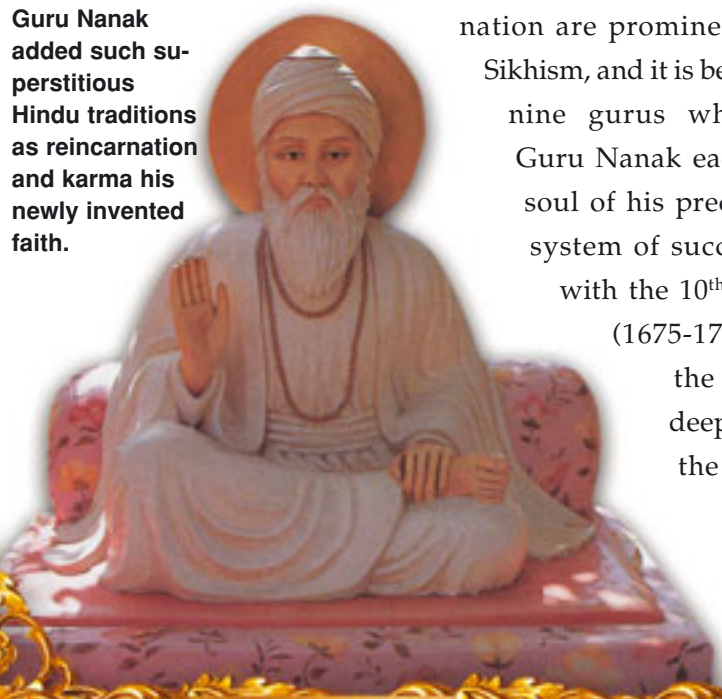
The caste system in the superstitious Hindu religion has been the source of terrible oppression of the great majority of that faith's members throughout the course of its history. For that reason the morality of Islam with its affection, justice, and social solidarity has been the hope of many Hindus. As we have already mentioned, since the arrival of Islam in India, a considerable number of Hindus have become Muslims. However, certain sections of society have found it difficult to escape the Hindu traditions they have lived with for so long.

These people neither walked away from Hinduism completely nor did they enter Islam, but instead tried to create a new religion, in their own eyes, by mixing the two. One such attempt produced Sikhism, which was founded by Sri Guru Nanak Dev Ji (1469-1539).

Guru Nanak worked for many years under Muslim leaders where he had the opportunity of getting to know Islam intimately. He met many Islamic scholars and learned from their views and eventually, he formulated a new culture in his own mind by fusing certain elements of the Hindu faith with some of the core principles of Islam. His school of thought found many followers over time and Sikhism was thus born.

Sikhs are concentrated in Pencab, North-western India. According to a population count conducted in 1995, they number 18.7 million people, 1.9% of India's total population. They live also as small minorities in Britain, Canada, USA, Malaysia and East Africa.

Sikhism acknowledges true Islamic principles such as the unity of Allah, and that He created the whole universe from nothingness, that all people are equal and that together, they form the human brotherhood. Sikhs reject the caste system and idolatry but believe in reincarnation, karma and nirvana, aspects taken over from the false religion of Hinduism. Many Hindu traditions, festivals and rituals are practiced by Sikhs too.



Guru Nanak added such superstitious Hindu traditions as reincarnation and karma his newly invented faith.

Superstitious karma and reincarnation are prominent features of Sikhism, and it is believed that the nine gurus who succeeded Guru Nanak each carried the soul of his predecessor. This system of succession ended with the 10th guru Gobind (1675-1708). However the ten gurus are deeply revered by the Sikh commu-

nity and every Sikh has the portraits of them in his home. Devotion to these gurus is considered elementary to the Sikh faith.

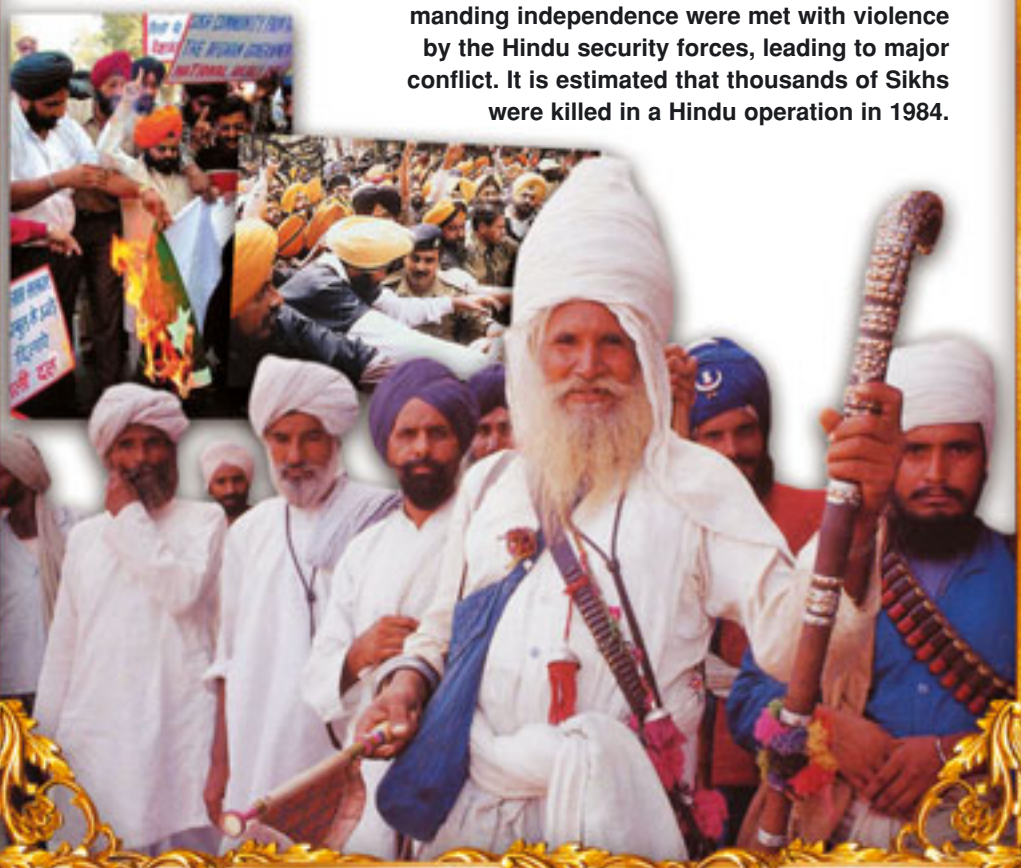
The name Sikh became widely known in the world with the attacks carried out across India by Sikh militants. At present, Sikhs are in a state of conflict with Hindus as well as Muslims. Thousands of Muslims have lost their lives over the years at the hands of Sikh militants in Kashmir, but the loss of life in their conflict with Hindus is even greater.

When in 1947 Pakistan broke away from India, the Sikhs were very influential in Pencab, but with the division of the country, they were dispersed to various parts of the country. As a consequence, they lost their military and political power. Between 1941 and 1951 200,000 Sikhs were forcibly converted to Hinduism in an assimilation campaign which triggered the ongoing conflict between Hindus and Sikhs. The Sikhs are known to be a more proactive, aggressive and uncompromising people compared to other societies on the Indian subcontinent and "support" their demand for independence with violence, arson and occasional acts of terrorism. The conflict escalated further when in 1984 Hindus invaded the Amritsar Temple, a holy site of the Sikh faith, and killed between 450 and 1,200 Sikh militants in an armed conflict that lasted four days and nights. The Sikhs responded soon after by having the late Prime Minister Indira Gandhi, who had ordered the assault on the temple, killed by her two Sikh body guards. The Hindu regime then began a wide-ranging operation against the Sikhs. Official figures put the Sikh casualties at 2,700, but according to Human rights organizations and the media, the death toll was likely between 10,000 and 17,000.[36] Sikh militants went on the counter attack by assassinating prominent Hindus as well as moderate Sikh leaders who opposed their policies. Since 1984, 30,000 people have been killed in the conflict between Sikhs and Hindus.

The 1990's saw a decrease in violent attacks, but with the rise of Hindu ultranationalism in recent years the conflict has began to escalate again.

As we stated at the beginning, Sikhism is a manmade religion which incorporates some elements of Islam, but continues Hindu practices and mixes the two, which is not a rational thing to do.

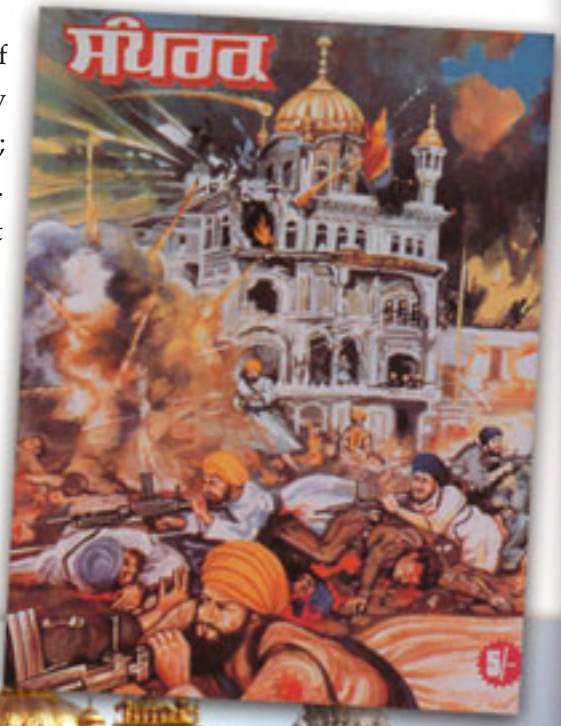
Islam is a religion based on Divine revelation whereas Hinduism, on the other hand, is a religion based on preposterous human traditions developed by human beings. Revelation is Divine knowledge that comes from Allah and is therefore absolute, whereas traditions and other human views and practices are inevitably flawed and imperfect. Additionally, Hinduism when compared to most other man-made cul-



Looting and attacks on Hindus by Sikhs demanding independence were met with violence by the Hindu security forces, leading to major conflict. It is estimated that thousands of Sikhs were killed in a Hindu operation in 1984.

tures and systems is even more nonsensical, bigoted, violent, unjust and perverse. It is therefore a grave perversity to produce a religion between Islam and Hinduism.

Sikhism is the product of an error that has misled many people throughout history; blind devotion to traditions. Allah says the following about people who fall for this mistake:



An illustration depicting "Operation Blue Star," initiated against the Sikhs by Indira Gandhi. Below is shown the Golden Temple of Amritsar, which is sacred to the Sikhs.

When they are told, "Come to what Allah has sent down and to the Messenger," they say, "What we found our fathers doing is enough for us." What! Even if their fathers did not know anything and were not guided! (Surat al-Ma'ida: 104)

We sincerely call on all Sikhs to acquire the dignity of Islam by following only Allah's religion, instead of submitting to "the religion of their forefathers."

HINDUISM CONDEMNS PEOPLE TO DESTITUTION AND HUNGER

One of the negative aspects of the belief in karma at the core of Hinduism is that the illnesses, poverty, helplessness and disabilities of people are perceived to be a punishment for their evil deeds or from the moral misconduct of their previous lives. As a result, people in the low-

The burning of the body of Indira Gandhi, killed by Sikh militants.



The Sikhs' holy scripture is called the "Granth Sahib." Sikhs regard these texts as the foundation of their faith and engage in heretical demonstrations of respect in front of them.







er caste believe they deserve to be punished and society as a whole thinks that way too. The rich and the ruling class at the top of the system consider their privileges to be their natural right. Because of this erroneous belief, people of the lower castes have always been debased and oppressed in Indian society.

According to the rigid caste laws of Hinduism, people belonging to the lower castes cannot change their caste whilst in this life. Therefore, they can neither improve their social status, change their professions or improve their living standards. The only thing they believe they can do



The caste system gave rise to a most unfair social order in India. The upper castes, constituting only a very small part of the population, continue to live under very pleasant conditions, while the "untouchables" struggle against poverty and want.

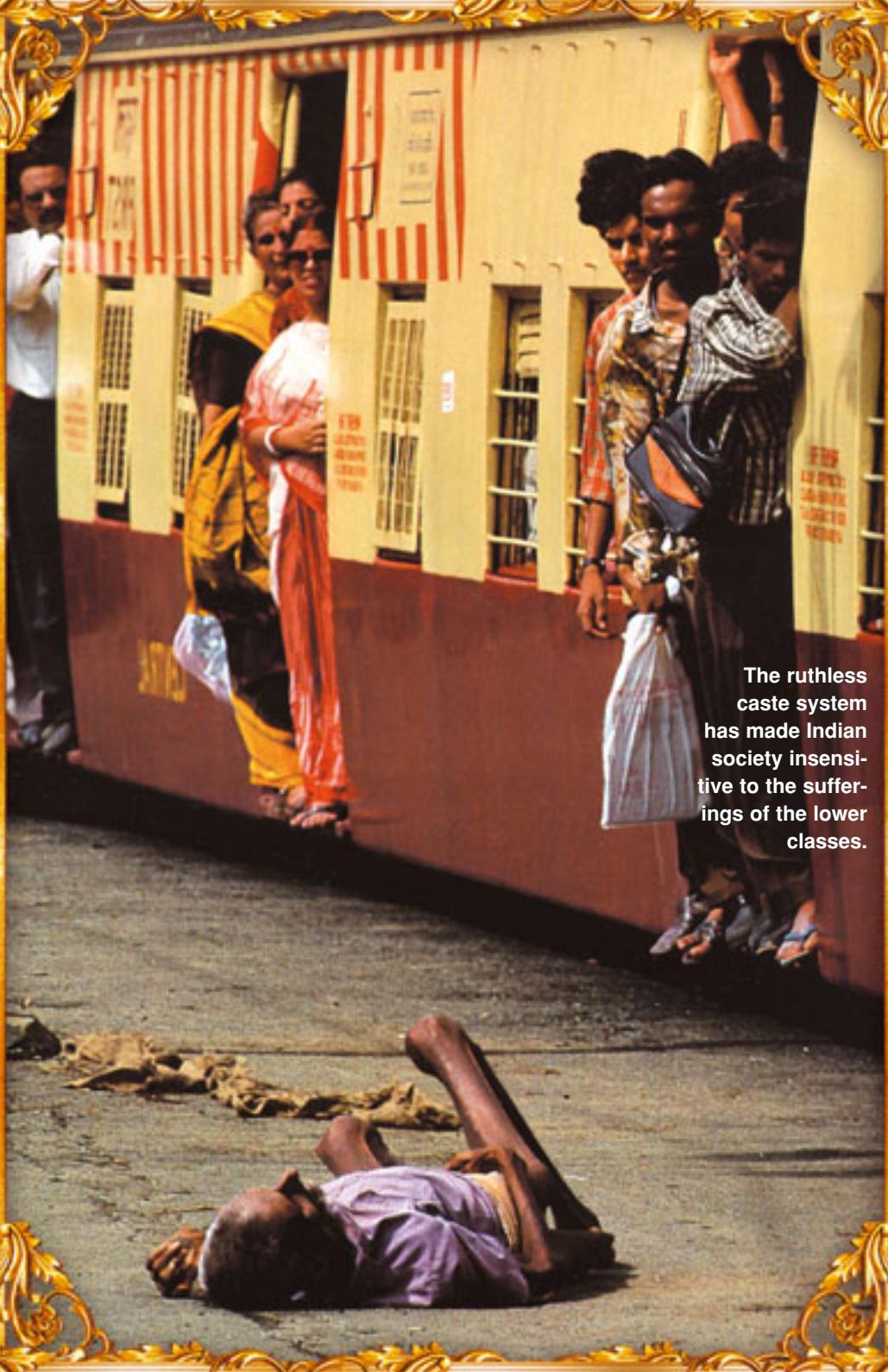
is to comply with the social order without complaint and hope thereby to be born into a higher caste in their next reincarnation. Otherwise, they believe they will be returned as plants or animals. But who is actually evaluating the conduct of people and determining their biological form for their next lives? Hindus cannot answer this question. The only thing they can do is to believe that the laws of the imaginary karma system function like the "self-governing natural laws". However it is evident that there cannot be any such "natural laws" and this makes the irra-



tionality of this belief obvious. Moreover, the Hindus as well as other believers in karma like Buddhists have been raised with this type of conditioning and they therefore believe blindly in this imaginary system. These false beliefs gave rise to and perpetuate an oppressive caste system that condemns people to be kept at a certain social level.

The caste system in the Hindu belief eradicates cooperation, solidarity and the support of the needy within the sociocultural structure, because the uncompromising caste system creates an environment in which people regard one another as opponents and those outside the four castes, specifically the untouchables, are subjected to inhuman treatment. These people have been forced to work in the least desirable jobs, are not helped by anyone if they go hungry, and are debased and dejected in the most appalling fashion. Hindus believe that the poor are poor because they deserve it, so they refuse to help them. The sick, the needy and the disabled are disregarded. Hinduism is the most debasing religion for people. The most highly praised things in Hinduism are their idols and deities, and that is why Hindus derive joy and happiness from serving and prostrating before lifeless idols they made themselves from wood or stone. A so-called sacred tree, snake, worm or cow is valued higher than a human being in Indian society. No other religion belittles and disrespects humanity as Hinduism does.

Since the sense of solidarity is lacking in the state administration, destitution is increasing across the country by the day. Members of the higher castes represent approximately 15% of the Indian population but control roughly 90% of the national wealth, media, security forces and the justice department. Overall, 40% of the people live in abject poverty, which means that almost 400 million people lack the bare necessities of life like food, shelter and clothing. This is a staggering figure. The organization Human Rights Watch estimates that 15 million children are in-



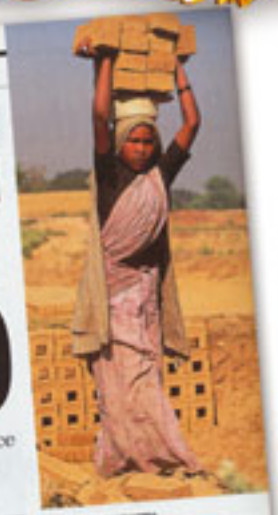
The ruthless caste system has made Indian society insensitive to the sufferings of the lower classes.

Time, 16 April 1996

Young and Cursed

THE YOUNG AND THE DAMNED

Political pressure is rising to end the prevalence of child labor throughout India, home of the majority of the world's underage workers





By ANTHONY SPAETH





There are some 15 million child workers in India. The *Time* report shown to the side described how India was coming under intense political pressure from a number of countries to put an end to this ruthless system.

dentured servants; these are children given in ransom for their families debts, and constitutes a form of slavery.[37] It is also estimated that a further 8 million children are doing hard farm labor. *The Times of India* newspaper reported on the 11th of April 1984, that these children live under conditions reminiscent of "torture camps".[38] «Çocukların Kölelikteki Özel Durumu, Turizm, Çocuk Seks Ticareti ve Köleligi», (The Special Position of Children in Slavery, Tourism, the Child Sex Trade and Slavery), Irfan Erdogan, Ankara University, They spend their lives fighting off starvation. Hindus receive such news complacently as they consider this destitution justified by the caste system and have no qualms when they make the most expensive food offerings to their self-made idols. India is a country where this irrational system is regarded as not only highly commendable, but highly reasonable, and where food is given to statues rather than the hungry.

India's education system is nothing to be proud of either. Approximately half of all children between the age of 6 and 14 are either working or do not attend school for other reasons. The state education system is neither compulsory nor fair.[39] Poor people simply cannot afford school uniforms, transport or educational material. The education system's significant failings are partly due to the fact that education is considered by many, including the government, as unnecessary for the members of the lower castes.

This is a cruel system that can only exist in idolatrous societies devoid of religious morality. It is unjust and contrary to the morality of the Qur'an. Allah reveals in the Qur'an that all weaknesses and destitution is given to mankind as a trial for their conduct in this world. Allah says: **"We will test you with a certain amount of fear and hunger and loss of wealth and life and fruits. But give good news to the steadfast."** (Surat al-Baqara: 155) Sickness or poverty is not a punishment, but a trial, and

people are expected to be patient and moral despite the hardship and to lead a life that will earn Allah's good pleasure. The approach that should be adopted toward those in want and trouble is to help without giving offence, to protect their rights and to watch over these people in the best way.

In true religions based on Allah's revelation, doing good, cooperation and solidarity are central to inter-human relations. Our Lord says:

> **… Help each other to goodness and heedfulness. Do not help each other to wrongdoing and enmity. Have fear of Allah. Allah is severe in retribution. (Surat al-Ma'ida: 2)**

As revealed in the above verse, Muslims are obliged to make genuine efforts in the cause of the good. They ponder Allah's verse, **"Whatever good you do, Allah knows it."** (Surat an-Nisa': 127), and never forget that whatever they do, they will get its reward in the Presence of our Lord Allah. In the verse below, Allah reveals that solidarity must be within the framework of goodness and fear of Allah and the Qur'an also reveals what goodness is:

> **It is not devoutness to turn your faces to the East or to the West. Rather, those with true devoutness are those who believe in Allah and the Last Day, the Angels, the Book and the Prophets, and who, despite their love for it, give away their wealth to their relatives and to orphans and the very poor, and to travellers and beggars and to set slaves free, and who perform prayer and give the alms; those who honor their contracts when they make them, and are steadfast in poverty and illness and in battle. Those are the people who are true. They are the people who guard against evil. (Surat al-Baqara: 177)**

As our Lord reveals in the Surat al-Baqara, goodness is a morality that encompasses all aspects of a Muslim's life as well as being an ongoing state of worship. Muslims are people who help the needy and or-

phans, even if they are needy themselves, who give from what they like for themselves (Surat al-Insan: 8) and who are devout servants of Allah. They recognize solidarity, cooperation and doing good as an attribute of being a Muslim. **"And beggars and the destitute received a due share of their wealth."** (Surat adh-Dhariyat: 19). Their assistance for others is not dependent on anything and Muslims go any length in order to do good and to encourage others to do likewise. His help seeks no return just the good pleasure of Allah. Our Prophet (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) said in one of his Hadith: *"Allah Who is great said: My servant, give provisions to the needy so I may give to you"*[40]

Allah reveals in the Surat al-Insan muslim's behavior:

> **"We feed you only out of desire for the Face of Allah. We do not want any repayment from you or any thanks. Truly We fear from our Lord a glowering, calamitous Day." (Surat al-Insan: 9-10)**

Muslims know that Allah is infinitely just and they never forget that they will be rewarded for the good they do on earth. They bear in mind that life on earth is a temporary affair and that the true life is awaiting them in the Presence of Allah, because this is what Allah reminds them of and He advises them to do good. The reward for those who do good is revealed by Allah in the verses as follows:

> **When those who have fear of Allah are asked, "What has your Lord sent down?" their reply is, "Good!" There is good in this world for those who do good, and the abode of the hereafter is even better. How wonderful is the abode of those who guard against evil. Gardens of Eden which they enter, with rivers flowing under them, where they have whatever they desire. That is how Allah repays those who guard against evil. (Surat an-Nahl: 30-31)**

SUPERSTITIOUS HINDU RELIGION ORDAINS THE ILL-TREATMENT OF WOMEN

In the previous chapters of this book we examined the erroneous teachings of Hinduism including its discriminatory social order that reduces human beings to a lower status than animals. The Hindu religion's discrimination of the lower castes and other religious denominations is nothing in comparison to its viciousness towards women. Hindu written texts contain special prohibitions and restrictions in terms of women's daily lives. All these illogical rules make their daily lives very difficult. In comparison to men, Hindu women are like slaves and they are forbidden to seek even the most basic human rights.

There are countless restrictions and oppressive traditions that are imposed on women in many different countries of the world, but the superstitious traditions in India present violence, oppression and every form of degradation in the guise of sacredness to people. That is why Hindus see the violation, degradation and ill-treatment of women as a religious obligation. The Manu, one of scriptures of the superstitious Hindu religion, speaks of women in the following way:

> *"A dead-end of incapacity, this dead-end of immorality, this congregation of fire, this obstacle in the human eye, this portal to hellfire, this false flower basket, the elixir of the venomous secret, this chain that ties people to this worthless life or, in one word, woman…"*[41]

Some of the barbaric practices inflicted on women, driven by ancient superstitious traditions, some priests and religious texts, are as follows:

-The Manu (one of the more important scriptures of Hinduism) speaks of women as the "cookers of dogs". According to its commandments women have no right to own property. Women are allowed to work and earn, but their earnings belong to their fathers, husbands or if the woman is widowed, to her son.

-Women are prohibited from making independent decisions and even to seek this right is forbidden in the Manu.

-The right to divorce is given to men only. Irrespective of whatever cruelty, oppression and violence she may be subjected to, she cannot divorce her husband. Under all circumstances she must obey her husband and be grateful for the treatment she receives. According to the Manu, "even if the husband has nothing noteworthy about him, she must respect him as her lord".[42] (Allah forbid) This perverse belief is visible in everyday life. In earlier times

A report on the *BBC* web site described how human rights were neglected in terms of child marriages. Despite being legally banned, these ceremonies, which take place en masse and in front of large audiences, are prevented neither by the security forces nor by the civilian administration.



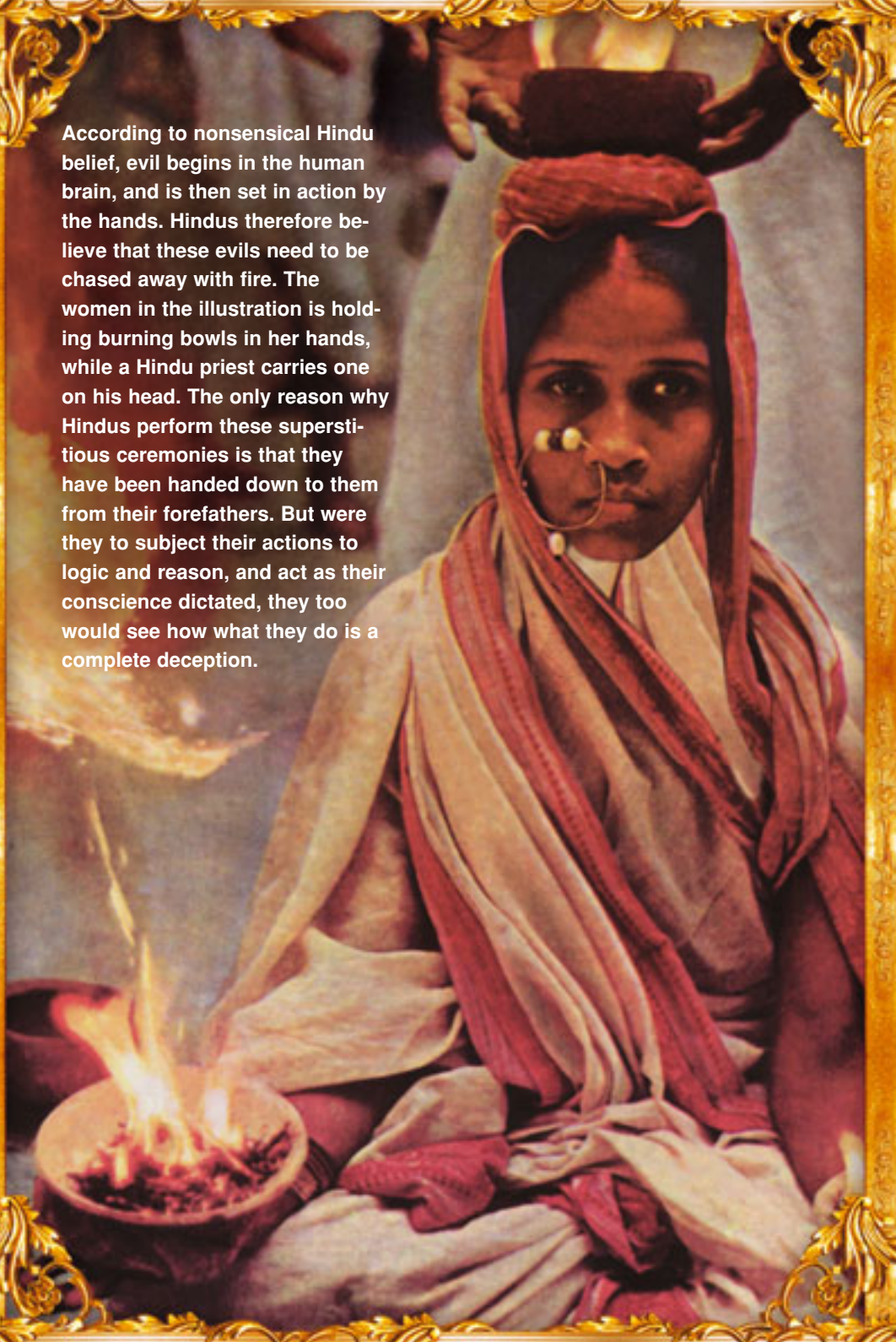
A *BBC* report titled "Move to stop Indian child marriages" described how thousands of children, and even babies, are forced into arranged marriages every year.

Aryan men had the right to cut off their wives' ears and noses if they left their houses without the permission of their husbands. This practice still continues in less developed parts of India.[43]

-Irrespective of their caste, all women are prohibited from reading the major part of educational textbooks. Women are also prohibited from reading or learning the Hindu scriptures, the Vedas in particular.

-The drahoma, or dowry received by men is another example of cruelty. This practice was outlawed in 1961 but is still a common practice in India. What makes it so significant is the fact that it is used to oppress, hurt and violate women. During the marriage ceremony the bride's family pay the groom's family a huge sum of money and even after marriage, the groom's family will continue to demand money or property and often resort to violence in order to obtain it. Some men seek to remarry in order to receive another drahoma and burn their young wives to death for this purpose. These killings are covered up as suicides or accidents, which explains the exceedingly high rate of accidental deaths in households.[44]

In India, families that have girls, live in gloom because of the Drahoma, they have to give, as well as turning a blind eye to their daughter's treatment. The possibility of determining the sex of the child during pregnancy, forces the anxious people to unspeakable barbarism. The Times of India newspaper printed articles to the effect that pre natal tests are increasingly accurate, bringing in its wake rising numbers of abortions. The same year, research conducted in Bombay revealed that out of 8000 abortions, carried out after such tests, all aborted fetuses were female except one.[45] The new centre for eugenics, a "science" developed by Darwinist theorists and cruelly implemented in Nazi Germany, is India.



According to nonsensical Hindu belief, evil begins in the human brain, and is then set in action by the hands. Hindus therefore believe that these evils need to be chased away with fire. The women in the illustration is holding burning bowls in her hands, while a Hindu priest carries one on his head. The only reason why Hindus perform these superstitious ceremonies is that they have been handed down to them from their forefathers. But were they to subject their actions to logic and reason, and act as their conscience dictated, they too would see how what they do is a complete deception.

-The murder of girls is a direct result of ancient Hindu texts ordaining cruelty to women. This vicious tradition is ordained, sanctioned and traced back to Aryan texts: "Hence they [Aryans] reject a female child when born, and take up a male."[46] The Atharva Veda commands, « Let a female child be born somewhere else; here, let a male child be born"[47] A woman giving birth to a daughter feels she has committed a crime. Killing newly born baby girls is seen as an easy "opt out clause" from the burden of raising girls.[48]

The inhuman practices girls are subjected to has existed throughout history in various societies that did not practice religious morality. This Aryan practice existed in many other cultures as well, and one of these was the pre-Islamic Arab society. Allah reveals that Arabs did not value baby girls, and that they buried them alive straight after birth; they will be brought to justice for this sin on the Day of Judgment:

When the baby girl buried alive is asked for what crime she was killed, (Surat at-Takwir: 8-9)

In another verse, Allah reveals that the idolaters were wrong to feel shame for having conceived a girl:

When one of them is given the good news of a baby girl, his face darkens and he is furious. He hides away from people because of the evil of the good news he has been given. Should he keep her ignominiously or bury her in the earth? What an evil judgment they make! (Surat an-Nahl: 58-59)

In the following verse Allah states that this practice is madness:

When any of them is given the good news of the very thing which he himself has ascribed to the All-Merciful his face darkens and he is furious. (Surat az-Zukhruf: 17)

Allah reveals with the following verse that it is Him Who determines the sex of each human being:

The kingdom of the heavens and earth belongs to Allah. He creates whatever He wills. He gives daughters to whoever He wishes; and He gives sons to whoever He wishes; or He gives them both sons and daughters; and He makes whoever He wishes barren. Truly He is All-Knowing, All-Powerful. (Surat ash-Shura: 49-50)

It is Allah Who wills the birth of boys as well as girls and parents are expected to raise them in love, affection and compassion as recommended by Allah.

Throughout history, Islam forbade the barbaric practice of infanticide of idolatrous religions wherever it went and brought such practices to an end. Allah has taught nations unaware of the Islamic morality the wrongness of this attitude towards girls through His messengers and the books of revelation. With the teaching of the Islamic morality delivered by prophets, being acquired by people, the thought of girls being a cause for embarrassment and the aforementioned barbaric practices of ignorant societies have almost been eradicated. However, India is still persists in its ancient and perverse practices of killing baby girls.

THE HORROR OF SATI OR THE BURNING OF WIDOWS

The perverse practices ruling social life in India are too numerous to recount. Each of these superstitious beliefs has its own rituals and variations according to the area but the most horrific of them all must be the "suttee", killing hundred of thousands of women over the centuries. This perverse tradition requires widows to die by burning upon the death of their husbands.

The horrific suttee tradition began to be practiced at the time of the Aryan's conquest of India. In the case of an individual woman this practice is termed suttee but when whole towns or villages are affected, it is



Nandalal Bose's painting "A Woman Going to Suttee"

called Jauhar (instances of war when the men are not expected to return). The reason for this burning of women is to punish them for not dying before their husbands. In the case of Jauhar, innocent women are cooked, cut in two and fed to the dogs. Superstitious Hindu traditions also contain explanations aimed at justifying this horrible practice. For example, some Hindu texts speak of "Jauhar" as being to prevent the women from falling into the hands of the enemy.[49]

The Indian writer Sita Agarwal, whose sister was killed at a young age by the practice of drahoma, says in his book "Genocide of Women in Hinduism" written in 1999, that the practice of suttee is found in all Hindu texts, that it has been practiced by the Brahmans throughout the centuries, and that it continues to be a widely practiced tradition[50] Some of the commandments in relation to suttee found in the Manu, considered to be so-called Divine revelation, are as follows:

> *Let these women, whose husbands are worthy and are living, enter the house with ghee (applied) as corrylium (to their eyes) let these wives first step into the pyre, tearless without any affliction and well adorned.*[51]
>
> *A sati who dies on the funeral pyre of her husband enjoys an eternal bliss in heaven.*[52]
>
> *It is the highest duty of woman to immolate herself after her husband.*[53]

The suttee tradition that turns a good quality like loyalty to the husband into a horrific act of barbarism has been responsible for the burn-

ing of countless women through the ages. Hindu women sometimes willingly surrendered to this tradition, but were more often than not burned by the force of society. Suttee is at present legally prohibited but still widely practiced in India, especially in rural areas. Cases of suttee are usually entered into public records as death by household accidents or kitchen fires, but sometimes they are a public ritual; for instance, in 1987 a young woman by the name of Roop Kanwar was killed in a suttee ritual at her husband's funeral in Deorala, a village in Rajasthan, reopening the suttee debate. Roop's burning was defended by her family, the local population and many Hindu leaders, by claiming that it was her own choice, whereas others suggested that the young woman was burned forcefully by her family and the Brahmans.[54]

In these ritual burnings, the Brahmans, rulers of the caste system, played a leading role through the ages. They encouraged suttee and presided over the rituals and currently, it is the Brahmans again who are leading the pack in the race to revive this tradition. According to Agarwal, there are two main reasons for the Brahmans to support the revival of the suttee tradition, especially the killing of the widows of other castes:

1-To reduce the numbers of non-Brahmans by killing their women

2-The appropriation of the women's property by the Brahmans



Protesting against Roop Kanwar's immolation, Delhi 1987
The sati (widow immolation) of Roop Kanwar in a village in Rajasthan in 1987 led to a massive agitation both for and against the ritual. Some of Kanwar's neighbours claimed that she had run away and tried to hide in a barn before the ceremony, but was dragged out, pumped full of drugs, dressed in her bridal finery and put on her husband's funeral pyre.

(*The History of Doing* by Radha Kumar, Kali for Women, 1993)

Major demonstrations took place in the country following the killing of Roop Kanwar. Some of these demonstrations took place in order to defend the savage ritual known as suttee, and others in order to protest against Kanwar's killing.





(Above) According to Hindu myth, the wife of the fictitious deity Rama through herself into the flames in the wake of his death, but the fire did not hurt her. (Side) A monument to women who committed suttee. Hindus believe that women who perform this savage tradition attain a holy state, and make offerings to these shrines.

The second reason cited here is recorded also by the French traveler Jean Baptiste Tavernier who visited India 6 times between 1641 and 1667. He was a jeweler who visited India on business, which is why his observations are considered to be credible and impartial, and his writings reflect a certain admiration for India. However, like other observers, he too was shocked by the frequent killings of other caste members by the Brahmans. He wrote:

> *The Brahmans accompanying her (the Sati) exhort her to show resolution and courage, and many Europeans believe that in order to remove the fear of that death which man naturally abhors, she is given some kind of drink that takes away her senses and removes all apprehensions which the preparations for her death might occasion. It is for the interest of the Brahmans that these unhappy women maintain the resolution they have taken to burn themselves, for all*

the bracelets which they wear, both in arms and legs, with their earrings and rings, belong of right to the Brahmans, who search for them in the ashes after the women are burnt.[55]

Tavernier's account aids the visualization of this shocking tragedy. The fact that the Brahmans first encourage the widows to suttee, then burn them with their own hands and finally pick the valuables from the ashes demonstrates that the Hindu traditions are a horrific means of exploitation. Tavernier relates the details of this tyranny:

"I have seen women burnt in three different ways, according to the customs of different countries. In the kingdom of Gujarat; and as far as Agra and Delhi, this is how it takes place: On the margin of a river or tank, a kind of small hut, about 12 feet square, is built of reeds and all kinds of faggots, with which some pots of oil and other drugs are placed in order to make it burn quickly. The woman is seated in a half-reclining position in the middle of the hut, her head reposes on a kind of pillow of wood, and she rests her back against a post, to which she is tied by her waist by one of the Brahmans, for fear lest she should escape on feeling the flame. In this position she holds the dead body of her husband on her knees, chewing betel all the time; and after having been about half an hour in this condition, the Brahman who has been by her side in the hut goes outside, and she calls out to the priests to apply the fire; this the Brahmans, and the relatives and friends of the woman who are present immediately do, throwing into the fire some pots of oil, so that the woman may suffer less by being quickly consumed. After the bodies have been reduced to ashes, the Brahmans take whatever may be found in the way of melted fold, silver, tin, or copper, derived from the bracelets, earrings, and rings which (p.166) the woman had on; this belongs to them by right, as I have said.»[56]

The whole world considers this suttee practice as barbaric, the Hindu mind justifies it with a twisted rationale; a loyal widow's transcendence of the fear of her own death becomes a deity by accomplishing this ritual.

NZZ, 1 April 2003

NZZ Online

ENGLISH WINDOW Background

Emancipating India's Women

Discrimination as Part of Hindu Culture

Roger Bernheim*

India's women are still far from living in a state of equality with men. They suffer a great deal of injustice and humiliation. But their demand for equality has become a political factor in the land, and progress on the road to emancipation is being made thanks to the work of private organizations.

Can one speak of a women's movement in India? Not if what one means by that is a monolithic phenomenon. The position of women varies from one part of the country to another, from city to countryside, from religion to religion, caste to caste and class to class. Accordingly, the women's movement is fragmented into countless groups of various kinds, representing different interests, pursuing different goals and, to some extent, making contradictory demands. There are few points common without exception to all Indian women, or even

CNN, 12 September 1995

CNN World News

CONTENTS | SEARCH | CNN HOME PAGE | MAIN WORLD NEWS PAGE

'Bride Burning' alive and well in India

Police say every two hours a woman is killed over dowry

September 12, 1995
Web posted at: 9:20 a.m. EDT (1320 GMT)

From Correspondent Gayle Young

NEW DELHI, India (CNN) -- For years, victims of so-called "bride
unit of a New Delhi hospital -- young women whose husbands and
disputes over dowries.

In 1986 Moona's in-laws burned her to death when her parents refu
Her mother, Appa Shahjahan, says police laughed when she went to
was hospitalized," she remembers, crying.

The Independent, 17 February 2001

Independent.co.uk
News

THE INDEPENDENT CROSSWORD FOR YOUR PDA

Home > News > World > Asia China

Hindus seek new status for the sati widows' temples

By Peter Popham in Delhi

17 February 2001

India's coalition government is coming under pressure to give national monument status to 300 temples across the country that glorify the burning of widows. The Hindu custom known as "sati", by which widows

(Side) A report in the Swiss *Neue Zürcher Zeitung* called "Emancipation for Indian Women" described how discriminatory policies against women still continue in India. (Center) A report headed "Bride Burning Still Goes on in India," published by *CNN*, described various cases of suttee and interviews with individuals who had been saved from committing suttee at the last minute. Young, the author, stated that some 5000 cases of suttee take place every year, but that most are written off as domestic accidents.

The British daily *The Independent* carried a report headed "Hindu seek new status for suttee shrines," which stated that some 300 shrines had been built to commemorate widows who committed suttee. There was recently a debate on whether these shrines should be given national monument status.

It is noteworthy that the first prohibition of this ancient Indian tradition was enacted by Muslims. *The Encyclopaedia Britannica* states that the first people who attempted to eradicate the suttee tradition were the Muslim Mongol empire's rulers, Humayun and his son Ekber, who governed India between 1526 and 1707.[57] The British rulers who succeeded the Mongols in India formally declared the suttee tradition unlawful when the British viceroy William Bentinck proclaimed this new law in 1828. Though the suttee tradition all but vanished in most of the country, in rural towns and villages the suttee tradition still lives on among the Hindu fundamentalists.

What is even more worrisome than the acceptance of this barbarism by the uneducated and ignorant Hindu masses is the fact that suttee still has fervent supporters among the educated elite in the highly developed cities of India. The extreme nationalist camp is gaining power by the day, and they are campaigning for the revival of the suttee tradition. For example, one of the leaders of the fundamentalist VHP party, Giriraj Kishore, (he also expresses his pleasure about the arson attack on the Babursha mosque at every opportunity) states that if a woman cannot bear to live without her deceased husband, there is nothing wrong about wanting to be burned with him. [58]

In an article titled "VHP reviving Sati", printed in the *Deccan Herald* newspaper, the author stated that Hindu nationalists are campaigning fervently to reintroduce the barbaric Sati tradition and that the members of Sangh Parivar, among them the ruling (at that time) BJP party are ideologically supporting the revival of the Sati tradition. Sita Agarwal explains the connections between the extreme Hindu nationalist movement and the cruelty inflicted on women in his book "*Genocide of Women in Hinduism*" as follows:

In modern times the degradation of women's status is related to the rise in Hindu Fundamentalism (in actual fact a thinly disguised form of Aryan Vaishnava Fanaticism). The extremist organizations that comprise the Sangh Parivar (BJP, RSS, Bajrang Dal, Ranvir Sena, VHP etc.) are reviving the practice of Sati, dowry, female infanticide etc. in various parts of India. Thus, in modern times the status of women has declined sharply due to the activities of Hindu (ie. Aryan) Fundamentalist organizations, some leaders of the RSS (Rashtriya Swayamsevak Sangh, the parental organization of BJP) and its religious wing, the VHP (Vishwa Hindu Parishad) have been supportive of the infamous, now outlawed «suttee» system.[59]

SUPERSTITIOUS HINDU BELIEF ENCOURAGES GIRLS TO CHILD PROSTITUTION

Hinduism does not promote good character and morality but openly encourages perversion and immorality. The devdasi system can be cited as an example. In the superstitious Hindu tradition, girls in childhood can be given to the service of Hindu temples. These girls are called Jogini who are then given in marriage to so-called Hindu deities as an offering to them. In reality however, they are sexually exploited by the men in charge of the temple. Many thinkers define these

Deccan Herald, 8 February 1999



DECCAN HERALD

Deccan Herald Feb 8, 1999

VHP reviving 'sati'

AHMEDABAD: The practice of 'sati' abolished by William Bentinck in 1828 is being revived by the Vishwa Hindu Parishad in the 52nd Hindu calendar century beginning next month which it declared as the 'Hindu centenary'.

International vice-president of the VHP Acharya Giriraj Kishore who once reacted to the Roop Kanwar case by saying that "Hindu dharma has no space for sati" was now defending the practice: "There is nothing wrong if any woman who cannot bear the separation from her husband opts to join him in his funeral pyre."

The VHP leader said the revival of 'sati' would not be out of tune with the VHP's ideology of establishing Hindu Rashtra.

Raja Ram Mohan Roy launched his reform movement against the heinous practice in the 18th century. The spirit of humanism that inspired the social reformer to take up cudgels against such dogmatic beliefs is now being negated by the likes of Dharmendra Maharaj, the priest who presided over the ritual of self-immolation committed by Roop Kanwar upon the death of her husband in Rajasthan. Dharmendra Maharaj of Jaipur, is in no mean a position within the hierarchy of the religious parliament. He is the president of the Sansad's Kendriya Margadarshan Samiti, the steering committee of the religious parliament. It was he who moved the resolution at the Sansad here to implement the agenda of the Hindu Rashtra and gave the call to the Bharatiya Janata Party to work towards forming Hindu Rashtra.

A report titled "VHP Resurrecting Suttee" carried in the Indian daily the *Deccan Herald.*

"marriages" as "temple prostitution" under the guise of service to the superstitious Hindu religion.[60] This practice was introduced by Brahmans for the purpose of drawing people to their temples in order to collect money. The Brahmans encouraged the public to participate in this scheme under the slogan "Looking after a prostitute can cleanse your sins"[61] Even though this practice was prohibited by a series of laws passed by the British colonial administration, it is still a common practice.

Sex in temples is considered a sacred ritual by some Hindus. Girls handed over to the temples, known as joginis are married to their imaginary deities as far as devout Hindus are concerned, which is why families have no qualms in offering their girls to the service of temples. When these girls reach the age of 13, they are first married to the Subramania deity, symbolized by stone idols or pictures and the priests are the first ones to have sex with them.[62] The following day, they are sold to the highest bidder for a length of time of his choice at a price of between 4000 and 10000 Rupees (94-234 USD). This dirty money is considered the rightful income of the temple.

Research conducted by the Illinois University concluded that India is the most exploitative country in terms of child prostitution. Approximately 300,000 children are used in this immoral fashion with an average age of 13. A report commissioned by the human rights organization Jubilee Action entitled "Child Prostitution in India", reveals that this figure is increasing at a yearly rate of 8 to 10%. It is estimated that in the Belgum district alone there are 3300 devadasi, in other words, temples of prostitution. Widespread prostitution has had an escalating effect on the number of HIV/AIDS cases in India. Official figures published in India put the number of HIV/AIDS patients at 3.5 million.[63]

The great majority of girls used in prostitution under the guise of jogini come from rural areas. A report by Illinois University states that

child prostitution is "organized as a traditional, ritual and social activity".[64] Devadasi was legally prohibited in 1982 and families who sent their girls to temples as joginis are liable to be punished by a prison term of a minimum of five years, but this sentence is, more often than not, waived as devadasi is not considered a crime by the authorities but a tra-

Crispin Thorold's report for the *BBC* revealed the ugly face of the immoral DEVADASI system. It described how young girls were forced into marriages with supposed deities at the demand of Hindu priests, following which they fall into the hands of prostitution gangs. Another aspect emphasized by Thorold is that the majority of these children die young, either due to AIDS or other infectious diseases.


BBC, 29 June 2002

BBC NEWS

You are in: World: From Our Own Correspondent

Saturday, 29 June, 2002, 11:05 GMT 12:05 UK

Servants of god

There are tens of thousands of devadasis in India

By Crispin Thorold

In India

Lakshmi must have been stunning once - her high, prominent cheek bones and hazel eyes hint at beauty. But what was before ... ravaged by ...

dition of the superstitious Hindu faith. In the year 2001 a 35 year old jogini called Ashama escaped from the temple where she was forced into prostitution. She explained her ordeal since her childhood as follows:

> *Since the day of the initiation, I have not lived with dignity. I became available for all the men who inhabited Karni. They would ask me for sexual favours and I, as a jogini, was expected to please them. My trauma began even when I had not attained puberty.*[65]

Nationalist and extremist Hindu groups are campaigning for the official reintroduction of the outlawed devadasi system. This moral degeneration has an even more frightening aspect: countries like India, where child prostitution is rampant, are promoted as fantastic tourism destinations and millions of perverted people travel to these places with sex in mind; these countries become a haven for sex tourists. Prostitution is a gross immorality and a great sin forbidden by Allah. He says in the Qur'an: **"And do not go near to fornication. It is an indecent act, an evil way."** (Surat al-Isra': 32)

> **Those who do not call on any other god together with Allah and do not kill anyone Allah has made inviolate, except with the right to do so, and do not fornicate; anyone who does that will receive an evil punishment. (Surat al-Furqan: 68)**

Those who have kept this immoral perversion intact through the ages share the responsibility for this degeneracy with those who created the false Hindu faith in the first place.

However, it must not be forgotten that those who encourage this immorality need to be saved from their untenable situation. These people either consider, filth, immorality and perversion as acceptable because it is the tradition of their forefathers, such as in the case of India, or simply because of the general spread of decadence worldwide. In a society in which Islamic morality dominates, people are always encour-

aged to the most righteous, beautiful, honest and honorable life and the most rational attitude. Allah reveals in one verse that those who consider faith beautiful and immorality to be repulsive have found the righteous path:

> **... However, Allah has given you love of faith and made it pleasing to your hearts, and has made disbelief, deviance and disobedience hateful to you. People such as these are rightly guided. (Surat al-Hujurat: 7)**

The only power that can prevent people from evil and perversion and spread morality among people is Almighty Allah Who has taught us true morality through His messengers. Allah says:

> **Recite what has been revealed to you of the Book and perform prayer. Prayer precludes indecency and wrongdoing. And remembrance of Allah is greater still. Allah knows what you do. (Surat al-'Ankabut: 45)**

THE VALUE OF WOMEN IN ISLAM

The great value of woman in the Islamic faith is described in detail by the verses of the Qur'an and the Hadith of the Prophet (may Allah bless him and grant him peace). Islam protects women and guarantees their rights. It removed the improper attitudes of ignorant societies towards them and gave them respectability in society. These measures aim to prevent them being discriminated against or being oppressed and are for their benefit.

Allah guides people onto the righteous path with the Qur'an and brushes aside the erroneous practices of the adherents of false religions. In the Presence of our Lord what matters is not the gender of people, but their fear of Allah, their faith, good character and devotion. We are told in verses that:

Mankind! We created you from a male and female, and made you into peoples and tribes so that you might come to know each other. The noblest among you in Allah's Sight is the one of you who best performs his duty. Allah is All-Knowing, All-Aware. (Surat al-Hujurat: 13)

Children of Adam! We have sent down clothing to you to conceal your private parts, and fine apparel, but the garment of heedfulness–that is best! That is one of Allah's signs, so that hopefully you will pay heed… (Surat al-A'raf: 26)

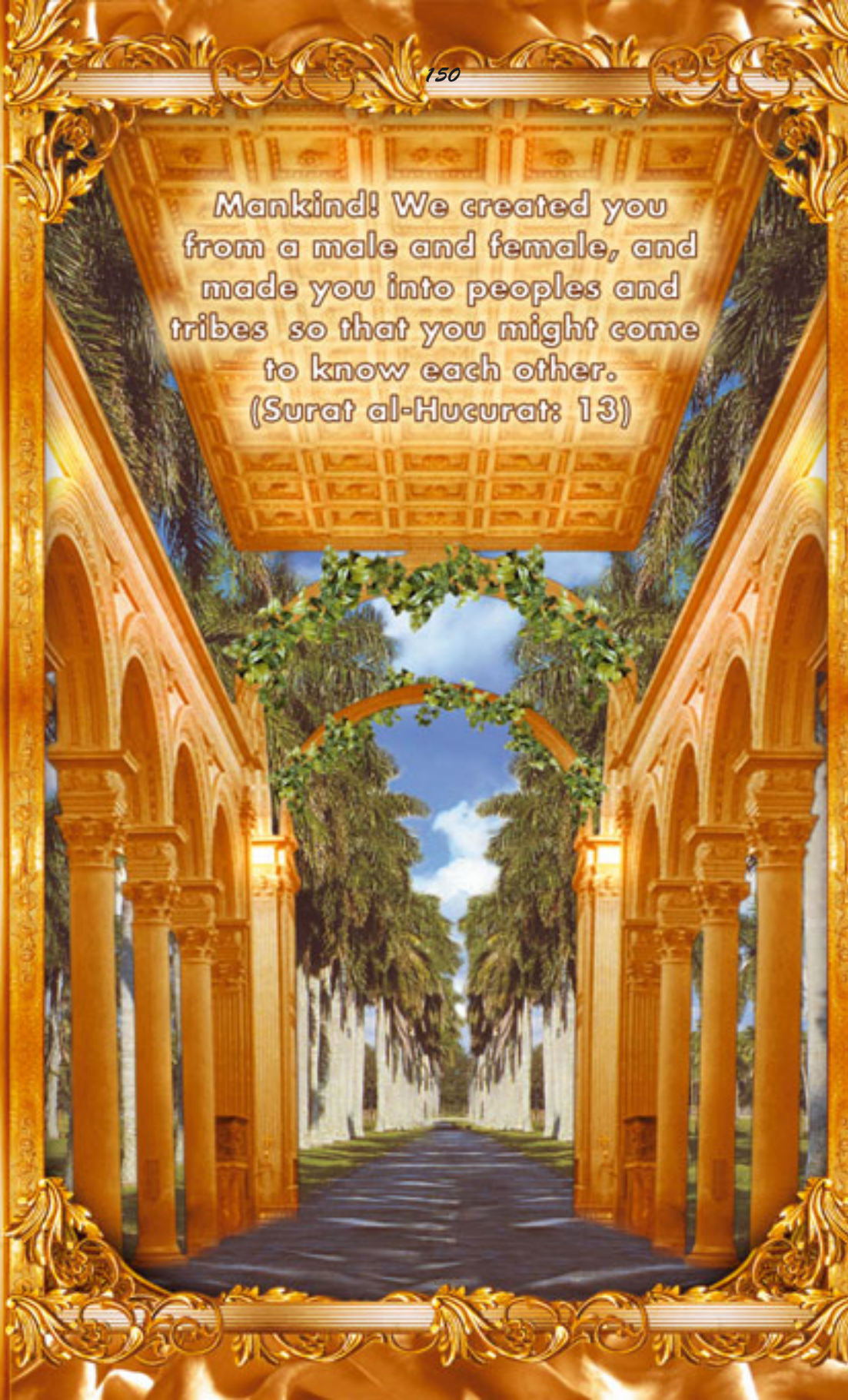
In another verse Allah says: **"...Whatever good you do, Allah knows it. Take provision; but the best provision is fear of Allah. So have fear of Me, people of intelligence!"** (Surat al-Baqara: 197), thus stating that the most important quality of man is the fear of Allah. People must therefore aim to acquire this "fear of Allah" which will make them precious in life as well as in the hereafter and give them supremacy, instead of seeking worldly values like wealth and property, status or fame.

Allah reveals in another verse that seeking Allah's good pleasure is more rewarding than seeking the status among certain people that comes with wealth:

Do not covet what Allah has given to some of you in preference to others – men have a portion of what they acquire and women have a portion of what they acquire; but ask Allah for His bounty. Allah has knowledge of all things. (Surat an-Nisa': 32)

All these verses make it clear that seeking supremacy based on gender, physical power or any other value recognized by ignorance is a great mistake. Allah reveals that the only supremacy is to be found in faith and fear of Allah.

Allah reminds people with the following verse that for men and women alike, what will make them truly superior and honorable is to live by Allah's prescribed morality:


Mankind! We created you
from a male and female, and
made you into peoples and
tribes so that you might come
to know each other.
(Surat al-Hucurat: 13)

The men and women who give charity and make a good loan to Allah will have it increased for them and they will have a generous reward. (Surat al-Hadid: 18)

While it is true that men and women are of different physical capabilities, the fact that women are weaker physically is no reason for them to command any less respect than men in society.

According to Islamic morality, what matters is people's depth of faith and their submission to Allah, not their gender. That they strictly abide by Allah's commandments and prohibitions, and try to live the morality of the Qur'an in the best possible way. These are the qualities that will be recognized in the Presence of Allah, Who reveals in the Qur'an the qualities that a faithful man or woman must have:

The men and women of the believers are friends of one another. They command what is right and forbid what is wrong, and perform prayer and give the alms, and obey Allah and His Messenger. They are the people on whom Allah will have mercy. Allah is Almighty, All-Wise. (Surat at-Tawba: 71)

As Allah reveals in these verses, Muslim men and women have the same duties. They are expected to worship Allah, to abide by all the commandments and recommendations of the Qur'an, and to encourage good and discourage evil. Allah promises everyone who fears and respects him a "guiding light" that will enable him to tell right from wrong: **"You who believe! If you have fear of Allah, He will give you discrimination and erase your bad actions from you and forgive you. Allah's favor is indeed"** (Surat al-Anfal: 29). Whether we are men or women has no bearing in this regard. In return for one's sincerity, faith, and devotion, Allah will provide guidance in every respect and give an intellect capable of accurate decision making and right action. Therefore, intellect develops according to one's devotion to Allah and fear and respect for him, not according to one's gender.

It all depends on the person's strength of faith in Allah, his character, personality, and the responsibilities one is prepared to accept. The gender of the person is irrelevant in this regard. Therefore women, who adopt Islamic morality, do not enter a struggle for equality with men, but a "race" in the cause of goodness. Racing in the cause of goodness means that believers do their utmost in every area of their lives to earn the good pleasure of Allah. In this respect, they race to become the person who is most beloved by Allah, closest to Him and most worthy of His acceptance. However, this is a good natured and godly race. Allah reveals in the Qur'an that what takes them forward in this race is their efforts in this respect:

Such people are truly racing towards good things, and they are the first to reach them. (Surat al-Muminun: 61)

Then We made Our chosen servants inherit the Book. But some of them wrong themselves; some are ambivalent; and some outdo each other in good by Allah's permission. That is the great favor. (Surat Fatir: 32)

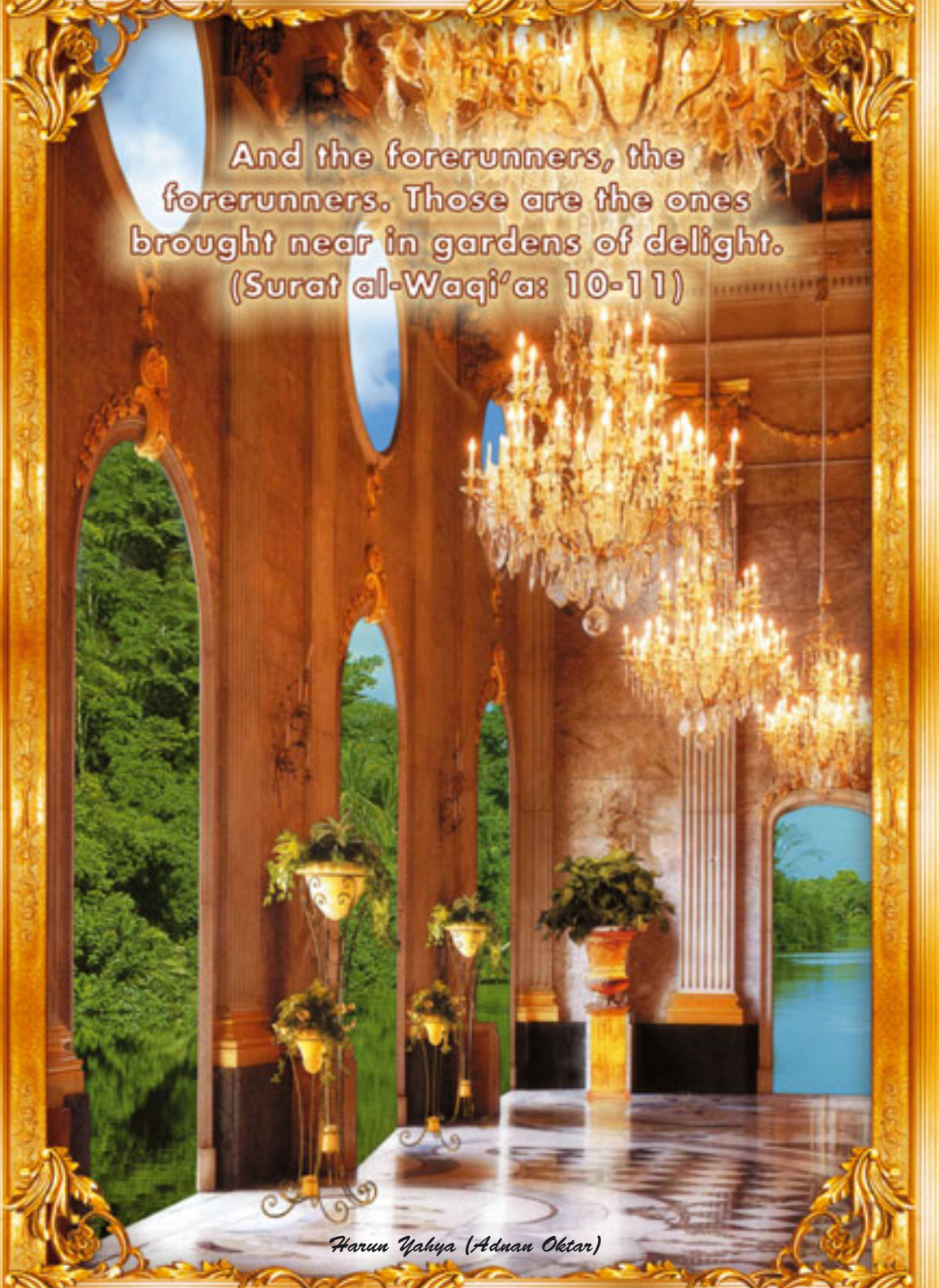
The equality of men and women is apparent in the equal opportunity Allah grants to them in their worldly trials:

"We made everything on the earth adornment for it so that We could test them to see whose actions are the best." (Surat al-Kahf: 7)

Every self will taste death. We test you with both good and evil as a trial. And you will be returned to Us. (Surat al-Anbiya': 35)

With these verses Allah reveals that He is trying men and women alike in order to test who will conduct themselves better.

Allah gives men and women a certain lifespan, holds both accountable with the Qur'an, gives them both a conscience that will inspire them to do right, and makes their selfish egos' and satan their worst enemies. As a result of the worldly trial, whomsoever, man or woman, acquires


And the forerunners, the
forerunners. Those are the ones
brought near in gardens of delight.
(Surat al-Waqi'a: 10-11)

good morality and acts decently in the face of their trial, will receive Allah's best reward on earth as well as the hereafter:

> **Their Lord responds to them: "I will not let the deeds of any doer among you go to waste, male or female– you are both the same in that respect. Those who migrated and were driven from their homes and suffered harm in My Way and fought and were killed, I will erase their bad actions from them and admit them into Gardens with rivers flowing under them, as a reward from Allah. The best of all rewards is with Allah." (Surah al 'Imran: 195)**

Allah reveals in another verse that everyone, man or woman, will be treated fairly on earth as well as the hereafter: **Anyone who acts rightly, male or female, being a believer, We will give them a good life and We will recompense them according to the best of what they did.** (Surat an-Nahl: 97)

In Islam, men and women's standing in society are egalitarian. (See: *Mary: An Exemplary Muslim Woman*, Harun Yahya, Global Publishing, December 2004) According to Islam, women have the same basic rights as men such as choice of spouse, the right of inheritance, free expression, acquiring property, working, education and determining their lives. This is why throughout history Islam has ensured that women have enjoyed the importance they deserve. This is a fact recognized by Western historians and the renowned Orientalist Bernard Lewis, who says the following in this regard:

> *"Generally speaking the spreading influence of Islam in Arabia improved the situation of women immensely. They acquired the right of property ownership and many other rights, and Islam gave them protection against ill-treatment by their masters or husbands. Islam prohibited the tradition of killing baby girls in pagan Arabia."*[66]

Another Western expert on the Islamic faith, Karen Armstrong, wrote the following on the same issue:

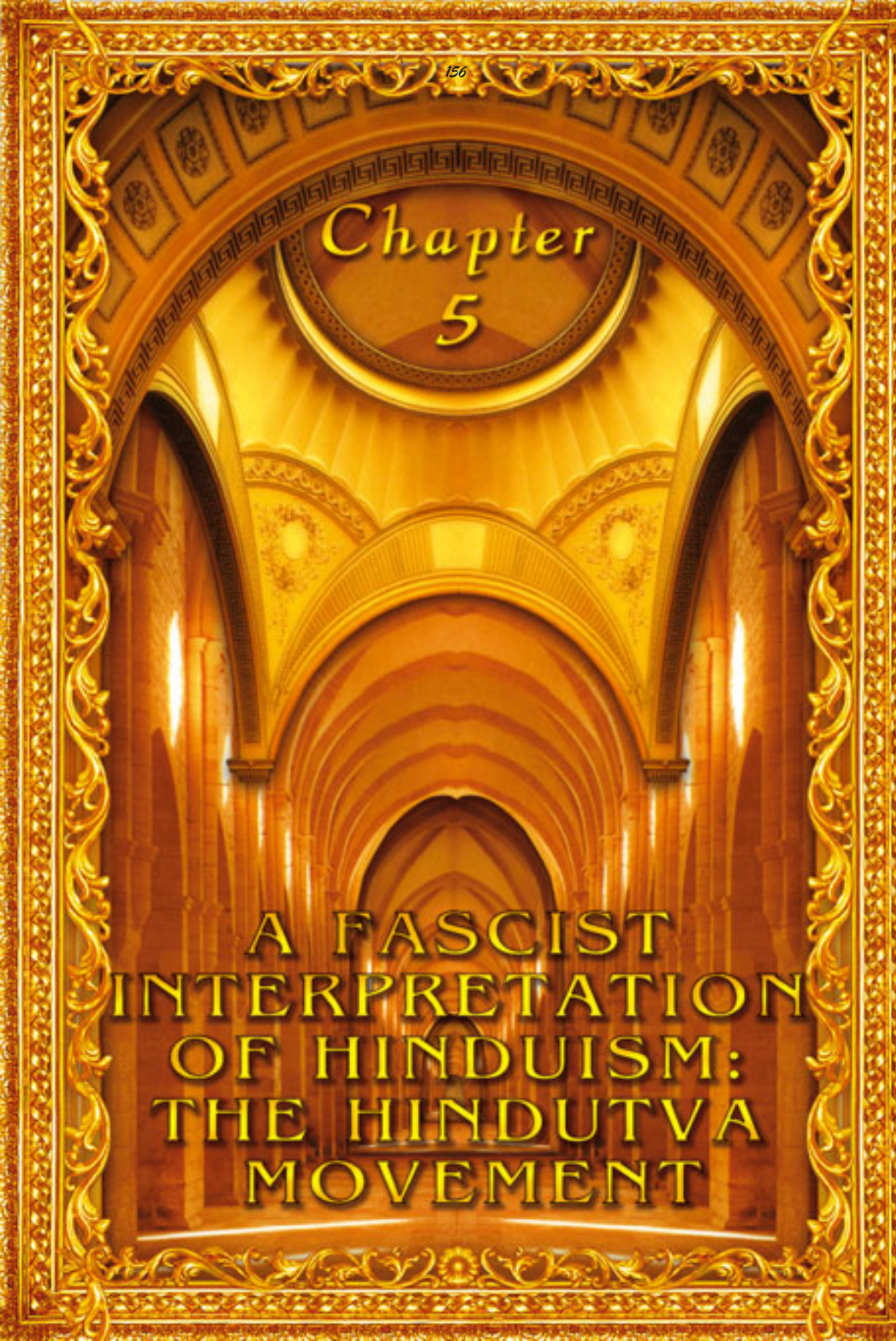
> *"We must remind ourselves of the situation women were in the pre-Islamic era where the killing of baby girls was common practice and women had no rights whatsoever. Women were ill-treated, like a lower species, as were slaves who had no rights at all. What Muhammad did (on revelation from Allah) for women in such a primitive world was simply extraordinary. It is surprising for that time that woman could inherit or be witnesses."*[67]

Karen Armstrong writes that in Islam's first few centuries, women in Muslim societies were freer and more respected than anywhere else on earth. "Muslims were shocked to see how western Christians treated their own women in the crusader states. Christian priests, on the other hand, criticized Islam for giving women and slaves too many rights."[68]

In short, Islam brings freedom, respectability, protection, and happiness to women. Hinduism on the other hand, forces them into a cruel, miserable, fearful and oppressed life, but their loss in the hereafter is even greater.

Allah reveals the situation of deniers in the hell as follows:

> **"You have come to Us all alone just as We created you at first, leaving behind you everything We bestowed on you. We do not see your intercessors accompanying you, those you claimed were your partners with Allah. The link between you is cut. Those you made such claims for have forsaken you." (Surat al-An'am: 94)**
>
> **We will cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieve because they have associated others with Allah for which He has not sent down any authority. Their shelter will be the Fire. How evil is the abode of the wrongdoers! (Surah Al 'Imran: 151)**



Chapter 5

A FASCIST INTERPRETATION OF HINDUISM: THE HINDUTVA MOVEMENT

India has been governed by many different states in its history and at the end of the 19th century, the whole country came under direct British colonial rule. This colonial government brought much misery and suffering to the Indian subcontinent for over a century. The English masters treated their subjects as second class citizens and the countries rich resources were ruthlessly exploited, leaving the native population to struggle in poverty. Colonial rule ended in 1947 with the declaration of Indian independence, but the country was gripped by a new wave of violence delivered by a fanatical Indian nationalism. This movement went back a considerable time, to the 1920's to be precise. The fascist ideologies that swept across the world helped give rise to a number of fascist underground movements in India. They would sometimes target the colonial powers and at other times the greatest minority group in India, the Muslims. They made their mark with slogans like "India belongs to Indians" and they spread quickly around the country with their educational camps, their propaganda machine and military organizations.

European fascist movements played a major role in the structural development of ultranationalist Indian organizations. Like their European counterparts, Hindu ultranationalist organizations also based their ideology on racial supremacy, espousing the error that different cultural or racial origins could not form a cohesive society within one country. They defended the view that violence could be justified in order to create national unity and if assimilation failed, extermination was the only way forward for India's future.

The fascist regimes that swept to power in many of Europe's countries following the end of the First World War saw the solution to



social and political problems in war, conflict and violence. They maintained that violence should be used if needed in order to establish unanimity in the country, that extermination of minority groups should be resorted to if assimilation failed, and that there was only one way to liberate India.

These fascist regimes terrorized whole nations with their underground armies, their secret police organizations and militaristic philosophies, and by the end of the Second World War, shared the responsibility for over 55 million dead people between them. The first fascist regime that came to power in Europe was the Benito Mussolini government in Italy, which ruled the country between 1922-1944. After Italy, Germany and Spain came under the rule of fascist parties. The joint aim of fascist Italy and Nazi Germany was to rule, exploit and enslave all other nations and they believed the only way to achieve their goal was by war, invasion, genocide and the spilling of much blood. After the Second World War, fascism was largely consigned to oblivion and even though some neo-fascist movements sprang up in Latin American countries, England, Germany and Spain, the fascist regimes' era seemed to be over. However, the fascist ideology and it's policies live on around the world.

India is one of the countries in which the fascist governance mentality, fascist social policies, and fascist organizations are on the rise again. The fanatical fascist organizations that were formed in the 1920's never truly disappeared and they are still a force to be reckoned with. Even worse, they united under one name, secured the backing of the Indian people, and are currently governing India through their political parties. This movement is the Hindutwa which was styled after the

The British Empire founded a great colonial rule on Indian land in 1858. However the Indian resistance that grew strong by the middle of the 20th century forced the British rule to withdraw from these lands in 1947.

Crescent Int., 16-31 January 2003

WS/ANALYSIS

Hindu fascists preparing for implementation of 'Hindutva' agenda all over India

The Telegraph, 14 March 2003

The Telegraph

calcutta, india

Friday, March 14, 2003

Front Page » Nation » Story

Sangh steps up temple tempo

YOGESH VAJPEYI



Devotees shout slogans at the disputed site in Ayodhya on Thursday. (Reuters)

Ayodhya, March 13: The Sangh parivar today gave notice of whipping up temple hysteria as the slow-paced excavations at the disputed site continued for the second day.

As if working to a plan, over 100 Bajrang Dal activists landed last night at Karsevakpuram — the centre of VHP activities in the town — and took out a cycle march to the disputed shrine this morning, shouting "*mandir yaheen banayenge*" (we'll construct the temple at this very spot).

The Bajrang Dal activists marched up to the heavily-barricade entry point of the disputed site and then walked in unison for a *darshan* of Ram Lalla.

Though VHP local secretary Ramphal Singh maintained that the influx of Bajrang Dal activists did not signify intensification of the temple movement in the immediate future, their tone and bearing made the representatives of Muslim organisations nervous.

"This smacks of an attempt to influence the ASI team and whip up mass hysteria even before the excavation is complete and its findings known," said an official of the Central

A report published in *Crescent International* and titled "Hindu Fascists Preparing for implementation of Hindutva Agenda all over India" described how extremist Hindu organizations had planned a series of attacks against Muslims. *The Telegraph*, published in India, emphasized in an article headed "Sangh steps up temple tempo" that the conflict initiated by Sangh Parivar in the Aydhya region would again enter the equation with protests all over the country

Italian fascist regime. (Hindutva is a modern interpretation of Hinduism's racist, chauvinistic and violent aspects, combined to form an extremist nationalist ideology. It stands for Hindu culture.)

FASCIST HINDUS ARE FOLLOWING IN THE FOOTSTEPS OF HITLER AND MUSSOLINI

As we have seen in the previous chapters of this book, the superstitious Hindu religion envisages a cruel social order. Society consists of

different classes, or castes. The upper classes control all power, wealth and bureaucracy and the so-called lower castes have a status equal to slaves in the merciless Hindu tradition. They do all the dirty work, are deprived of all their natural rights and termed to be "dirty"-untouchables by the members of the upper castes who are free to oppress, exploit and debase them. Every kind of violence, cruelty and assault is considered appropriate and indeed seen as a requirement of the Hindu religion. This ruthless system has had a profoundly negative effect in the development of Hindu ultranationalism.

The superstitious Hindu religion's erroneous teachings encourage violence and have defined radical Hindu nationalism. The vast majority of Hindu deities are described in Hindu religious texts as angry, aggres-

Representations of the savagery and bloodshed of Kali: Hindus perform heretical rites before images of this supposed goddess.



In These Times, 3 January 2003



InThese Times

BROKEN PEOPLE, BROKEN PROMISES

Dalits face a new threat from India's Hindu nationalists.

By Jehangir Pocha

The Guardian, 13 April 1999

Brutality used to keep India's underclass down

A new report says the state is allowing violence to rise against the destitute and 'untouchable' Dalit caste, writes Suzanne Goldenberg

Tuesday April 13, 1999

The Guardian, 31 March 1999

The Guardian Weekly

Caste war turns Indian state into killing field

By Suzanne Goldenberg in Senari

Wednesday March 31, 1999

Expressindia, 31 March 2003

expressindia

India gets its 15 minutes of shame on American television

In These Times carried a report headed "Broken people broken promises" referring to attacks on daliths by Hindu nationalists.

Hindu nationalists' aim to reinvigorate superstitious Hindu traditions that have persisted for hundreds of years. The caste system occupies pride of place among these traditions. That is why they resort to all possible means to hinder movements opposed to the caste system, which have grown enormously in India in recent years. The above reports are evidence that the oppression caused by the caste system is still going on. A video film aired on the American channel *CBS* that documented the cruelty meted out to daliths was described by *Expressindia* as "India gets its 15 minutes of shame on American television." Two separate reports in the British daily *The Guardian,* one dated 31 March, 1999, and headed "Caste war turn Indian state into killing field," and the other dated 13 April, 1996, with the title "Brutality used to keep India's underclass down" discussed the conflict between the different castes.

sive, envious, "trigger-happy", murderous and otherwise enjoying inflicting pain. For instance, according to these perverse beliefs, the imaginary deity Bhrigu slits, in his anger, the throat of another deity, Gautama Ahallya, and turns him into stone. Jahnumuni drinks up all the waters of the Ganges River when he is angered.[69] Sita, on the other hand, is a so-called deity who is verbally aggressive, angry, haughty and merciless and Devi is ferocious, aggressive and always fighting.[70] Hindu scriptures thus literally make violence sacred and present it as a fact of life, which is why violence is so great a part of life and so natural for some Hindus who espouse these superstitious views.

When analyzing extremist nationalism in India, it is necessary to consider the influence of Hinduism on this ideology as a great many Hindus see their superstitious religion as a comprehensive culture that encompasses every aspect of life. Radical Hindu nationalism's fundamental aim is to revive superstitious Hindu traditions and if necessary, to impose these Hindu traditions on India whether the nation wants them or not. Hindus defend the view that, in the face of centuries of long occupation Hinduism became less and less a part of everyday life, and in order to reverse this trend and strengthen Hindu unity, these superstitious beliefs need to be reintroduced into people's lives, by force if need be. By Hinduism they mean the worship of idols, the caste system, the bigotry that views women as second class citizens, and the inhuman practices that seek to assimilate non-Hindus. Radical Hindu nationalists seek to realize these changes at all costs and they are resolved to achieve this by any means. One such method is to incite people's feelings of violence, aggression and hate.

The umbrella organization that represents radical Hindu nationalism is the Sangh Parivar, which is an umbrella political organization that unites under its name all the extreme nationalistic parties and organizations, official or clandestine. The BJP (Bharatiya Janata Party- India's

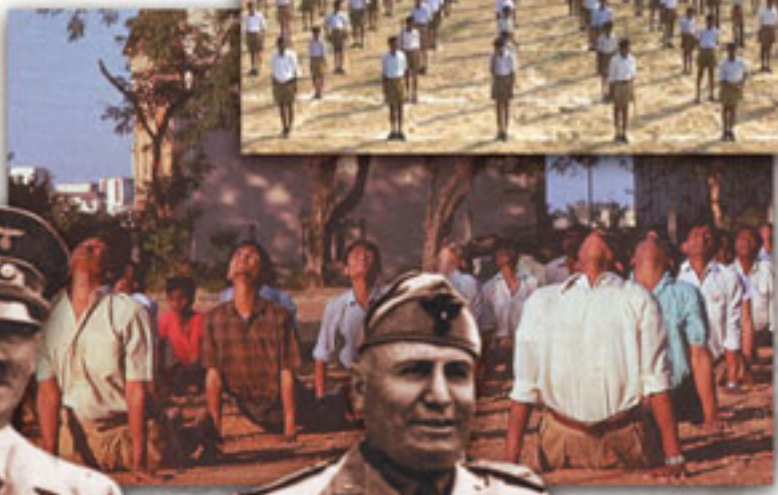
People's Party), which was in power at one time, the VHP (Vishwa Hindu Parishad - World Hindu Council), Shiv Sena (Fascist Front) and many other large or small extreme nationalist groups are counted among Sangh Parivar's member organizations. However the most important of these, from the radical Hindu nationalist's perspective, is the RSS (Rashtriya Swayemsavak Sangh- National Volunteer's Army)

The RSS was formed in 1925 and is acknowledged to be the organization responsible for the present day attacks on Muslims and other minorities. It is the cornerstone of Hindu nationalist extremism. Today there exist a number of different nationalist political parties and organi-



(Side) Sangh Parivar takes fascist leaders such as Hitler and Mussolini as role models during the education of young Hindus.







zations, but all of their most active militants have gone through the RSS's training program. India's government, opposition parties, military personnel, and security forces draw a majority of their personnel from a pool of RSS militants. At the top of the list of these militants come Atal Bihari Vajpayee, who recently served as prime minister, and his Cabinet.

The RSS was founded by Keshav Baliram Hedgewar in 1925 and bears a striking resemblance with the earlier fascist organizations of Italy and Germany. This resemblance was not the only connection to Europe's fascists. One of the RSS founders, BS Moonje, went to Italy and was briefed by the Mussolini government. The Italian investigative writer Marzia Casolari, known for his research on Hinduism, documented the close relationship between the elite of the RSS and the Mussolini regime in great detail in his work titled "Hindutva's Foreign Tie-up in the 1930s – Archival Evidence". According to Casolari, representatives of the Mussolini regime and extreme Hindu nationalists had many meetings. The formation of the RSS, the formulation of its ideology, the establishing of its framework, and the strengthening of its youth training camps were all inspired by Mussolini's Italy.[71]

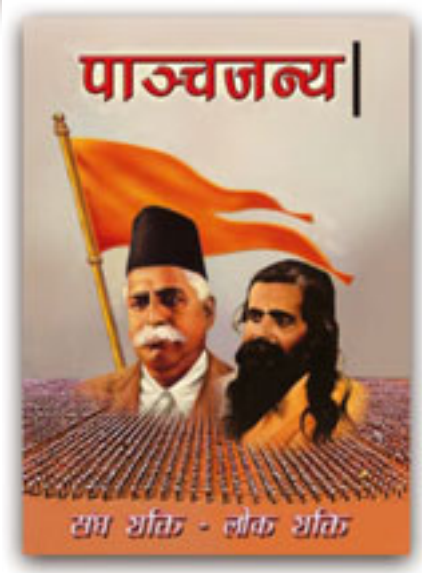
The RSS turned to military training soon after its formation, much like its Italian and German counterparts. . Mussolini's quasi-military "Black-Shirts" and Hitler's SA (Sturmabteilung -Storm Units) provided the blueprint and the new organization was named "Shakha". Skakha's sprung up across India. Six and seven year old children were trained to become fascist militants against the "enemy" (i.e., Muslims and Christians) and would ultimately serve as the nucleus for a fascist army. Mussolini's social Darwinist statements, and the Fascists twisted outlook, such as "established peace is damaging and only warfare can bring out the best of human power", were held in high esteem among the members of the RSS.

Lessons in Hatred of Muslims from the Shakhas

A 2002 report prepared by the Concerned Citizens Tribunal, a civil society initiative consisting of India's most eminent lawyers and academics, provided detailed information about the education given in organizations affiliated to Sangh Parivar. The report described how feelings of hatred were inculcated in young people undergoing training under the VHP and Bajrang Dal, the leading members of the Hindutva movement, how they can kill anyone opposing them at a single nod from their leaders, rape and pillage houses, engage in looting and violate all the laws.

The report concentrated on young people receiving training at the "shakhas" being given great guarantees. They are taught that, by means of the BJP government, they will always be protected and need therefore have no fear of the law or the security forces. The report also contained admissions from Shakha members who had undergone training by radical Hindu groups. One such, who had received training at a "Shakha" affiliated to Bajrang Dal provided a detailed description of secret meetings, how methods of attacks were to be employed against Muslims, how the organization would protect any Shakha member martyring a Muslim, how his family would be looked after if anything happened to him, and how all a member needed to do in the event of being arrested was to show his party membership card and the police would immediately release him. Shakha members are also taught the importance of loyalty to the organization, how loyalty to Hindutva ideology is more important than anything else, that one must be ready to commit all kinds of attacks at whatever time of night one may be woken up, and that one must never raise any objections.

The report stated that the most important part of the training given at the Shakhas is the gathering of information about Muslims living in the region. Young people are taught to use weapons of all kinds, especially the knife and sword, regarded as sacred by Hindus. The report went on to say that young people are subjected to wide-ranging anti-Muslim brainwashing, and that the ultimate aim of the organization is to "build an army with a strong desire to destroy Muslims, well armed, physically powerful, filled with hatred and trained to carry out attacks of all kinds..[72]



A poster belonging to the fascist RSS party. RSS leaders Hedgewar (left) and Golwarkar (right)

The aggressive Hindu nationalism took form in the 1920's and spread across India in the 1930's with the militants trained in the Shakhas. This organization is still very much active to the present day. It is estimated that there are 300,000 shakhas across India and 50 - 100 youth are being trained at any given time in each shakha, or in other words, they are receiving a radical and aggressive nationalist indoctrination.[72] These figures suggest that there are currently at least 30 million fanatical Hindu militants ready to carry out the most merciless activities. Considering the number of militants who went through the Shakha training over the years it becomes evident that this number is likely much higher at the present time.

The leaders of the RSS were also quite supportive of Hitler's racial policies in addition to those of Mussolini's. One of the leaders of the RSS, Hedgewar, stated that national unity could only be achieved in the absence of non-Hindus like Muslims and Christians, because according to him, non-Hindus could neither understand, practice, nor appreciate Hindu traditions, culture or ideology. Hedgewar's distorted perspectives became even more radical under the leadership of the RSS's second president, Madhavrao Sadashivrao Golwalkar. *"We or Our Nationhood Defined"*, published by Golwalkar in 1938 contained many favorable ref-

erences to Hitler and his irrational and illogical theories of racial supremacy. The following are some excerpts from Golwarkar's book:

It would be worthwhile to cite a few excerpts here: «German race pride has now become the topic of the day. To keep up the purity of the race and its culture,



Hindu nationalists who carry out daily attacks on Muslims and neo-Nazis who follow in Hitler's footsteps are today's representatives of fascist ideology.

Germany shocked the world by her purging the country of the Semitic races—the Jews. Race pride at its highest has been manifested here. Germany has also shown how well-nigh impossible it is for races and cultures, having differences going to the root, to be assimilated into one united whole—a good lesson for us in Hindusthan (i.e., the land of Hindus) to learn and profit by.[73]

Golwarkar's advice to radical Hindu nationalists is as follows:

This is the lesson the «Guruji» wants Sangh volunteers to learn: «From this standpoint sanctioned by the experience of shrewd old nations, the non-Hindu peoples in Hindusthan must either adopt the Hindu culture and language, must learn to respect and hold in reverence the Hindu religion, must entertain no idea but the glorification of the Hindu race and culture, i.e., they must not only give up their attitude of intolerance and ungratefulness towards this land and its age-old traditions, but must also cultivate the positive attitude of love and devotion instead; in one word, they must cease to be foreigners or may stay in the country wholly subordinated to the Hindu nation claiming nothing, deserving no privileges, far less any preferential treatment, not even citizen's rights.»[74]

It must be stated here that the goal of "making society uniform at any costs", desired by the Nazis as well as Hindu fascists, is contrary to Islam moral values. The Hindu fascists sought to force the people to choose between adopting a Hindu identity and ideology or to live as slaves. The Nazis applied the same despotism, albeit in an even more horrific fashion on non- German minorities. According to Islam different races and religious denominations can coexist peacefully within one nation. They all are treated fairly and with affection. Allah reveals in the Qur'an that people have been created as different races so they can get **"to know each other".** (Surat al-Hujurat: 13) Therefore, in a society ruled by the morality of Islam, no one will be discriminated because of his ethnicity. Affection and understanding towards members of different religions is ordained in the Qur'an: **"There is no compulsion where reli-**

gion is concerned." (Surat al-Baqara: 256). Many verses of the Qur'an command that the rights of adherents to other religions must be respected, and that they must be allowed to live in the best manner possible, and protected and safeguarded, especially Christians and Jews. This is why in the history of Islam, in societies dominated by the morality of the Qur'an, non-Muslim minorities lived in an atmosphere of true peace and security and practiced their faith and traditions free of fear. They were not oppressed, they were not forced to act against themselves, and no one tried to enslave or exterminate them because they were different.

Even if at present, certain circles try to portray Islam differently, anybody who takes the opportunity to study the Qur'an and the life of our Prophet (may Allah bless him and grant him peace), and has a good grasp of history is aware of the understanding Islam ordains. One of these is the well-known author Amin Maalouf. The renowned French author of Christian–Lebanese origins writes in his book *Les Identitées Meurtrières (Deadly Identities)* that the history of Islam is full of examples of affection and justice:

> *"From the very beginning of Islamic history its society was easily suitable for coexistence. At the end of the last century (the 19th century) more than half the population of Istanbul, the capital of the greatest Islamic nation, consisted of non-Muslim minorities like Greeks, Armenians and Jews. Can you fathom a Paris, London, Vienna or Berlin in the same era where more than half the people are non-Christians, for instance Muslims and Jews? Even today, many Europeans would feel annoyed hearing the muezzins call to prayer. I am not passing judgment, I am just stating a fact; throughout the history of Islam, coexistence and tolerance were real for a long time. For me, the history of Islam proves the infinite potential of coexistence, tolerance and effective dialogue in Islam."*[75]

As it has no interest whatsoever in establishing "coexistence and effective dialogue", it is not surprising to see that radical Hindu national-

ism seeks to either have minorities surrender their identities or be enslaved, and found inspiration in Nazism, because they essentially share the same pagan views and anti-Semitic hate.

NAZISM, HINDUISM AND ANTI-SEMITISM

There are fundamental ties between Hinduism and Nazism. It is well known that establishing the supremacy of the Aryan race making its culture dominant across the world is the central theme of the Nazi ideology. These "Aryans" are the same race that founded the superstitious Hindu religion.



Like the neo-Nazis, fanatical nationalists in India receive considerable support from the parties in power.

In the previous chapters we had established that Hinduism was founded by the Aryans who invaded Northern India from the Northwest and occupied the country between 2500-1500 BC. It was the Aryans who created the merciless caste system, put themselves on top of the caste system, and made idolatry central to this superstitious religion. In short, Hinduism is an Aryan creation. Historians speak of the "Indo-Aryan" language and culture. Another important culture that developed around the same time was the "Semitic" culture of the Middle East with the difference being that this culture's religion was based upon Divine revelation, and believed in the one Allah as opposed to Indo-Aryan idolatry. The most prominent of these Semitic people are the Arabs and Jews.

The majority of European people are of Indo-Aryan origin which is why before Christ, European history is full of idolatry, warfare, barbarism and cruelty as envisaged by the Indo-Aryan culture. But from the 1st century AD onwards people began to free themselves from the erroneous features of this perverted culture by entering the Christian faith, believing in the One Allah and adopting the morality of the Divine religion. In other words, the eventual domination of Europe by Christianity equaled the defeat of the pagan Indo-Aryan culture.

However, a strange ideology was born in 19th century Europe. One that was hostile to the Semitic culture (and also to Divine religions), sought to revert to the superstitious Indo-Aryan culture, one that was racist and neo-pagan. *The Encyclopaedia Britannica* explains the origins and this perverse ideology's connection to Nazism as follows:

> *"In the 19th century a new ideology was born, defended fervently by Comte de Gobineau and than later by his follower Houston Stewart Chamberlain. This ideology asserted that the Aryan race, speaking Indo-European languages, had been the architects of all progress achieved by mankind and that it was a race morally superior to Semites, the yellow race and the blacks. The Nordic, or in other words,*

Germanic peoples were considered the purest Aryans. Before this idea was disproved by anthropologists in the second half of the 20th century, it was adopted by Adolf Hitler and the Nazis and would form the basis for the German regime's policy of exterminating Jews, Gypsies and other non-Aryans".[76]

Reviving the pagan and racist Aryan culture, which is also the basis of Hinduism, was central to the Nazi ideology. The founders of Nazism had taken a great interest in Hinduism. The creator of the Nazis' occult ideas, Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, had traveled to India in her quest to discover the roots of paganism, and lived there for many years as an admirer of Hinduism. Another leading figure of Nazism, Guido von List had founded the List foundation in 1904 at Vienna. One of the most notable aspects of this foundation was that Hinduisms Tantra rituals were practiced there. The infamous lightning-bolt symbol made of two S's, side by side, was his brainchild, and it was adopted later by the SS, the Schutzstaffel, Adolf Hitlers' Praetorian Guard.[77]

The infamous swastika, the symbol of Nazism, was originally a Hindu symbol. The word "Swastika" in Sanskrit means "of pure descent" and was used to denote the Aryans, founders of the Hindu religion. The swastika was first used in Germany by an occultist organization known as the Thule Foundation, from where the Nazis appropriated it. Hitler explained in the 2nd volume, 7th chapter, of his infamous book *Mein Kampf* (My Struggle), that the Swastika was an Aryan symbol.

The swastika is still widely used in India at the present as it symbolizes the imaginary deity Ganesha of the Hindu faith. An article titled "India's Swastika God" had the following to say on the subject (Surely Allah is beyond all the expressions at the beginning of and throughout the text):

"For millions of Hindus, Ganesha is the most important imaginary deity in the Hindu firmament because they can only through him make their prayers reach all the other deities in the spiritual universe…The swastika, Ganesha's main symbol,

is seen to denote the crossroads between the two worlds: the physical world of everyday life and the concealed and timeless world of spirituality, magic and legends. Wherever you go in India, you can see the swastika; it is used by housewives to protect their doorways and entrances, by priests to decorate their sermons and offerings, and by businessmen to bless the opening page of their account books."[78]

The Nazis interest in Hindu symbols and other superstitious Far Eastern religions is a fact established in great detail by historians. Renowned historian Nicholas Godrick-Clarke of Oxford University wrote one of the most important books on this subject: *"The Occult Roots*



The "Swastika" is another point that Nazis and Hindu nationalists have in common. (below) The swastika is a symbol of the fictitious Hindu deity Ganesha.

of Nazism" (1992)- Clarke explains that the Nazis interest in Hinduism and other pagan beliefs wasn't just on a symbolic level, but that they had much work done in support of these pagan religions.

There have been some interesting characters among the Nazis who came under the spell of neo-Aryan and neo-pagan ideologies, and ended up devoting their lives to Hinduism. Another book written by Nicholas Goodrick Clarke, *"Hitler's Priestess: Savitri Devi, The Hindu-Arian Myth and neo-Nazism"*, explains that the fanatic Nazi Savitri Devi worked tirelessly in India to support Hitler.

Savitri was born in London in 1905 to Greek and English parents and her given name was Maximiani Portas. She began to develop an inexplicable admiration for the idolatrous Aryan culture as she grew older, and left for India in 1932 to investigate the roots of Aryan civilization. She took the name Savitri Devi as an ignorant admirer of Hinduism. An article written on her irrational and illogical ideology and activities states:

> *"India fascinated her — she noted now even a street-side vendor would discuss the Mahabharat in the morning. She had great admiration for the Brahmins, who she saw as a pure race. Her championing of Aryan-Nazi causes and Hinduism led to her entering the political scenario in India in between the wars. By the late 1930s, she was involved with Hindu nationalist movements like the Hindu Mahasabha and the Rashtriya Swayamsevak Sangh - then growing rapidly to counter Muslim ascendancy.*
>
> *In early 1937, Savitri Devi met Srimat Swami Satyanand, president of the Hindu Mission in Calcutta, and offered her service to the mission. She told Swami Satyanand that India was the only country that honoured Aryan gods and could stop the influence of the Jews. Satyanand, clearly impressed, told her that Hitler, of who Savitri was a devout follower, was a supposed avatar of Vishnu — a force that would preserve the cosmic order."*[79]

In other words, with a most perverse and distorted logic, the radical Hindu nationalist movement considered Hitler to be the "embodiment of the Hindu god Vishnu"! This erroneous belief demonstrated the partnership of Nazism and Hinduism, both being utterly irrational beliefs. A prominent aspect of this sinister partnership was anti-Semitism, or in other words hostility towards the monotheistic Semites. Nazi anti-Semitism targeted Jews and, to a lessor extent, Christians. Hindu anti-Semitism targeted the Muslim population on the Indian subcontinent. The writer continues:

> *"In 1939, she published A Warning to Hindus under the auspices of the Hindu Mission. In the book, she scorned the Congress for its secular policies and said there was no India but a Hindu one and warned the Hindus not to let the Muslims overwhelm them."*

Such dangerous "calls" continued to be made throughout the 1930's, leading to an ever growing radical Hindu bigotry that was to culminate in the 1940's with bitter consequences. With the independence of India, followed by the formation of Pakistan as a separate state, the tensions between Hindus and Muslims escalated with radical Hindu attacks on Muslims causing the death of ten thousands of innocent people. Hindu fanaticism went as far as targeting even moderate Hindus, and culminated in the assassination by a fanatic Hindu of Mahatma Gandhi who defended the view of Muslims and Hindus coexisting peacefully side by side.

Looking at radical Hindu nationalism in the era before the Second World War, it is possible to see anti-Semitism targeting Muslims and much admiration for the Nazis. Savarkar, one of the leaders of the RSS, compared the situation of Jews in Germany to the Situation of Muslims in India, in his own eyes, in a speech on the 14th of October, 1938. He was suggesting that it was appropriate to have Jews expelled from

Germany, if necessary by force. He also suggested that Muslims and Hindus could not form one nation and that "minorities had always to submit to the majority view".[80] Indian author Arundhati Roy describes the fascist nationalism of "Sangh Parivar" (united family) as follows:

> *"While the parallels between contemporary India and prewar Germany are chilling, they're not surprising. (The founders of the Rashtriya Swayamsevak Sangh [RSS], the National Volunteer Force that is the moral and cultural guild of the BJP, have in their writings, been frank in their admiration for Hitler and his methods.) One difference is that here in India we don't have a Hitler. We have instead the hydra-headed, many-armed Sangh Parivar — the «joint family» of Hindu political and cultural organizations, with the BJP, the RSS, the VHP and the*



The funeral in Delhi on 31 January, 1948, of Mohandas Gandi, who was killed by Hindu extremists.

Bajrang Dal each playing a different instrument. Its utter genius lies in its apparent ability to be all things to all people at all times.

The Sangh Parivar speaks in as many tongues. It can say several contradictory things simultaneously. While one of its heads (the VHP) exhorts millions of its cadres to prepare for the Final Solution, its titular head (the Prime Minister) assures the nation that all citizens, regardless of their religion, will be treated equally. It can ban books and films, and burn paintings for «insulting Indian culture."[81]

Dr. Partha Banerjee, an expert on the Sangh Parivar, describes in his work "The Sangh, What is it and what is it not?" the similarities between the Hindu movements and their fascist European counterparts and states that they stand for "a revival of old traditions of racial supremacy, a hierarchic and military structure, unconditional loyalty to the leader and aggressive foreign policies..." He reaches the following conclusion:

"Every single day, RSS, in its militaristic shakhas or gatherings, preaches to its workers and sympathizers that the "eldest nation of Bharatvarsha" was the "greatest" on earth and that its inhabitants were "happy, prosperous, and religious". The Sangh leaders never forget to mention that all the ills of India began when, due to the disunity of the Hindu race", Muslim and then British aggressors invaded and took over this "holy land". The long term goal of the Sangh Parivar is, of course, to bring back that "past era of glory" by creating an "Akhand Bharat" (i.e., an Undivided India ranging from " Himalaya to Kanyakumari" and "Gandhar to Brahmadesh" (i.e., from Tibet in the north to the southern tip of India, and from Afghanistan in the west to South East Asia including Burma, Laos, Thailand, and Cambodia) –culturally and politically. This dream of "unity" is to be reached by organizing Hindus from all around the globe.

The RSS is indeed a hierarchical, militaristic organization that actively practices regimentation… An aggressively nationalistic foreign policy has always been at the forefront of RSS propaganda."[82]

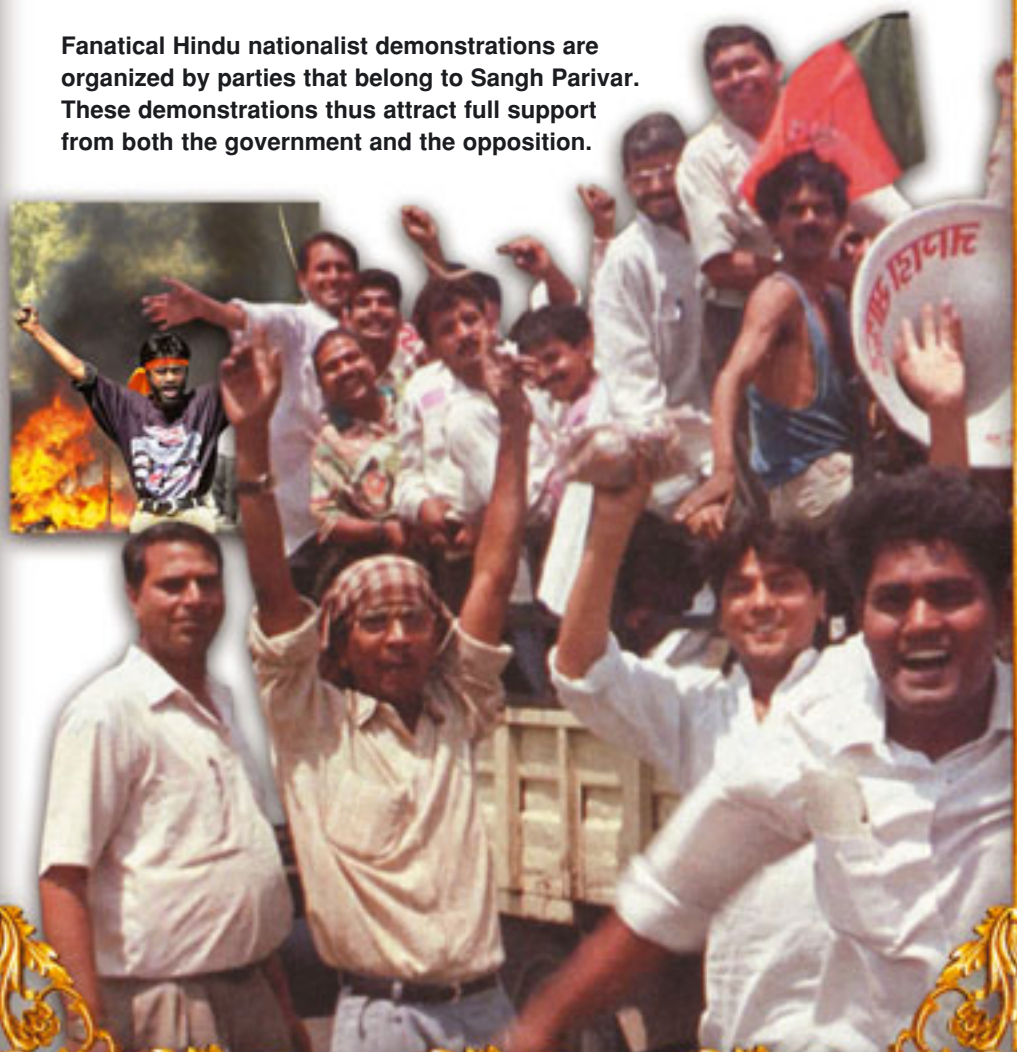
The Sangh Parivar is a great threat to all minorities living in India, as well as the Indian nation as a whole, because it does not restrict itself to carrying on the group struggle with "hot" slogans, but has also carries out bloody assassinations, killings and arson attacks. It is estimated that the Sangh Parivar is responsible for more than 20,000 deaths in the country since the assassination of Mahatma Gandhi.[83] The escalation of violent attacks carried out by the radical nationalist movement has drawn the criticism of Indian intellectuals too. M. Mohanty, of the Delhi University says: "Increasing intolerance among the Hindu fundamentalist organizations, which pose a grave threat to democracy, are an indication of the rise of fascist forces in India", "What happened with European fascism is now happening with Hindus," he told CNSNews.com.[84]

FASCIST ORGANIZATIONS ACHIEVE POWER IN INDIA

There are a great number of political parties, movements and organizations with racist tendencies. The activities of the neo-Nazis in Germany, the skinheads of England, the Ku Klux Klan in the USA and many other fascist organizations around the world are well known, but the situation in India is altogether different, because in India, a racist organization or, in one word, the Sangh Parivar, is capable of attaining power. This rule is not limited to the government but controls the entire country including the opposition, the military and the bureaucracy. Dr. Partha Banerjee spent fifteen years in a Shakha, the grass roots organization of radical Hindu nationalism, and related his experiences as an "ex-militant" in his interesting book *In the Belly of the Beast: The Hindu Supremacist RSS and BJP of India—An Insider's Story*. In the first few years he spent in the Shakha, he experienced it as a place where one played with his friends and sang songs. His subsequent feelings now are as follows:

"But I must confess—I am scared today. When I think about the «Sangh» now, a nightmarish metaphor comes to my mind. I keep perceiving the «Sangh» as a continuously expanding creature like some mutated ominous insect inside an ancient cocoon—an insect that has mutated only to expand and eat everything it grabs but never to come out of its shell. It does it so slowly but surely that although it is potentially a great danger, nobody understands how perilous it is—one reason is that nobody can see it. Some find it a playful big cocoon lying in a remote corner of the

Fanatical Hindu nationalist demonstrations are organized by parties that belong to Sangh Parivar. These demonstrations thus attract full support from both the government and the opposition.



colorful woods chewing away to its heart's content, some find it an unsightly object to crack jokes about, some find it only a subject of interest to discuss among academic circles. But the insect keeps growing and mutating and devouring anything it gets. It nourishes itself from all the youthfulness and freshness of its surrounding nature and becomes bigger, stronger, and uglier."[85]

The BJP is one of the three big members of the Sangh Parivar and the party chairman, Atal Bihari Vajpayee is an old RSS militant and a fanatic Hindu nationalist. 85% of the BJP members come from the RSS and these people are defined by pundits and intellectuals in the Indian media as RSS militants disguised as politicians. The popularity of the BJP is thought to be based on the fanatical language it uses against both the Muslim and Christian minorities. Vajpayee has sided with and supported the Hindu militants whenever they carried out attacks on Muslims and other minorities. Some circles try to portray him as a moderate politician, but he revealed his deep connections with the RSS, with which he first made contact in 1939, in an article he wrote for the RSS's official press, the New Delhi, under the title "The Sangh is my Soul". He wrote that he loved the RSS's ideology, that he appreciated the RSS's attitude towards the people, that the Sangh was like his family and "we are all united".[86]

When Vajpayee first came to power he was considered to be a moderate politician by the world. He promised to end the conflict between Muslims and Hindus, and to deliver peace to the country, but this moderation was short-lived. In the first period of the BJP government Vajpayee revealed his true colors in the face of frequent attacks on Muslims by Hindu militants. He did nothing to apprehend those who were responsible for these attacks, but chose to back the security forces and administrators, who had cooperated with the militants in these attacks, and he continued this stance throughout his time in power. In an

article published on the CNN website entitled (Vajpayee Reveals His True Colors) it was said that to begin with, Vajpayee showed a moderate side to his personality, but in time revealed his true colors by expressing his support for radical Hindus. The article also stated that the BJP was formed by the most fanatical believers in Hindu nationalism, and that Vajpayee hid his fanaticism initially behind a mask, which had eventually fallen off. Vajpayee openly attacked Muslims in a speech to his party's ruling council and stated that Hindus would decide the degree of freedoms granted to other religions. Another important subject which CNN's article touched upon was the fact that the BJP decided to hold an election in the immediate aftermath of the killings, rape, arson and looting carried out against Muslims in Gucarat (Gujarat), in order to take advantage of the support of some of the local population this situation brought them.[87] During the election campaign, Vajpayee staunchly defended the organizers of this genocide, the RSS, which was responsible for the death of thousands of Muslims and termed it as a "cultural and social organization".[88]

A famous journalist in India, Praful Bidwai, revealed the relationship between the BJP and the RSS as follows in an article titled "Hindu Supremacists Reign Supreme" that appeared in the *Asia Times* newspaper on November 17, 2000:

> *"Historically, the BJP and its predecessor, the Jana Sangh (founded in 1951), have recruited supporters through the Rashtriya Swayamsevak Sangh (RSS, National Volunteers Corps), a secret society-type militarist all-male organization which claims 600,000 members. The RSS acts as the BJP's mentor, ideological master and organizational gate-keeper. It has parented forty-odd other fronts, most importantly the Vishwa Hindu Parishad (VHP, World Hindu Council) and Bajrang Dal, which is active in street-level mobilization."*[89]

One of the political member organizations of the Sangh Parivar is

BBC, 28 February 2002

BBC NEWS

You are in: World: South Asia

Thursday, 28 February, 2002, 13:54 GMT

Vajpayee's Ayodhya dilemma



The VHP have ignored Vajpayee's appeals

By Sanjoy Majumder

BBC News Online's correspondent in Delhi

The sectarian violence in the Indian state Gujarat has once again pushed India's Ayodhya row into the foreground and placed Prime Minister Atal Behari Vajpayee in a difficult position.

Mr Vajpayee was already heading for a

The Week, 28 April 2002

India's No. 1 Weekly News Magazine

The Week

SUBSCRIBE QUERY CHAT GUEST BOOK SEARCH ARCHIVE HOME

THE MASK IS OFF

By Debashish Mukerji



CNN, 18 April 2002

CNN.com/WORLD

Vajpayee reveals his true colors

April 18, 2002 Posted: 10:08 AM EDT (1408 GMT)

By Mark Tully

(CNN) -- The communal violence in the western Indian state of Gujarat -- which is still continuing sporadically nearly eight weeks after it first broke out -- has cast doubts on the future of secularism in India.

Indian Prime Minister Atal Behari Vajpayee, known to believe in moderation in politics, has now come out openly in support of the Hindu hardliners in his Bharatiya Janata Party (BJP).

These hardliners now seem determined to revive the campaign for a Hindu India.

Vajpayee has often been described as the mask, hiding the true nature of his Bharatiya Janata Party with its ambition to establish a Hindu India.

(top right) *The Week*, one of India's most respected magazines, described how Vajpayee, who had presented a moderate image for many years, had finally revealed his true face with his aggressive policies, in an article titled "The mask is off"

The strongly worded speech given by Indian Prime Minister Vajpayee attracted wide coverage from the world press. Vajpayee, a supporter of Hindu nationalists who justifies attacks on Muslims, said: "Only Hindus can decide how free members of other faiths living in India can be." The speech was covered by *CNN* under the headline "Vajpayee reveals his true colors" The report, written by Mark Tully, stated that Vajpayee also supported Mayor Narendra Modi, regarded as responsible for the Gujarat attacks. In a report titled "Vajpayee's Ayodhya dilemma" the *BBC* stated that extremist Hindu nationalists were very powerful in Vajpayee's party, and that the opinion that Vajpayee had finally revealed his true face was becoming more prevalent across the world.


TIMEasia.com ASIA | WORLD | DIGITAL | BUSINESS | ARTS | TRAVEL | PHOTOS | MAGAZINE Special Features

"It is the politicians who hurt us both."

MOURNING IN INDIA

VIEWPOINT

Ruling by Riots

Indian politicians give space to political violence when it works for them

By M.J. Akbar

Great events in india have been shaped by the politics of the lynch mob. The last and decisive impetus to the great divide between Hindus and Muslims, which in turn led to the bitter harvest of partition in 1947, was provided by the Muslim mobs of Calcutta who ravaged the city in 1946. In 1984, Sikhs were identified, torched and killed by sword and bullet after the assassination of Indira Gandhi. In 1992 the destruction of a mosque on a disputed spot in the holy city of Ayodhya, where the Himalayas begin to meet the plains, was followed by wanton nationwide riots in which Muslims were surrounded, terrorized and massacred; rape was thrown in for evil measure in cities like Surat in polarized Gujarat, where it was also videotaped as proof of rapine conquest.

Each time, the government of the day gave implicit help to the lynch mobs by providing breathing space for hatred. Despite sufficient evidence of the coming firestorm, the police were kept immobile before and mute during the public assault, mayhem

Vajpayee has failed his first test against a lynch mob

advertisement

Unwire.

Uncompromise.
Untangle.
Unburden.
Unstress.

Designed from the ground up to achieve breakthrough mobile performance with features that include a mobile optimised

(above) A report titled "Ruling by Riots" in the Asian edition of *Time* magazine examined how Vajpayee, who thought that remaining silent in the face of the slaughter of Muslims in Gujarat would increase his vote, supports the Hindutya movement.

the extremely militant Shiv Sena. Its members openly voice their racially motivated aggression and actively encourage the radical Hindu militant's attacks. The racist leader of Shiv Sena, Bal Thackeray, is notorious in his praise of Hitler and Nazi Germany in his interviews. Thackeray believes that democracy is not a suitable system of governance for India and states that it needs to be governed by a "positive dictatorship".

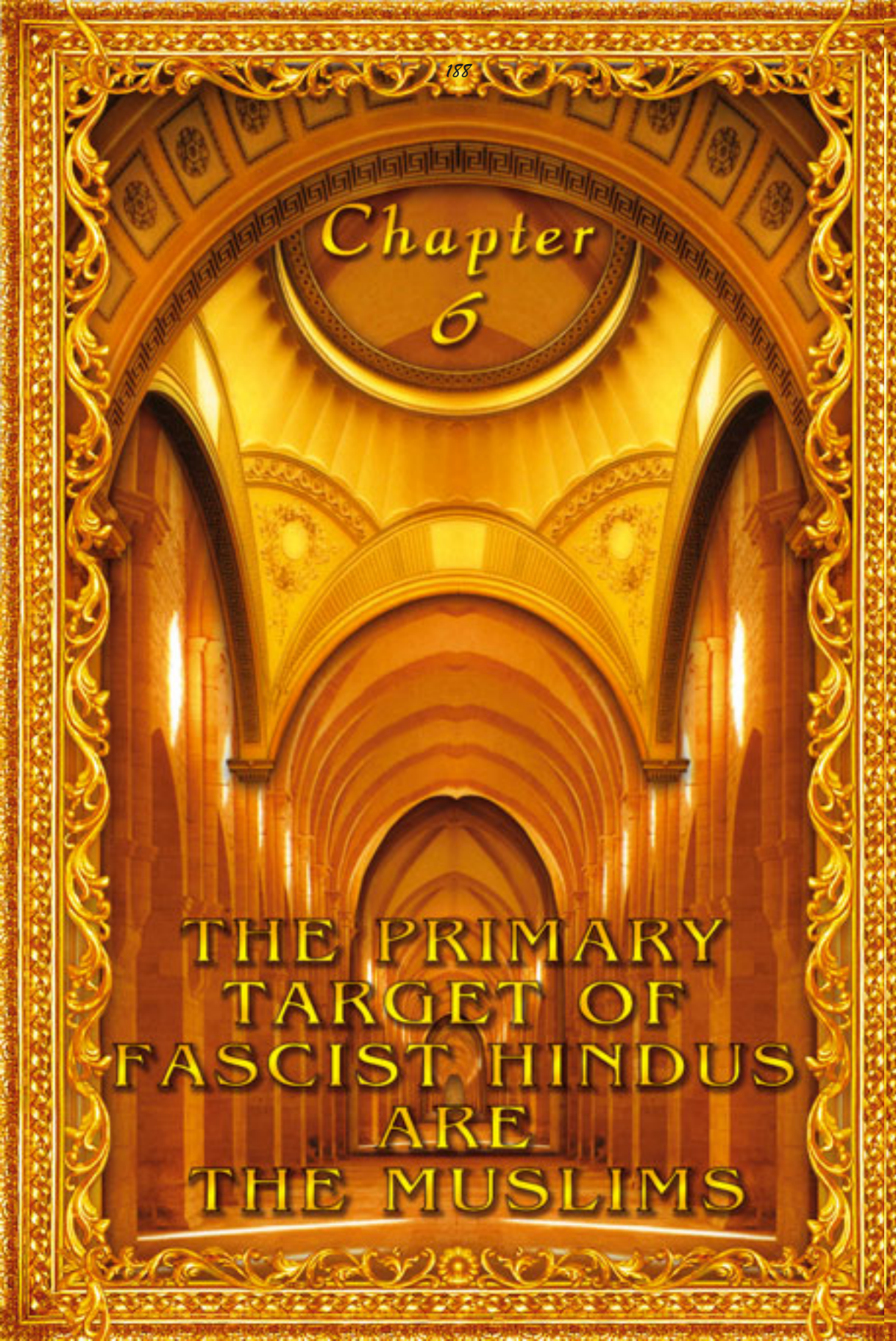
At the present time, there is a huge propaganda campaign in progress aiming to strengthen the Hindutva (Pure Hindu Nation) movement by winning further ideological support for its activities from the people. It is supported by all the radical nationalist groups mentioned

above. Over 200 different organizations are campaigning actively in India, and various radical nationalistic Hindu groups are active in America and Europe. Thousands of books and other documents are printed and websites designed solely for the purpose of spreading the Hindutva ideology. All these documents are based on distorted information which clouds the people's perception of facts, making them thus vulnerable to provocation against minorities. These booklets disseminate lies to the effect that Hindus have been maltreated by centuries of tyranny by both Muslims and Christians, and they are blamed for all the ills of the country.[90] This smear campaign smacks of the propaganda directed against Jews by the Nazis in the 1930's. The extent of the RSS's control over India is revealed in great detail in an article titled "The New Indian Right- Soldiers of Hindutva" and published by Achin Vanaik, a lecturer at the New Delhi Third World Research Academy known for his work on the Hindutva movement:

> *"Today, the RSS far outstrips the Left in numbers (estimated at over 2 million), organised strength in civil society (40,000 shakas or branches), and morale. It runs thousands of schools and has a plethora of front organisations for all sections of society, from housewives to pensioners to retired military personnel, unmatched by any other force. Its nervous system is a saffron brotherhood of pracharaks, several thousand supposedly celibate, spartan, full-time organizers, incorruptibly devoted to the pure Hindu Rashtra of their dreams. The all-male local shakhas are animated by a powerful ethic of loyalty and obedience, with an emphasis on physical culture and body-building through calisthenics and drill. Neighbourhood implantation is strong: as guardians of wisdom, the shakha will only allow a boy to attend with the consent and daily knowledge of his family. The campaign against the Ayodhya mosque, the greatest in scale and depth since the National Movement in India, would have been impossible without the unparalleled local infrastructure and unified central command of the RSS. The Hindutva phenomenon is more*

deep-rooted and more difficult to destroy. Fascism in power had one key instrumentality: the State. Hindutva has two: the State, and the RSS as the "skeleton" (and soul) around which the anatomy of the "new India" is to be built. The ultimate defeat or retreat of fascism from state power signalled its dissolution. This is not so for the Sangh."[91]

As Vanaik said, Sangh Parivar wants to establish the Hindutva ideology on Indian soil or to put it differently, it is resolved to bring about the rule of a dark Hindu fanaticism. To achieve this, they want to exterminate all non-Hindu minorities in India just like their ideological relatives, the Nazis, made their country "Judenrein" (cleared of Jews). That is why they have increased their oppression, terror, violence and other efforts to subdue their primary target community, the Muslims, since the 1990's. Following their ascension to power, they have continued their activities with the financial and political backing of the state. The past ten to fifteen years was marked by great sufferings, losses and deaths for the Muslim community in India. Not even the events that drew the attention of the global community suffice to understand this dark ideology prevailing the section in question on the Indian subcontinent.


Chapter
6
THE PRIMARY
TARGET OF
FASCIST HINDUS
ARE
THE MUSLIMS

Some circles at the present time like to portray perverse and racist Hinduism as a religion of "peace and understanding". They claim that Hindus are open-minded towards other religions and that they leave people in peace. This is a fraudulent claim. As we have stated in the previous chapter, Hinduism is a deeply racist culture, and the Hindu culture prescribes violence and oppression, not compassion, towards other religious denominations and even towards members of its own lower castes. The upper caste elite have been oppressing their own people for centuries as a requirement of the merciless caste system. However, the primary target of these often violent policies is what they describe as the "non-Hindu minorities," like Muslims and Christians. The English historian Prof. Douglas Spitz, renowned for his research on Hindu nationalism, explains in his article titled "The RSS and Hindu Militancy in the 1980s" the illogical basis of Hindu nationalist ideology:

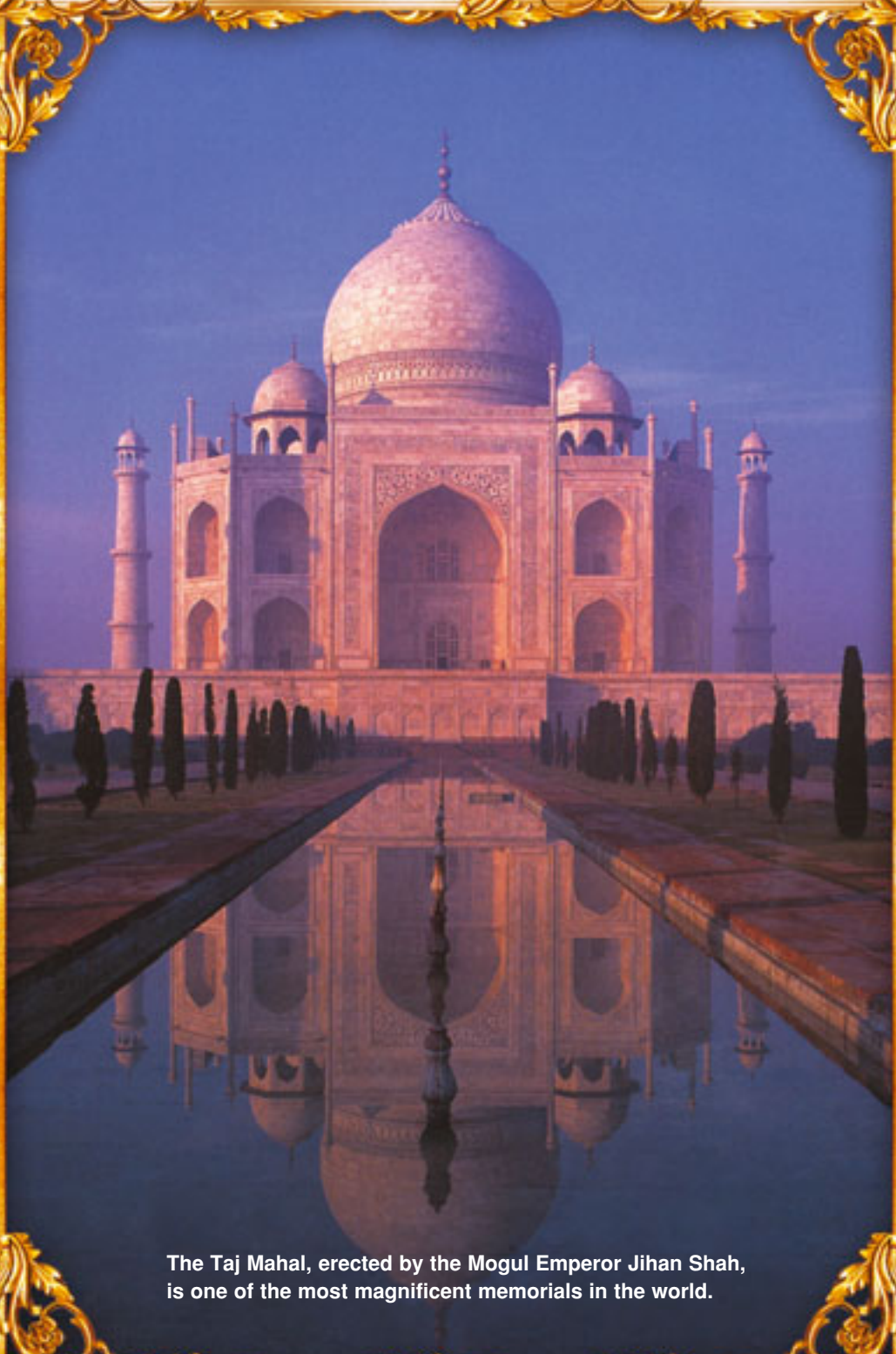
> *"According to RSS ideology, Hindu nationalism provides the antidote to false Nehruvian secularism. RSS thinkers maintain that Hindu (Bharatiya) culture is the only indigenous culture of India, and that India cannot be nationally integrated until all Indians share this culture, and recognize it as the foundation of their collective national identity. They assert that to achieve this goal of national integration based on a shared Bharatiya culture, two basic conditions must be met. First, Hindus must transcend their divisions of caste, sect, class, region and language, and realize that they form a mighty organic Hindu nation. Secondly, non-Hindus, particularly Muslims and Christians, whose religious and cultural inspiration originated in foreign lands, must adopt as theirs Hindu culture and its historical heroes."*[92]

The primary targets of these assimilation policies are the Muslims in India who form a large community of 200 million people.

Before the radical Hindu's oppressive policies towards the Muslim people can be explored further, it is necessary to look at the deep-rooted history of Islam on Indian soil.

The Indian people became acquainted with Islam at the beginning of the 7th Century. With the Turkish invasion of India in the 11th and 12th Centuries, Islam spread rapidly across South Asia. The collapse of the Abbasi state saw the creation of many small Muslim states. Whilst these states continued their independent existences in Belucistan, Afghanistan, Multan and Sind, the first large Muslim state was created in 977 in Gazne. The state of Gazne united all the Muslim fiefdoms warring with one another under one name, much as the Ottoman empire was to do later in Anatolia. Subsequently, the Indian nation declared war on the Muslims. After a series of clashes, the Gazne state defeated the Indians in the Battle of Peshawar in 1008 and occupied most of North India. Uc, Gujarat, Lahor, Delhi and Bengal were conquered by Muslim forces. During the reign of Sultan Mahmud of Gazne, Islamic morality and culture spread rapidly across these idolatrous lands. The native population entered the Islamic faith in great waves, and by their own free choice. Sultan Mahmud, who made seventeen expeditions into India, drew the attention of the Islamic world with his relentless efforts to spread the Islamic faith. He was honored with the title of Sultan and his family with the title of Seref by the Abbasi Caliph. Sultan Mahmud's reign of thirty years helped to establish Islam in India and in a sense, he was the founding father of the present-day Pakistan and Bangladesh.

Between 1206 and 1526, when the Indo-Turkish empire was founded, five different Muslim states ruled in India: The Memluk, The Haleci, The Tugluk, The Seyyid and The Ludis. In 1516, Timur brought the Ludi Empire to an end and his grandson, Babur Sah Mogul, founded his empire which governed the area until the 17th century. This empire weak-

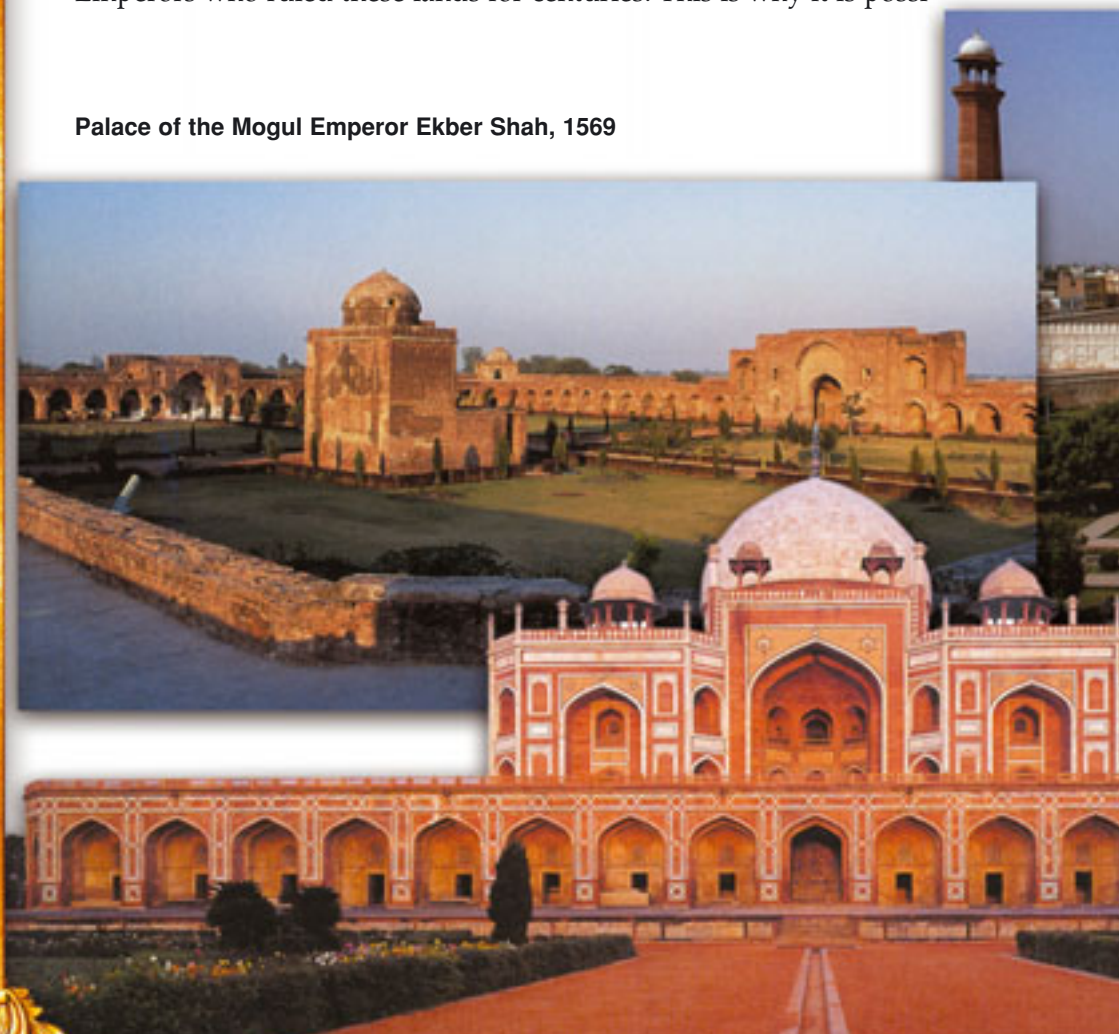


The Taj Mahal, erected by the Mogul Emperor Jihan Shah, is one of the most magnificent memorials in the world.

ened over time, contracted and ultimately collapsed. In 1858, the whole of the Indian subcontinent came under the colonial rule of the British Empire, and the area known as Indochina (today the nations of Vietnam and Cambodia), was colonized by the French.

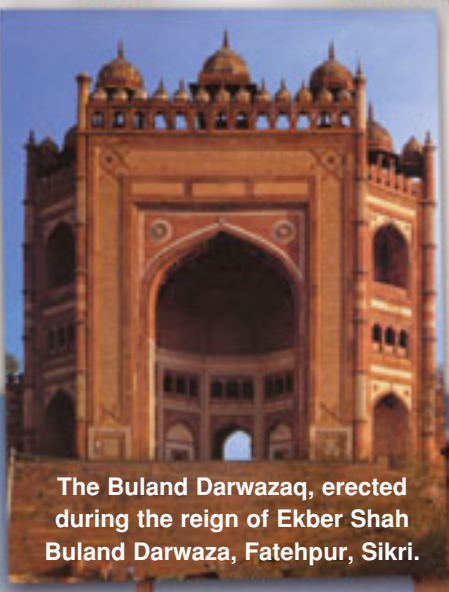
In short, Islam has a deep rooted history in south Asia and the Muslims on the Indian subcontinent today are the descendants of the Emperors who ruled these lands for centuries. This is why it is possi-

Palace of the Mogul Emperor Ekber Shah, 1569



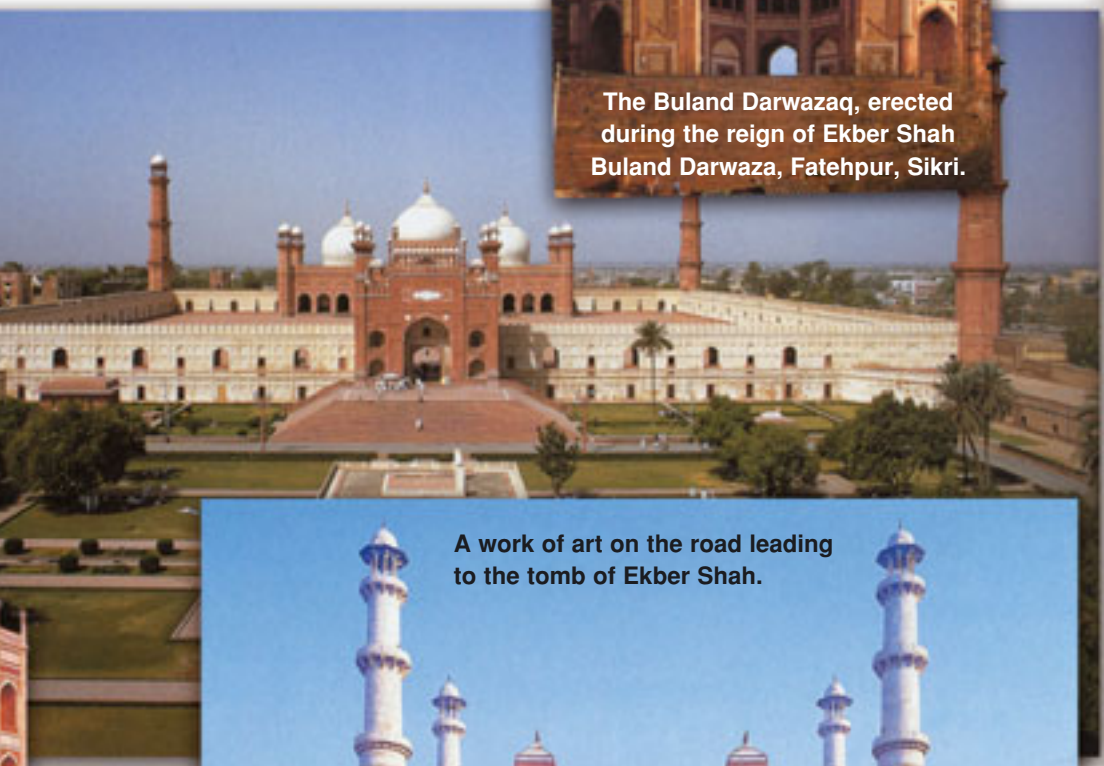
Funerary memorial erected for the Mogul Emperor Humayun

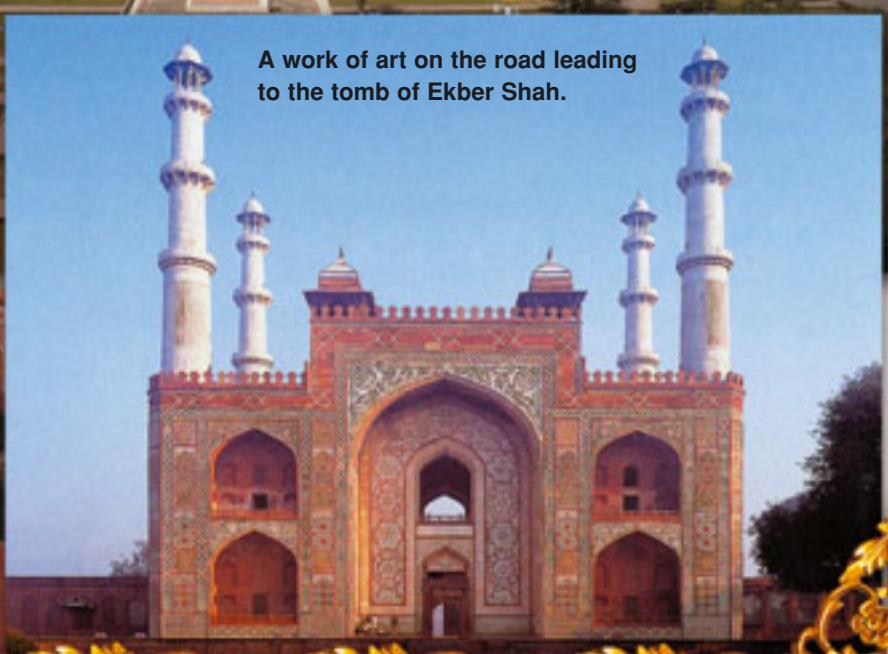
The incomparable works of art from Muslim states within the borders of India are the best possible reflection of the superior nature of Islamic civilization



The Buland Darwazaq, erected during the reign of Ekber Shah Buland Darwaza, Fatehpur, Sikri.

Badshah Mosque, Lahore, 1673-1674





A work of art on the road leading to the tomb of Ekber Shah.

ble to see the high Islamic culture and morality all across India where hundreds of millions of Muslims live. Countless mosques, madrassas, and many other historic buildings demonstrate Islamic civilizations great contribution to these lands.

The 200 million Muslims in India form the largest minority group in the world. However this large minority is face to face with ever escalating violence and oppression by radical Hindus. The Muslims of India are being martyred, their houses being burned down, being evicted from their lands and subjected to various means of torture and harassment by racist Hindu movements led by the Vishna Hindu Parishad Party (VHP). As the police generally side with the radical Hindus, most of those killed or injured are Muslims; yet despite this fact, the police typically appre-



Fanatical Hindus reveal their hatred for Muslims and Islam by burning copies of the Qur'an during mass demonstrations.

hend the Muslims. One such situation occurred when on the 6th of December, 1992 the historic Babur mosque, built in the 16th century, was burned down.

THE VICIOUS ATTACK ON THE BABUR MOSQUE

Muslims living on Indian soil have been repeatedly exposed to barbaric attacks, especially since the rise of radical Hindu nationalism over the past fifty years. One of the worst such attacks was the destruction of the Babur mosque in Ayodhya.

This mosque was commissioned by the Mogul emperor Babur Sah 430 years ago, and is of great importance for Indian Muslims. This mosque was the cause of dispute for ages between Hindus and Muslims. Hindus claim that this historic building, a monument of Islamic civilization, was built on the birth place of Rama, one of their so-called deities, and therefore wanted to see it torn down in order to build a Hindu temple in its place. The only basis of this claim is hearsay based on fairytale like legends. They themselves invented this nonsensical belief, and acted for centuries on it.

One of the foremost names on Indian history and Hinduism, Professor Brian K. Smith of the University of California, reveals some shocking facts about Ayodhya and the Rama temple in his work entitled "Re-envisioning Hinduism and evaluating the Hindutva Movement" .[93] One of the pieces of evidence put forward by Professor Smith is a research paper by The Archeological Survey of India. The chairman of this organization, Prof. B. B. Lal, reported that following extensive research, no evidence could be found in support of the claim that there was ever a Hindu temple in the past in the Ayodhya area. Another source Smith relies on, is a research project by the University of Jawaharlal Nehru, one of India's most respectable universities. The university's historical re-

search department publishes a periodical under the title "The political Abuse of History". It reveals a great lie in the case of Ayodhya. The claim that there was a temple in the past in Ayodhya is a blatant falsehood as there is absolutely "no evidence", and never was for the existence of such a temple. Hindu radicals however, disregard this fact and continue to claim that besides Ayodhya, there are 3,000 sacred sites across India which were conquered by Muslim emperors. Many people express their concerns about these sites as they too could become other Ayodhyas in the near future. According to Indian researchers, one of the next targets of Hindus could be a 17th century mosque in Benares.[94]

The first big campaign seeking the demolition of the Babur mosque was kicked off by the BJP in the autumn of 1990. The then leader of the party, L. K. Advani, toured the region in his vehicle, intentionally inciting people to begin an uprising with the intent of demolishing the mosque so a temple could be built in its place. A minibus was decorated to resemble the chariot of Mahabharata, a Hindu deity, for this purpose and toured 20 big cities and hundreds of towns and villages. This program started the ceaseless attacks on Muslims. The raging mob climbed over the walls of the mosque and onto its 16th century roof where they erected Hindu flags. No inquiry was ever held into this affair. This act of provocation netted the BJP an explosive increase in the votes it received.

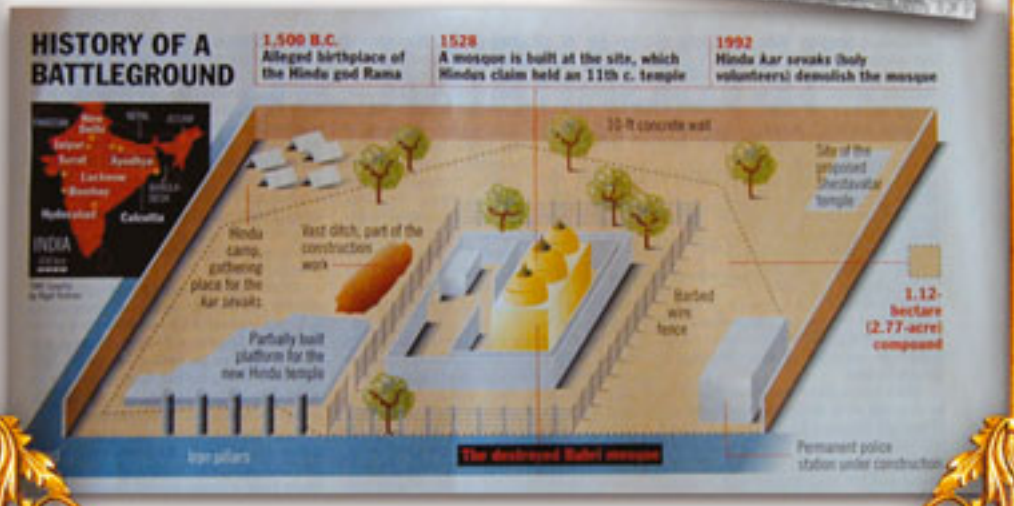
Attacks targeting the mosque increased further in 1992. 50,000 Hindus gathered in front of the Babur mosque for a great showdown following the Advani's campaign on Friday the 4th, 1992. The next day, they launched further attacks in large groups and ultimately destroyed the 430 year old Babur Mosque. This attack resulted in violent clashes between Muslims and Hindus. This was an offensive planned and encouraged for years by Sangh Parivar's member parties like the VHP. In the buildup to this attack, Ram Chandra Pramhans, one of the leaders of

the VHP, which supported the idea of building a Rama temple on the site of the Babur mosque, made provocative statements.

In the ensuing clashes more than 2,000 Muslims were martyred. The foremost supporters of these events were the ruling government party, the BJP, and its Prime Minister Vajpayee. It had close ties to racist organizations like the VHP. The conflict spilled over to other countries like Pakistan, Bangladesh and Britain where more clashes took place and the already tense situation between Pakistan and India worsened.

A report in the 21 December, 1992, edition of *Time* magazine discussed the history of the debate over the Babur Mosque. There was no conflict between Muslims and Hindus between the construction of the mosque in 1528 until 1855, when the claim in question was made. In 1934, Hindu fanatics tore down part of the mosque walls. As the debate continued, in 1983 the World Hindu Association initiated a campaign to have the mosque pulled down and a new place of worship erected on the site. Clashes increased rapidly after that date. In 1992, the mosque was totally destroyed by Hindu fanatics.





A report in *Time* magazine titled "Unholy War" covered demonstrations of joy by fanatical Hindus in the wake of the tearing down of the Babur Mosque.

Time, 21 December, 1992

UNHOLY WAR



The Indian government promised to rebuild the destroyed mosque in 1992 in order to diffuse the situation but ten years later, no steps have been taken in that direction. Worse yet, the government remained silent when plans emerged to build a Hindu temple on the site. In 2003, radical Hindus, taking heart from the government's stance in this matter, moved to begin the construction of this temple. Quite understandably, Muslims would not let them, and in the subsequent clashes a further 700 people died.

One of the most respected human rights organizations, Human Rights Watch, revealed detailed information about this attack on Muslims and other similar cases in India. One of the HRW reports, published in 1994, stated that the attack on the Babur mosque in Ayodhya took place as a consequence of the BJP government and other radical Hindu nationalist groups' campaign, and that neither the police nor the other security forces intervened to stop the massacre. The following information is from this report:

> *"Despite promises by BJP state government officials that the mosque would be protected, police at the site reportedly refused to intervene to prevent either the demolition, or subsequent attacks on journalists and others. More than 1,000 died in the violence that followed in cities across northern India. A disproportionate number of those killed were Muslims shot by police. In some cases, those shot dead were pulled from their homes and summarily executed. In Surat, in the state of Gujarat, attacks on Muslims included the gang-rapes of women. In January, Muslims in Bombay were again the principal target during nine days of violence in which more than 700 people were killed. The Bombay police, many of whom reportedly support the Hindu militant Shiv Sena organization, deliberately targeted Muslims or stood back while mobs burned Muslims' homes."*[95]

From time to time the tensions calm, but the conflict goes on. Repeated attempts at building the Hindu temple on the mosque's site

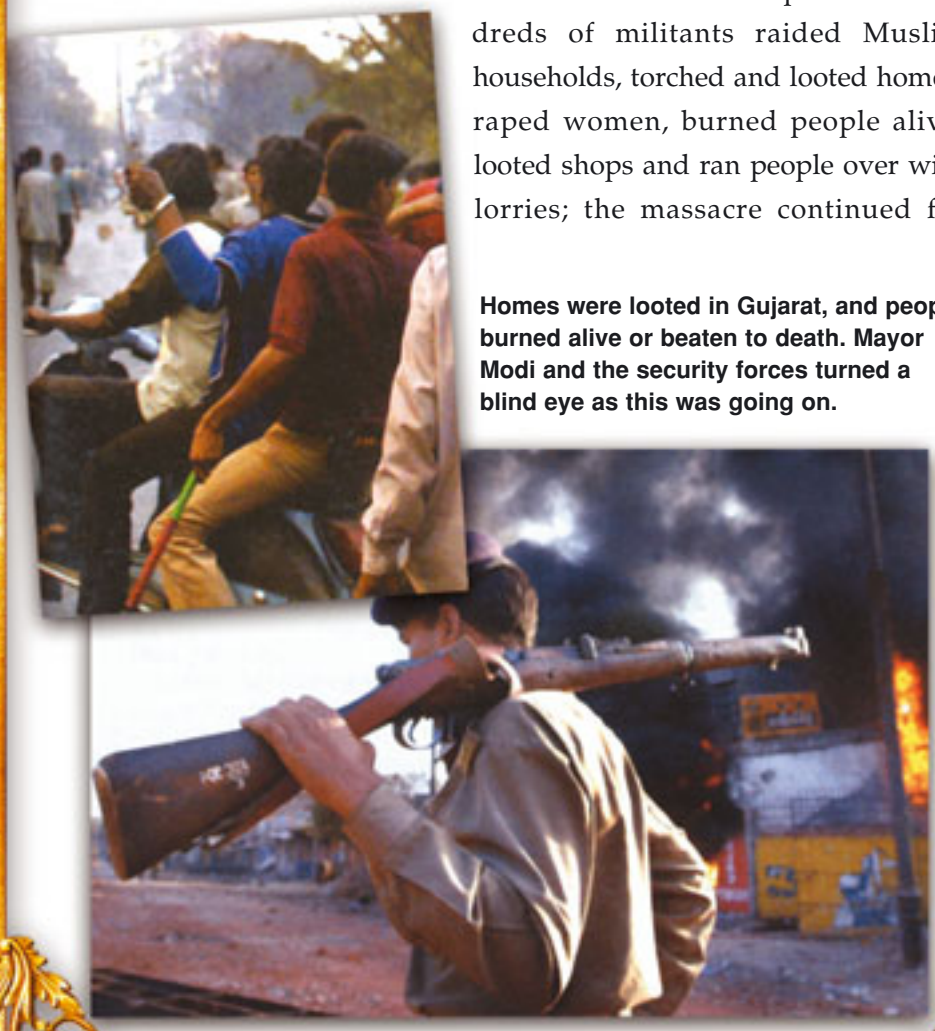
play a major role in keeping the conflict alive, alongside the governments backing for the Hindu cause. Consequently, Hindu militants torch Muslim houses and assault Muslim women and many innocent people inevitably lose their lives.

THOUSANDS OF MUSLIMS WERE BRUTALLY MARTYRED DURING THE CLASHES IN GUJARAT

Attacks like the one on the Babur mosque have become almost common practice in India over the years. Every conflict leads up to the torching of Muslim's houses, workplaces and cars. In many cases Muslims have perished in the flames when their homes were set alight as they slept.[96] The government appears to take preventive action, but in reality, certain radical groups (that are in fact sometimes in the administration) give silent yet decisive support to such attacks. This is a fact established by human rights organizations. For instance, Human Rights Watch has prepared a number of reports on Muslims' persecution in India, revealing the conduct of government officials, local governments, and the security forces based on eyewitness accounts.[97] Radical Hindus, encouraged by Hinduism's racist philosophy continue to carry out such attacks.

The behind the scenes politics that led to the destruction of the Babur Mosque and the tensions thus created, are the same as in the events that began with an arson attack on a train in mid -2002 and culminated in the martyrdom of 2,000 Muslims. A train carrying a group of radical Hindus was torched. It was claimed that Muslims were responsible for this attack, but soon enough, voices were heard suggesting that a provocative conspiracy was at work. A report filed by the BBC appeared to confirm this version of events; some people on the train claimed that a group of Muslims stopped the train, and then started the

fire, but autopsy as well as eyewitness reports contradicted this scenario and proved that the fire was started from within the train.[98] After this arson attack on the train, the government was quick in pointing the finger of blame at Muslims, thereby provoking Hindu militants into action. Racist organization like the RSS had found the perfect opportunity they were looking for. Encouraged by the conduct of certain people inside the Indian government, Hindu aggressors launched their vicious attack on the Muslims. Mobs composed of hundreds of militants raided Muslim households, torched and looted homes, raped women, burned people alive, looted shops and ran people over with lorries; the massacre continued for



Homes were looted in Gujarat, and people burned alive or beaten to death. Mayor Modi and the security forces turned a blind eye as this was going on.

days. Corpses were thrown into canals and rivers and the police force took no action whatsoever to end the violence, nor did the local administration or government. To the contrary, many cases of rape and arson took place with police assistance, or under police protection.

One of the worst massacres took place in Ahmedabad, a city in western India. Again, the police and military forces failed to take action to prevent or end the violence. Journalists reported that gangs wreaked havoc across the city, torching cars and looting shops and setting fire to them with the police simply standing by and watching. Then the radical Hindu mob turned their attentions to the Narora shantytown where they burned 27 Muslims alive, mostly children. Hindu gangs patrolled the streets, stopping cars at random asking the occupants "whether or not they were Muslims". Hindus were allowed to drive on, whilst Muslims were taken out of their cars and martyred.[99] A storeroom in which eleven Muslims were hiding was set ablaze, martyring seven of them. A family of eight were burned to death in their car. In an attack in which knives, metal bars, swords, and baseball bats were used resulted in the deaths of forty eight people. Hospitals were overflowing with casualties, most of whom bore knife wounds. In many towns, slogans like "learn from us how to burn Muslims" were painted on walls and Hindu militants, when being interviewed by foreign journalists, said things like: "whatever is happening here it is good because the only way of solving this problem is by exterminating the Muslims".

The events of Gujarat made news across the world and human rights organization filed many reports, but neither the news nor these reports could persuade the Indian government or, for that matter, the global community, to take any action. A report entitled, "The Gujarat Massacre Affected Minority Women, The Survivors Speak" based on first-hand accounts of women who survived these attacks revealed the following:

Newsweek, 22 April 2002



PROTEST: Muslims in Gujarat say police turned a blind eye toward Hindu attacks

Less than half of Muslim children attend school, and literacy rates are lagging

d 59 Hin- | year-old schoolteacher
when they | who hid in his rooftop

Newsweek, 22 January 1999

INDIA

'A Free Reign of Terror'

Mob attacks on Christian churches and schools are a product of Hindu nationalism—and national politics



Over centuries of peace, a year of violence: Nuns in Mumbai (Bombay) protest the Gujarat attacks

By Tony Clifton

THEY CHURCHES ARE EASY TARGETS. They are little more than prayer halls, made of wood and thatch, and they are always undefended. The ministers, priests and nuns do not resist when the mobs attack, and the local police, if any are present,

serious attacks on Christians and their institutions across India. Priests have been beaten up—one was murdered in Bihar early last year—nuns have been raped, churches and schools burned and graveyards desecrated. The number of attacks is startling: only 30 similar incidents were

about "the increasing domination of top leadership of the country by Christians."

In fact, there are few Christians among the top leaders, but that doesn't stop Singhal. He claims there is a vast international conspiracy [involving] sources, the CIA, to lure Hindus away from their religion and forcibly convert them to Christianity. He even insists that the Nobel Prize recently awarded to Indian economist Amartya Sen, a member of a Hindu family who works mostly in the West, was actually "part of the Christian conspiracy to wipe out Hinduism in this country." Singhal charges that the Nobel peace prize was "politically motivated, like the peace prize given to Mother Teresa."

Last week there was a lull in the violence, though a Jesuit priest in the Dangs region, Father Varghese George, said: "Nobody thinks it's over." The attacks, he said, were confined outside the area until they spread out by young men who were trucked into the region. "They are very small villages, everybody knows everyone else," said the priest. "And they've never seen these people before." Activists of the government in Gujarat, especially in the area, are trying to keep peace and harmony, to have law and order," he charged.

The government's failure to stop the violence so far came under fire from opposition politicians and

(above) **A report in *Newsweek* magazine opening with the words "Less than half of Muslim children attend school and literacy rates are lagging" described the physical and psychological pressure placed on the Muslim population, which exceeds 200 million, by Hindu nationalists. The report covered a demonstration by Gujarat Muslims against the biased attitude of the police in the face of attacks by Hindus. The same report also stated that Hindus had attacked Christian churches and schools. *(Side)* A report titled "A Free Reign of Terror" described how the Christian minorities in India frequently hold protest marches to complain about attacks.**

Milli Gazete, 3 March 2002
Hindus burn people alive

Türkiye, 5 March 2002
Muslim massacre



...7 Müslümanın daha can verdiği olaylarda ölü ...

Hindular diri diri yakıyor

AHMEDABAD / Hindistan'ın Gucarat eyale-
tinde, Müslümanlar ile Hindular arasında
geçtiğimiz günlerde süren çatışmalarda dün 27 Müslüman
daha öldürüldü.
Eyaletin Mehsana bölgesindeki bir köye yapılan
yeni saldırıda, ev ve dükkânlarını ateşe verdiği,
buralarda mahsur kalan 27 kişinin yanarak öldüğü
belirtildi. Saldırganların yolları barikatlar kurarak
polisin bölgeye ulaşmasını engellediği, polisin da-
ha sonra 40 kişiyi kurtarmayı başardığı kaydedildi.
Hindistan Başbakanı Atal Behari Vajpayi, Müs-
lümanlar ile Hindular arasında günlerdir süren
kanlı din çatışmalarını, "ülkenin alnında kara bir
leke" olarak niteledi.
Vajpayi, yüzlerce kişinin ölümüne neden olan
çatışmaların ardından devlet televizyonundan yap-
tığı konuşmada, halkı sükunet çağrısında bulun-
du. Hindistan Başbakanı, "Her türlü kaba
kara buru kınıyorum ve sakin olmanızı. Kadın ve
çocuklar dahil insanların yakılması, ülkenin alnın-
da kara bir lekedir" dedi.
Gucarat eyaletindeki şiddetin, Hindistan'ın ima-
jına zarar verdiğini belirten Vajpayi, "Bütün laik
insanların barışı koruyacağından ve hükümetin
uygun düzeyini sağlamasına yardımcı olacağın-
dan eminim" diye konuştu.

ÖLÜ SAYISI 43'E ÇIKTI

Bu arada Gucarat eyaleti kentlerine yayılan çatış-
malarda ölü sayısının 43'e çıktığı bildirildi.
Hindu eylemciler 1992 yılında yine Hindu ey-
lemcilerden yıllar önce tarafından yıkılan Ayodhya'da 16. yüzyıl-
dan kalma bir camiinin çoktan üzerinde bir tapınak
inşa etmek istiyorlar.

Türkiye, 5 March 2002
Muslim massacre

Hindistan'ın Gucarat eyaletindeki çatışmalarda ölü sayısı 272'ye yükseldi. Hindularla Müslümanlar arasında
yaşanan çatışmalarda yaralanan bir kişi, Ahmedabad şehrindeki Şah Alem Camii'nde tedavi ediliyor.

Müslüman katliamı!

Çatışmalar sırasında kalan 3 yaşındaki küçük kız, babasının ölüp sokaklarda ceset-lerin arasında bırakılmasına ağlıyor...

AHMEDABAD (AA) - Hindistan'da yaşanan son 10 yılın en şiddetli dini çatışmalarında ölenlerin sayısı 272'ye çıktı. Hindistan'da farklı Hindu dini inançlarına mensup Hindularla Müslümanlar arasında yaşanan çatışmalarda ölenlerin sayısı 272'ye yükseldi. Hindistan Başbakanı Atal Behari Vajpayi'nin Gucarat eyaletinde Müslümanlara karşı kanlı saldırılar düzenleyen Hindu eylemcilerini sakin olmaya çağırmasından üzerine geçen yaklaşık yirmi beş günde Müslümanlara yönelik dini nitelikte yaygınlaşan 58 Hindu eylemci yaşamak için vermiş ve binlerce insanın evleri ve işyerleri ateşe verilmişti. 1992 yılında yine Hindu eylemcilerin tarafından yıkılan Ayodhya'da 16. yüzyıldan kalma bir camiinin onların üzerinde bir tapınak inşa etmek istiyorlar.

Keşmir kan gölü: 22 ölü

Hindistan ve Pakistan'ın üzerinde hak iddia ettiği Cammu Keşmir'de dün ateş kesim ihlali yaşandı. 17

-*The violence did not escalate into a massacre by itself. It has been established that there was preparation, organization and pre-planned targeting.*

-*Among the women in the survivors camps, there are women who had been raped, gang raped, mass raped, paraded naked, violated with a variety of objects, assaulted and subjected to the most repulsive acts of sexual violation. Many of the raped women were subsequently burned alive.*

-*The effect on these women is psychological, physical and financial. There is no evidence whatsoever to suggest that the state helped them in any of these three areas.*

-*Certain media organizations, broadcasting in the native language of Gujarat, played a dangerous and frankly criminal role in inciting the public to partake in*

the massacre and encouraging them to participate in the sexual violation of women.

-Pregnant women had their bellies cut open and their unborn children cast into fires.

-No newspaper or TV station reported on rape or any other assaults on women, and the police and government completely ignored these attacks.

-Many children witnessed these barbaric crimes of rape and arson, causing trauma and severe psychological damage to them.

-The state did not display any signs of remorse for failing to do its job. Government officials sufficed with saying: "There was nothing that could have been done. All Hindu hearts were filled with a natural hate and rage and we could not have controlled these emotions."

-There is significant evidence suggesting that the police aided the mob, cooperated with them or, even worse, directed them in some cases. There is video footage showing slogans being painted on the walls of Muslim's houses reading, "the police are on our side, too". In other cases, the police just ignored calls for help or retorted, "We have not had orders from above to help you". Women and children were turned away by police patrols or at the police station by policemen saying: "Help yourselves". Many calls for justice were rejected on the grounds that there was insufficient evidence to file a report, and that therefore there was no case.[100]

RADICAL HINDU VIOLENCE AND KASHMIR

Before we examine the violent practices Muslims are subjected to by certain radical circles within the Indian administration, it is necessary to familiarize ourselves with an overview of the Kashmiri people's experiences.

Kashmir has one of the world's richest ruby, emerald and gold reserves. The area has been under Indian occupation since 1947. As it is a mountainous region on high grounds, it is a strategic area that is easily

BBC, 3 July 2002

BBC NEWS WORLD EDITION

You are in: South Asia

Wednesday, 3 July, 2002, 10:27 GMT 11:27 UK

Doubts over Gujarat train attack



Suggestion that the fire started inside the carriage

Forensic investigators in India have raised questions over an attack which killed almost 60 Hindus and led to widespread anti-Muslim riots in the western state of Gujarat.

IslamOnline.net, 11 January 2003

IslamOnline.net

No War, A World Wide

Gujarat Violence Okayed, Orchestrated by India: HRW

NEW DELHI, January 14 (IslamOnline & News Agencies) - Human Rights Watch Tuesday, January 14, slammed the Indian government for its role in last year's sectarian violence in the western state of Gujarat and for using tough new anti-



"In many cases, the police led the charge, using gunfire to kill Muslims who got in the mobs' way," said the watch-dog

Related Lin

- New Evid Gujarat A Pogroms Preplanne
- U.S., Euro India Over
- Indian Hu Chief Equa With War, "National
- More Viole Says It Wi

The Muslim Observer, 14 June 2002

Public Hearing into Gujurat in Congress

The Muslim Observer

BRINGING YOU A WORLD OF NEWS AND INFORMATION EVERY WEEK

RABIA THAANY 2 - 8, 1423A.H.

BBC, 9 May 2002

BBC NEWS WORLD EDITION

Thursday, 9 May, 2002, 15:45 GMT 16:45 UK

Gujarat's Muslims live in terror

Gujarat Muslims are living in fear



Muslims living in the camp are frightened



By Jill McGivering
BBC South Asia correspondent

It is now more than two months since the Indian state of Gujarat erupted in bitter religious violence.

Unofficial figures say more than 2,000 people have died, the vast majority Muslims killed by Hindus who constitute more than 80% of the state's population.



ndent reports

CONGRESSIONAL PUBLIC HEARING ON GUJARAT



BBC, 16 April 2002

BBC NEWS

Gujarat Muslim women 'rape victims'



Hindu rioters ringed our Muslim shops and businesses

By Jyotsna Singh
BBC correspondent in Delhi

Muslim women were subjected to

AYODHYA FLASHPOINT

Ayodhya eyewitness

- Frustrated anger
- Muslim fears
- Hindu passion
- A town sealed off

Background issues

- Secular society?
- Vajpayee's dilemm
- Who are the VHP?
- History of dispute
- Questions & answ

Pictures and image

- Visual guide to sit
- Photo gallery

TALKING P

The Muslim Observer, 31 May 2002

There Is No Security Or Justice for Muslims in Gujurat


No security or justice for Gujarati Muslims

The Muslim Observer, 3 May 2002

Genocide under a Mask of Rebellion in Gujurat


Genocide masquerading as riot in Gujarat, India

Gujarat victims were 'stripped, burned and hacked'

CNN, 22 April 2002

Indian State of Gujurat Continues to Burn

CNN.com / WORLD

India's Gujarat continues to burn

AHMEDABAD, India -- Religious tension continues to simmer in the violence-wracked western Indian state of Gujarat after a spate of fresh bloodshed over the weekend left at least 16 dead.

The renewed violence paralyzed India's parliament for the sixth straight day on Monday with lawmakers slamming the fragile coalition government for failing to end the unrest.

Rioting in Ahmedabad accounted for most of the deaths, The Times of India reported, including a policeman who was hacked to death.

Hindu and Muslim mobs clashed in the city.

The acts of violence that had been going on in Gujurat for weeks made their way into the world press. However, the Hindu nationalist dominated government acted very slowly in putting an end to the assaults. They waited for days, turning a blind eye to people being killed and burned alive. Statements issued referred to the attacks as "normal."

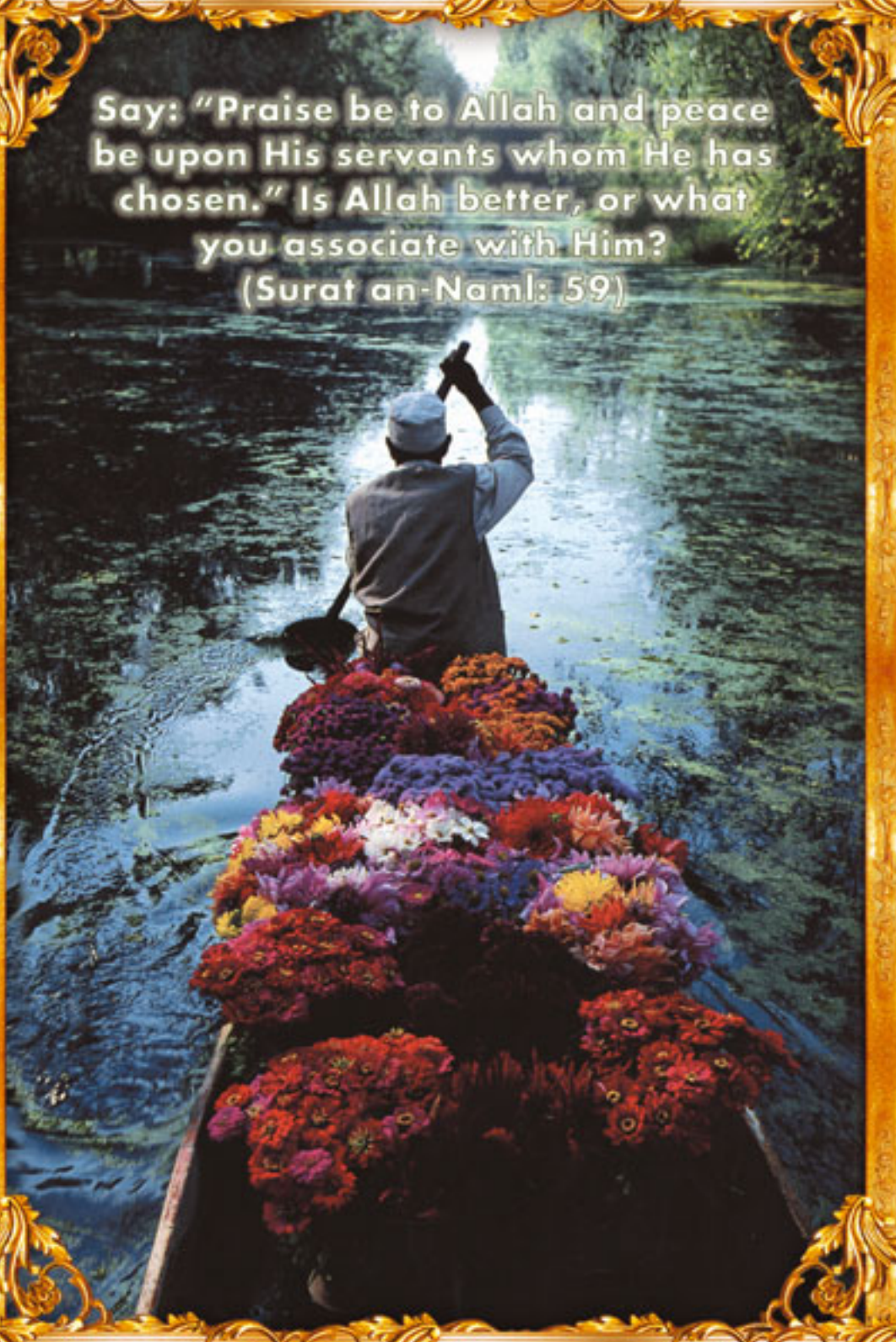
(side, top) A *BBC* report under the headline "Doubts over Gujurat train attack" dated 3 July, 2002, covered concerns that the train act that had triggered off the events in Gujurat had been a deliberate act of provocation. The world press described how Muslims were living in fear, women were being raped and everywhere was filled with charred corpses. Another report on the *BBC*, dated 16 April, 2002, was titled "Gujurat Muslim women rape victims" Another noteworthy feature of the report was the way that the security forces had made no move to put an end to the attacks.

The *Islamonline* web site carried a report by the Human Rights Watch Organisation headed "Gujurat Violence Okayed, Orchestrated by India: HRW" A *CNN* report was headed "India's Gujurat continues to burn."

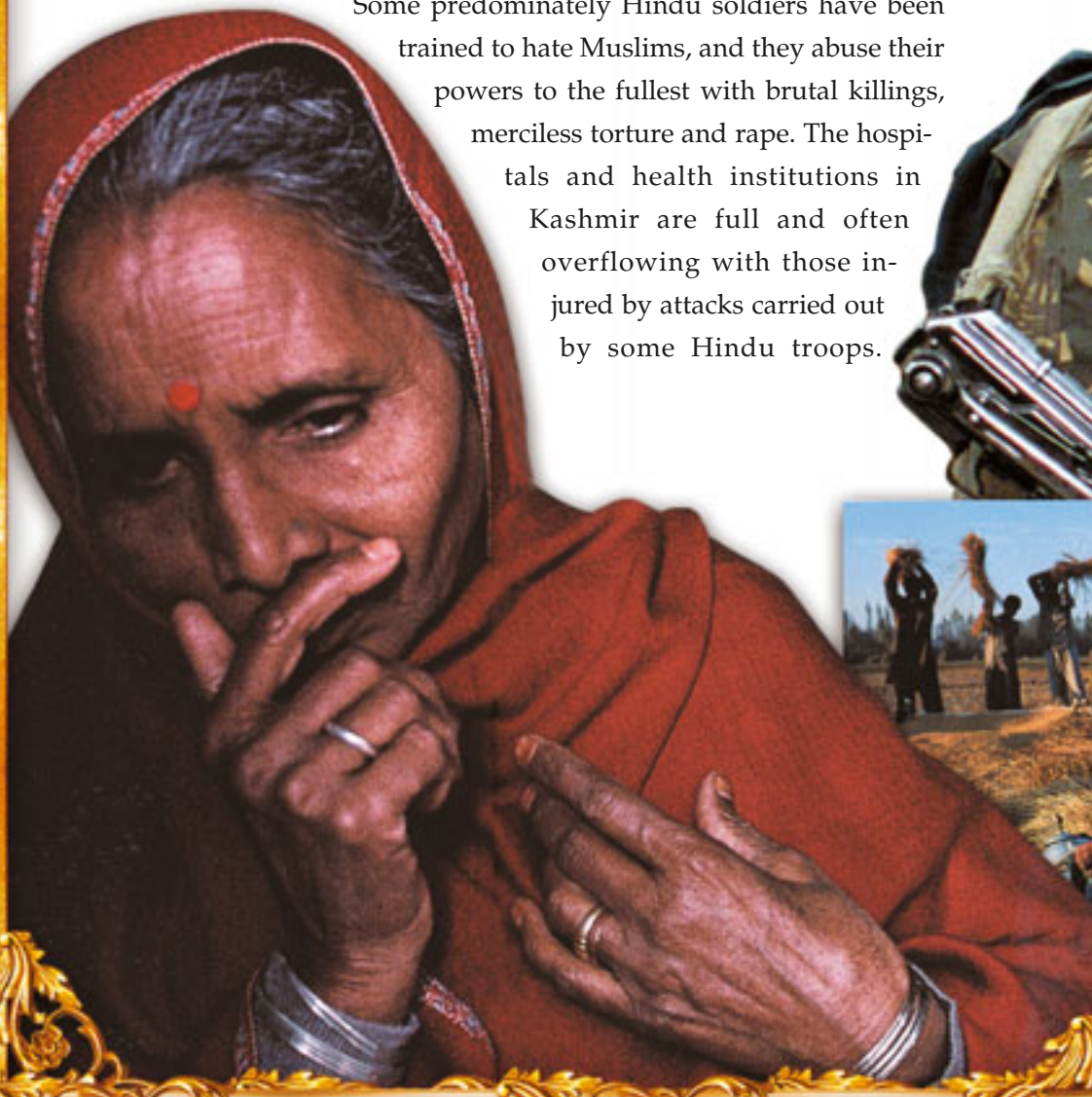
controlled. The Kashmiri population seeks either to become an independent Muslim nation or wishes to merge with Pakistan. For decades they have been forced to live with an economic embargo, violence, unjustified arrests, torture and bombings.

The Indian subcontinent was under British colonial administration until after the end of the Second World War. When the colonial powers withdrew from the area, Indian Muslims sought their own independent country and founded Pakistan in 1947. Pakistan and India agreed on a population exchange and many Muslims subsequently migrated from India to Pakistan. However, India managed to keep the predominantly Muslim district of Jammu-Kashmir within its control by means of various political intrigues and the support of the British and ever since, the Kashmiri people live under the oppression of radical Hindus.

To begin with, India opposed the formation of an independent Muslim state, which is why they were frustrated by the founding of the Pakistani nation. Kashmir became the central issue between the two governments. Two wars were fought over the issue of Kashmir, but the problem remains unresolved. At present, one part of Kashmir is under Pakistani administration (called Free Kashmir), but most of it remains under Indian occupation. The UN passed a resolution to let the Kashmiri people decide between India and Pakistan in a referendum, but the Indian government has thus far refused to comply. Understandably, Kashmiri freedom fighters have their organizational bases in Pakistan, which is why India is so hostile towards this country. India is lobbying international organizations to pressure Pakistan in this regard. India poses a great threat to Pakistan's security with its nuclear capability. Pakistan, a nuclear power herself, is constantly pressured by the international community, which turns a blind eye when it comes to India's nuclear arsenal.


Say: "Praise be to Allah and peace
be upon His servants whom He has
chosen." Is Allah better, or what
you associate with Him?
(Surat an-Naml: 59)

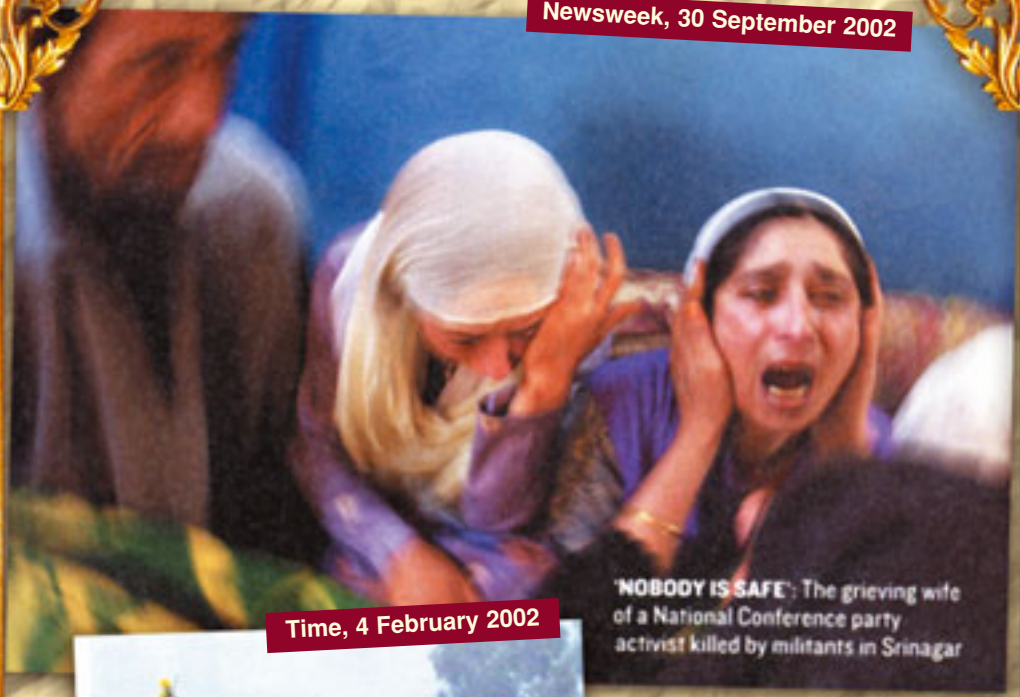
The part of Kashmir under Indian occupation covers an area of 138,935 km2 (53,64 square miles), and has a population of around nine to ten million, of which 80% is Muslim. The remainder is made up by Hindus, relocated there afterwards. The Indian government has half a million troops in the region and along the Pakistani border in order to maintain the status quo there. The army has been given a free hand to suppress the freedom fighters and to oppress the Muslim population. Some predominately Hindu soldiers have been trained to hate Muslims, and they abuse their powers to the fullest with brutal killings, merciless torture and rape. The hospitals and health institutions in Kashmir are full and often overflowing with those injured by attacks carried out by some Hindu troops.



For decades the people of Kashmir have faced economic embargoes, acts of violence, unjustified arrests, torture and bombings.



Newsweek, 30 September 2002



'NOBODY IS SAFE': The grieving wife of a National Conference party activist killed by militants in Srinagar

Time, 4 February 2002



ON GUARD

An Indian soldier patrols the India-Pakistan border, where tensions over disputed Kashmir remain high

Tens of thousands of Kashmiris were martyred in three terrible massacres perpetrated by Indian forces in 1947, 1965 and 1971. Even today, Kashmiris spend every moment of their lives under the control of Hindu security forces. The above report in *Newsweek* shows a Muslim woman whose husband was killed by Hindu militants.

According to a joint report by the human rights organizations Asia Watch and Physicians for Human Rights, the rape policy of the Indian administration towards Muslim women works as follows:

> *«As the conflict in Kashmir enters its fourth year, central and state authorities have done little to stop the widespread practice of rape by Indian security forces in Kashmir. Indeed, when confronted with the evidence of rape, time and again the authorities have attempted to impugn the integrity of the witnesses, discredit the testimony of physicians or simply deny the charges everything except order a full inquiry and prosecute those responsible for rape. …*
>
> *Since January 1990, rape by Indian occupation forces has become more frequent. Rape most often occurs during crackdowns, cordon and search operations during which men are held for identification in parks or schoolyards while security forces search their homes. In raping them, the security forces are attempting to punish and humiliate the entire community. …*
>
> *The security forces have entered hospitals, beaten patients, hit doctors, entered operating theaters, smashed instruments. Ambulances have been attacked, curfew passes are confiscated. …*
>
> *The most common torture methods are severe beatings, sometimes while the victim is hung upside down, and electric shocks."*[101]

The Kashmiri Muslims have resisted the Indian administration and fought to gain their independence since 1947. The Indian forces have committed large scale genocide on three occasions; in 1947, 1965 and 1971 in order to break the resistance. Tens of thousands of Kashmiri Muslims have been martyred, and more than 4,000 women have been raped or otherwise tortured. Schools providing religious education have been closed.[102] The worst ever assimilation and persecution campaign began in 1990. People have been wrongfully apprehended and tortured to death. Houses have been torched, defenseless people have been violently oppressed, and schools and newspapers have been shut down. A



Yeni Asya, 1 February 2003
A bleeding wound: Kashmir

Kanayan bir yara: Keşmir

Dünya medyasının Irak'a odaklandığı bir dezenformasyon ortamında, yarım asrı aşkındır devam eden Keşmir probleminin kanayan bir yara olduğunu belirten Mübâliğ Takir Şah, unutulan ve kasten unuttu-rulan Keşmir meselesinin dünya kamuoyunun gündemine getirilmesinin önemine dikkat çekiyor.

Yeni Şafak, 23 September 2002
80 thousand martyr in Kashmir

Keşmir'de 80 bin şehid

Radikal, 26 December 2001
An air of war has settled in Asia

Asya'ya savaş kokusu sindi

Akit, 22 September 2000
Kashmir is bleeding

Yeşil ülke Müslüman kanıyla kızıla boyandı

Keşmir kan ağlıyor

Yeni Mesaj, 4 January 2000
Kashmir is under fire

Keşmir ateş altında

Hindistan ve Pakistan birliklerinin önceki gece Keşmir'in güneyinde karşılıklı havan topu ateşi sırasında bir kadın

Milli Gazete, 22 January 2002
Muslim massacre in Kashmir

Keşmir'de Müslüman kıyımı

■ Müslüman bir ailenin 4'ü çocuk 10 ferdini katlettiler

CAMMU / Hindistan'ın Cammu Keşmir bölgesinde silahlı kişiler, din yaptıkları saldırıda, bir Müslüman ailenin 10 ferdini öldürdü.

Polis, Pakistan sınırı yakınında Müslüman nüfusun yoğun olduğu dağlık Poonch bölgesindeki Mendhar'da düzenlenen saldırıda ölenlerden 4'ünün çocuk olduğunu açıkladı.

Cammu Keşmir'in kışlık başkenti Cammu'da bir polis, olayla ilgili ayrıntıların beklendiğini, yetkililerin saldırı bölgesine gittiğini söyledi.

Hindistan'ın işgali altındaki Cammu Keşmir'de şimdiye kadar 30 binden fazla insan öldü.

Yeni Delhi yönetimi Pakistan'ı Cammu Keşmir'deki bağımsızlık yanlılarına destek vermekle suçlarken, Pakistan, Keşmir halkına sadece manevi ve siyasi destek verdiğini savunuyor.



Crescent Int., 1 September 2001

Realities of Indian policy in Kashmir expose the hypocrisy of their politics

Crescent Int., 1 February 2003

Kashmiri Muslims continuing to suffer for their resistance to Indian rule

Weekly Mirror Int., 28 November 2001

15 Killed In Occupied Kashmir Violence

SRINAGAR - Fifteen people including five security men have died in shootouts in India's strife-torn Kashmir region, police said. A senior police official told Reuters that two policemen, one soldier of the paramilitary Indo-Tibetan Border Police (ITBP) and a civilian were killed and four others wounded when the guerrillas attacked a security patrol near the Jawahar Tunnel.

"The incident took place on the eastern Srinagar side of the tunnel in which four people were killed, besides four others injured,"

Two separate reports in Crescent magazine, one titled "Realities of Indian policy in Kashmir expose the hypocrisy of their politics" and the other "Kashmiri Muslims continuing to suffer for their resistance to Indian rule" detailed the suffering inflicted on the people of Kashmir by the Indian government. Weekly Mirror International carried a report under the headline "15 killed in occupied Kashmir." Tens of thousands of innocent people have lost their lives in attacks on Muslims in Kashmir, and rape has become a systematic policy of the Indian police. For around half a century the people of Kashmir have not spent one single day in peace and security. Yet all they want is to be able to live freely according to their faith, raise their children in security, and to sleep safely in their beds at night.

report by the British newspaper *The Independent* describes the systematic torture implemented in Kashmir as follows:

> *"Young girls were not being raped systematically by entire (Indian) army units rather than by a single soldier as before. Girls are taken to soldier's camps and held naked in their tents for days on end. Many never return home. ..Women are strung up naked from trees and their breasts lacerated with knives, as the (Indian) soldiers tell them that their breasts will never give milk again to a newborn militant. Women are raped in front of their husbands and children, or paraded naked through villages and beaten on the breasts."*[103]

Nor have they been content with perpetrating armed assaults or torture against Muslims. Dams built for farm irrigation have been used to harm Muslims too. They let the dams fill with water and then open the release gates during the monsoon rains and thereby flood lower Kashmir (or free Kashmir), and parts of Pakistan further downstream, causing the death of thousands of people and great environmental damage. The following article by *The Toronto Star* sums up the suffering the Kashmiri people have had to endure:

> *"Subjugated, humiliated, tortured and killed by the 650,000-strong Indian army, the people of Kashmir have been living through sheer Hell for more than a year, the result of an increasingly brutal campaign of state repression. India hides behind its carefully-crafted image of "non-violence" and presents itself in international forums as a model of democracy and pluralism. Yet, it is unable to stand up to the scrutiny of even its admirers. All journalists, especially television crews, were expelled from the Valley. With no intrusive cameras to record the brutalities of the Indian forces, the world has been kept largely in the dark…"*[104]

In October 1993, a massive attack was launched against the Hazratbal Mosque in the Kashmiri capital Sirinagar. The Hazratbal Mosque, claimed to be the military command center of Muslim forces by the Indian authorities, was besieged for an entire month. During the

siege more than 100 people were killed and 300 innocent people were arrested. The town's electricity and water supplies were cut off during the siege.

Besides the state terror by the Indian administration in Kashmir, there is also a serious refugee problem. Sefer Turan, a reporter for the Turkish TV station *Channel 7*, visited the refugee camps in Kashmir and the following are some of his impressions from the situation he encountered there:

> *The Ambor refugee camp was created in 1990 to house the Kashmiri people fleeing from Jammu Kashmir. Living standards here are way below normal. People are crammed into tiny mud huts. We entered a single room hut where we found one bed. When we asked how many people lived here we were told: "nine". There are 214 families, or 1,110 people living in this camp. To see that the living standards here are extremely poor, it is sufficient to enter just one hut. Most huts have two rooms and a few useless pots and pans, one or two beds, but you would need a thousand witnesses to make believe that these are actually beds. In the corner sits a mother with her baby in her arms. We see a small fire with a little pot on it. There is no sign anywhere of dry or fresh food, and I was too embarrassed to see what is boiling in the pots. In none of the tents we entered did I see food or (proper) beds. In one of the tents we saw a small piece of white worn fabric on the floor. This must have been a bed! I asked how many people lived in this tent and I was told eleven people. Outside there was the odd tin pot boiling on a little fire.*[105]

The way this policy of oppression has been able to persist so easily for over fifty years in Kashmir is to do with the support it receives from certain anti-Islamic, materialist and Darwinist circles in the West. The Kashmiri Muslims have been pressured to surrender to radical Hindus by the UN's unenforceable resolutions. On the whole, the great majority of the world's media simply ignores the tyranny in Kashmir, but when they choose to remember Kashmir, the situation is usually presented in

The policy of systematic assimilation and genocide aimed at the Muslims of Kashmir by Hindu forces is taking place before the eyes of the world. Every day, more young people are martyred, women are raped, mosques torn down…





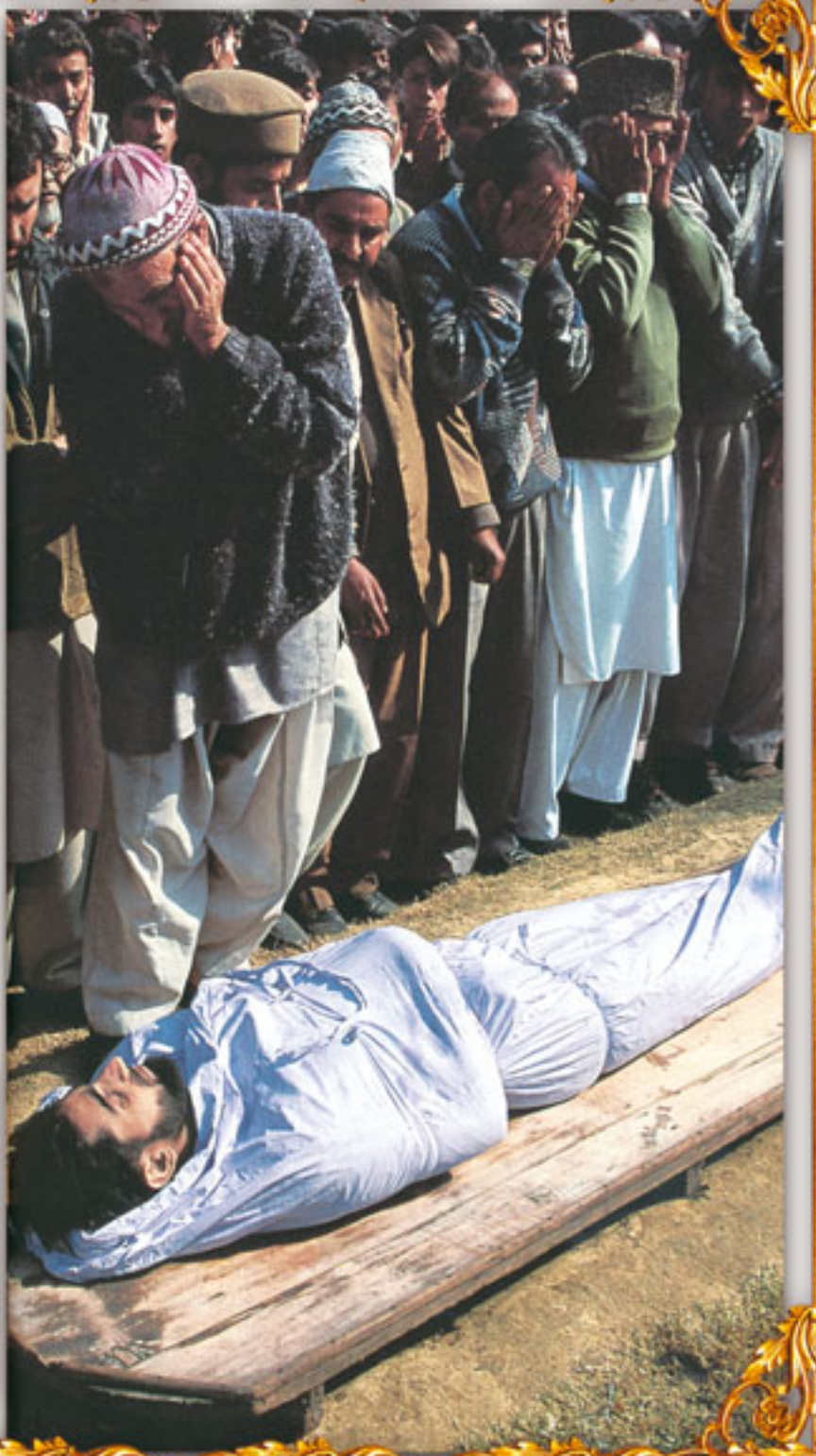












Cumhuriyet, 28 February 2002
Rage can not be overcome

Hindistan ve Pakistan'da din ve mezhep köken

Nefretin önü alınamıyor

Dış Haberler Servisi - ABD'nin Afganistan harekâtından sonra gözlerini yeniden çevirdiği Hindistan ve Pakistan'da mezhep ve dine dayalı şiddet olayları tırmanışa geçti. İki komşu, Keşmir yönünden nük nük savaşın eşiğine gelirken Hindistan'da Hindularla Müslümanlar, Pakistan'da da Şiilerle Sünniler arasındaki gerginlik büyüyor.

Hindistan'ın Gucarat eyaletinde, aşırı sağcı Hint eylemcileri taşıyan bir trenin yakılması sonucu 55 kişi öldü, 88 kişi yaralandı. Ölenlerden 14'ünün çocuk, 25'inin de kadın olduğunu belirtildi.

Yetkililer, trende bulunanların Ayodhya kentinde 10 yıl önce yıkılan bir caminin kalıntıları üzerine tapınak kurmak isteyen ve çoğunluğunu sertlik yanlısı sağcı Hindu'nun oluşturduğu aşırı Hint Konseyi üyeleri olduğunu açıkladı. Times gazetesinin haberine göre, Gucarat eyaletinin başkenti Gandhinagar'da bir grup Müslüman'ın, Ayodhya'dan dönen Hindu'ları taşıyan trene ateş açtığı belirtiliyor.

► Hindistan'da yıkılan cami kalıntıları üzerine tapınak inşa etmek isteyen sertlik yanlısı Hinduları taşıyan tren ateşe verildi, 14'ü çocuk 55 kişi öldü. Pakistan'da Sünniler, Şiilere ait camiyi yaktı. Sonuç 11 ölü, 14 yaralı.

leri Bakanı **L.K. Advani** ise hükümetin yasalara karşı gelenlere müdahale edeceğini söyledi.

Dünya Hint Konseyi, ülkenin kuzeyindeki Ayodhya'da hem Hintliler hem de Müslümanlar tarafından kutsal sayılan tartışmalı bölgede 1992'de yıkılan 16. yüzyıla ait caminin kalıntıları üzerine tapınak inşa etmek istiyor. Ayodhya'daki 16. yüzyıla ait Babri Camii'nin, bir Hintli çete tarafından yıkılmasından sonra Müslümanlarla Hindular arasında çıkan kanlı çatışmalarda 2 binden fazla kişi ölmüştü.

Pakistan'da camiye saldırı

Pakistan'ın Ravalpindi kentinde önceki gün Şiilere ait bir camiye düzenlenen saldırıda 11 kişi yaşamını yitirdi, 14 kişi yaralandı. Olayla ilgili olarak 15 kişi gözaltına alındı. Polis kaynakları, olayla ilgili olarak önceki gece sorguya alınanların yasadışı Sipa-i Sahaba Pakistan adlı Sünni gruba üye olduğunu belirtti.

Nüfusunun yüzde 20'sini Şiilerin oluşturduğu Pakistan'da faaliyet gösteren Sipa-i Sahaba Pakistan, Devlet Başkanı **Pervez Müşerref** tarafından yasadışı ilan edilen 5 gruptan biri.

Şiiler, caminin yakılmasına büyük tepki göstererek İslamabad yönetiminin gerginliği önlemekte yetersiz kaldığını düşünüyor.

Şii hareketinin lideri **Allama Sakid Nakvi**, **"Bu olay, Müşerref'e**, 'terörle mücadelede sağduyulu davranmak intese bile, bunu kolaylıkla başaramayacağı' **mesajını vermiştir"** dedi.

Milli Gazete, 29 January 2002
India poured bombs over the civilians

Hindistan sivillere bomba yağdırdı





MEZHEP KAVGASI - Pakistan'da sakilerdin öldürüle cenazesinde yakınları gözyaşlarına boğuldu. (Fotoğraflar: AP)

Evrensel, 5 March 2002
The Indian police's hand is also bloody

Hint polisinin de eli kanlı

Yetkililer, batıdaki Gucarat eyaletini saran yangını önlemek için pek az şey yaptılar. Bunun nedeni beceriksizlik değildi; Müslüman komşularını yakmakta olan çetelerin önyargılarını onlar da paylaşmaktaydı çünkü.

Hint polisi, çeteleri durdurmak için hiç çaba harcamadı. Hatta bazı yerlerde, onlara katılarak, Müslüman halka ateş açtı.

Luke Harding

Yeni Mesaj, 13 June 2001
The Indian police attacked a mosque

Hindu polisi camiye saldırdı

Hindistan'ın Cammu Keşmir eyaletinde, bir camiyi koruttan bilinen güçleriyle camiyi savunan müslümanlar arasında çıkan çatışmada 1 polisle 6 müslüman öldü. Polis, 24 saatten uzun süren çatışmanın, eyaletin yazlık başkenti Srinagar'ın güneyindeki Şangus'ta bulunan camide çıktığını bildirdi.

Güvenlik güçlerinin, camiyi, polisin ahlığı bir ihbar üzerine Pazar günü kuşattığı kaydedildi. Cammu-Keşmir'de ondan fazla örgüt, eyaletin bağımsızlığı ya da Pakistan ile birleşmesi için güvenlik güçlerine karşı savaşıyor.

Yeni Şafak, 2 March 2002
Hindu terrorism

HİNDU TERÖRİZMİ

Hindu-müslüman çatışması kontrolden çıktı. Fanatik Hindular 300 kişiyi öldürdü. Müslümanlara ait yüzlerce ev, işyeri ve araç ateşe verildi. Binlerce müslüman kaçıyor.

DEVLET HİNDULARI KORUYOR

ŞİDDETİN 10 YILLIK

Yeni Şafak, 5 March 2002
The world is watching the atrocity

STOP THE HINDO TERRORISM

Müslümanlar, İslam dünyasına acil yardım çağrısı yapıyor.

Kırsal kesimlerde ölü sayısı çok daha fazla.

Dünya vahşeti seyrediyor

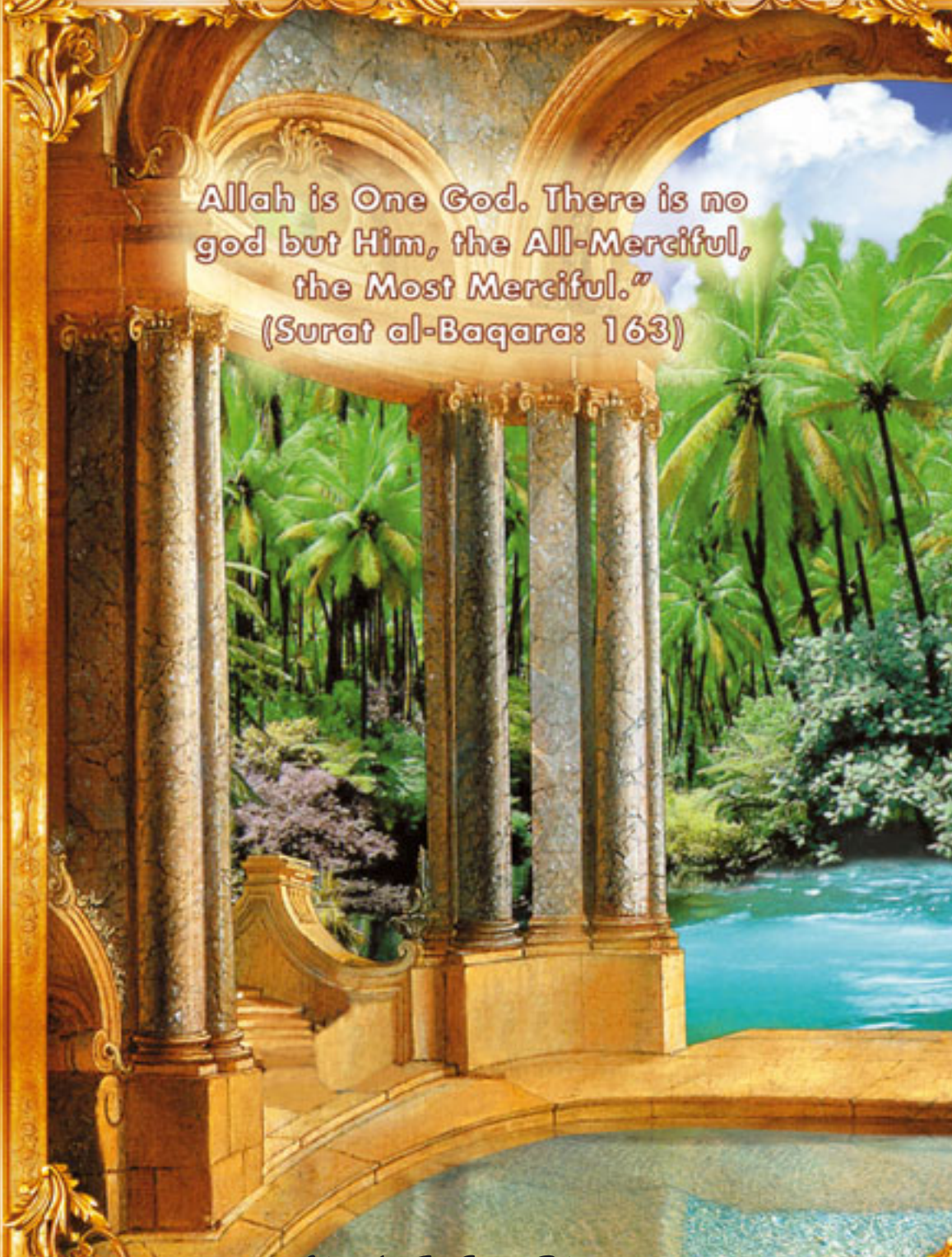
Hindistan'ın Gucarat eyaletinde Hindular'ın Müslümanlar'a yönelik saldırıları 800'e yükselirken, bu nüfus artmasından korkuluyor.

Ortadoğu, 3 March 2002
They are still pouring the blood of Muslims

Hâlâ Müslüman kanı akıtıyorlar

Hindistan'da kan durmuyor. Din çatışmasına dönüşen olaylar durdurulamazken, bir köye yapılan yeni saldırıda, ev ve dükkânların ateşe verildiği, buralarda mahsur kalan 27 kişinin yanarak öldüğü belirtildi

Başbakan Vajpayi: Bu bir kara lekedir


Allah is One God. There is no
god but Him, the All-Merciful,
the Most Merciful."
(Surat al-Baqara: 163)



a biased fashion with comments like: **"***An uprising in an Indian district has been suppressed"*. For instance, *The New York Times* published an article on the 22nd of January, 1990 in which Pakistan was accused of supporting Muslim rebel groups in India, thereby **"destabilizing the country"**. Pakistan protested.[106] Certain western media groups frequently publish such biased views.

In recent years, the oppression and assimilation campaign aimed against the Muslim population of Kashmir has intensified. Fanatical Hindu movements seeking to exterminate the Muslim population in Kashmir, as well as in the rest of India, has been demonstrated by their involvement in the destruction of the Babur Mosque, and as the Ahmedabad massacre in Gujarat proved. The tyranny to which the Kashmiri Muslims are exposed to is indescribable. However, as always, what is happening in Kashmir and around the region is portrayed through various propaganda tactics in an altogether different light for public consumption. The tyranny, torture and oppression of people are concealed, and the whole world remains silent about it. The world acts as if the reports by human rights organizations simply do not exist. The only thing the Kashmiri people, terrorized for over fifty years by India, wish for, is to be able to live in a secure environment in which they can practice their faith without obstruction, where they are not violated because of their faith, and where they can raise their children in peace and security.

Second Book

OTHER FAR EASTERN RELIGIONS

When discussing Far Eastern religions, one cannot help but think of paganism. In the first part of the book we examined Hinduism, by far the oldest and with more adherents than any other eastern religion. It is possible to see evidences of the superstitious Hindu religion in the western world, and many other cultures bear some of its signs as well. The period of British colonial rule in India played a key role in its spread in the west. However, there are many other perverse beliefs in the east, like Jainism, Buddhism, Sikhism, Shintoism, Confucianism and Taoism. These superstitious religions are subdivided within themselves into different sects and vary from country to country.

The most striking feature of the superstitious Far Eastern religions is there denial of Allah's absolute existence based on paganism. Each has its own false gods and idols to which they bow down. Their adherents regard their stone idols as higher than anything else on earth, and spend their lives serving them, unaware of the utter ignorance they are in. They idolize their ancestors, cows, monkeys, mice or even trees in their terribly ignorant state. Allah reveals the situation of such people in Surah Fatir as follows:

> **If you call on them they will not hear your call, and were they to hear, they would not respond to you. On the Day of Resurrection they will reject your making associates of them. No one can inform you like One Who is All-aware. (Surah Fatir: 14)**

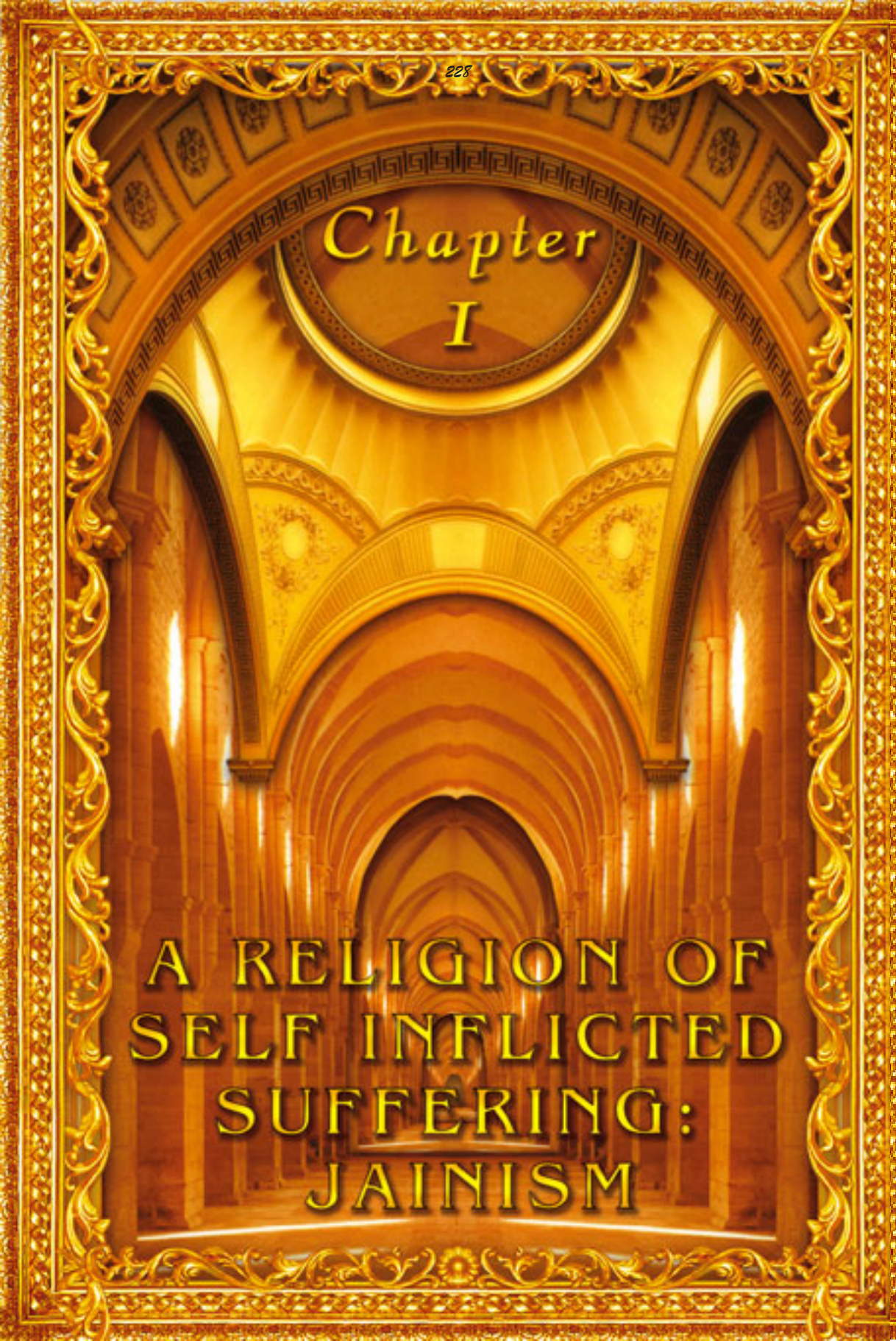
This chapter will examine the flaws inherent in these superstitious religions and remind their followers of the existence of erroneous practices in their lives. They will also be called on to abandon these perverse beliefs and to submit to Allah.

Another subject that will be looked at is the fact of certain circles' propaganda efforts in the present era to disseminate these false religions, portrayed as the supposed path to salvation.

These false religions have been created by materialist / atheist circles in order to eradicate religious morality's positive and beautiful influence on society, and to mislead people in search of "spirituality" with beliefs opposing faith in Allah. It is the duty of believers to warn people of the dangers of these movements. Our Lord says:

Say: "Who is the Lord of the heavens and the earth?" Say: "Allah." Say: "So why have you taken protectors apart from Him who possess no power to help or harm themselves?" Say: "Are the blind and seeing equal? Or are darkness and light the same? Or have they assigned partners to Allah Who create as He creates, so that all creating seems the same to them?" Say: "Allah is the Creator of everything. He is the One, the All-Conquering." (Surat ar-Ra'd: 16)





Chapter I

A RELIGION OF SELF INFLICTED SUFFERING: JAINISM

The oppressive social order extant in the superstitious Hindu religion which privileges the upper castes whilst enslaving the lower ones, the cruelty it inflicts on women, and the pervert ritual sacrifices to idols have caused great concern to some Hindus throughout their history. Many new regional religious movements that rejected the more oppressive aspects of Hinduism emerged as a consequence and they introduced new practices and teachings in their stead. **Siddhartha Gautama** founded Buddhism in the 6th century BC. It emerged from Hinduism but with some major differences. Gautama utterly rejected the caste system but introduced asceticism and preserved the false doctrines of karma and reincarnation . (See: *Islam and Buddhism*, Harun Yahya, Published by Abdul Naeem for Islamic Book Service)

Jainism is another religion that emerged around the same time with striking similarities to Buddhism.

Jainism is a superstitious movement that rejects the caste system which divides society into different classes and forms a major part of Hindu doctrine but has its own erroneous and pagan beliefs. It is not possible to ascertain with any accuracy the period in which Jainism's traditions emerged, but research reveals that it is an ancient religion that became established in India around 500 BC. All of Jainism's principles of belief were amalgamated at this time by Nataputta Vardhamana or Mahavira, a man belonging to the warrior caste. He formulated this new superstitious religion, founded its own temples, initiated male and female monks and encouraged asceticism. Jainism is considered to be one of the oldest superstitious beliefs in India and has a worldwide following of approximately four million people.

JAINISM IS AN ATHEIST BELIEF THAT REJECTS THE ABSOLUTE EXISTENCE OF ALLAH

One of the most significant aspects of Jainism is its rejection of Almighty Allah. It is atheistic. Jainism suggests that the universe is eternal and that existence has neither a beginning nor end, on the basis of no rational or scientific evidence whatsoever. According to their mistaken way of thinking, every being and all things are eternal, too, and the universe merely functions by its own supposed cosmic laws. This definition also forms the basis of all materialistic teachings, and has been put forward by irreligious societies ever since the most ancient times. In the 20th century this materialistic interpretation has been disproved by science. The Big Bang theory exposed the idea of an eternal universe as wrong and proved that the universe was created from nothingness.

The Big Bang theory revealed that the universe was born fifteen billion years ago in an enormous explosion. All matter existing in the universe was non existent before. That the universe was consciously shaped in each of its phases is another fact revealed by the Big Bang theory. Even without the knowledge of these scientific facts, Allah's infinite power and might is easily recognizable. The flawless order of the universe, the unique structures in animal life and nature, and the perfection of the human body and many other factors form the evidence for Allah's superior power of creation. Allah is All-present and All-encompassing; all beings are in submission to Him. Our infinitely powerful Lord has created the entire universe in which we live, all people who have ever existed on the face of the earth and everything else out of nothing. Allah says:

Does not man see that We created him from a drop yet there he is, an open antagonist! He makes likenesses of Us and forgets his own

creation, saying, "Who will give life to bones when they are decayed?" Say "He Who made them in the first place will bring them back to life. He has total knowledge of each created thing; He Who produces fire for you from green trees so that you use them to light your fires." Does He Who created the heavens and earth not have the power to create the same again? Yes indeed! He is the Creator, the All-Knowing. His command when He desires a thing is just to say to it, "Be!" and it is. Glory be to Him Who has the Dominion of all things in His Hand. To Him you will be returned. (Surah Ya Sin: 77-83)

Jainism is an atheistic religion that still contains many idolatrous beliefs originating in Hinduism. Temples of this faith, or its shrines in people's homes contain many of the imaginary deities of Hinduism in the form of idols or pictures. When Jains pay their respects to these idols they offer them food, flowers and incense. People irrationally pray to them for a long life, wealth or male children in the hope that they will help them without ever pondering that these idols cannot hear them, see them or answer their prayers. Allah describes the situation of such people who worship stone or wooden idols as follows:

After he left, Moses's people took the Calf (for worship) made from their ornaments, a form which made a lowing sound. Did they not see that it could not speak to them or guide them to any way? They adopted it and so they were wrongdoers. (Surat al-A'raf: 148)

Could they not see that it did not reply to them and that it possessed no power to either harm or benefit them? (Surah Ta Ha: 89)

Do they have legs they can walk with? Do they have hands they can grasp with? Do they have eyes they can see with? Do they have ears they can hear with? Say: "Call on your partner-gods and try all your wiles against me and grant me no reprieve." (Surat al-A'raf: 195)



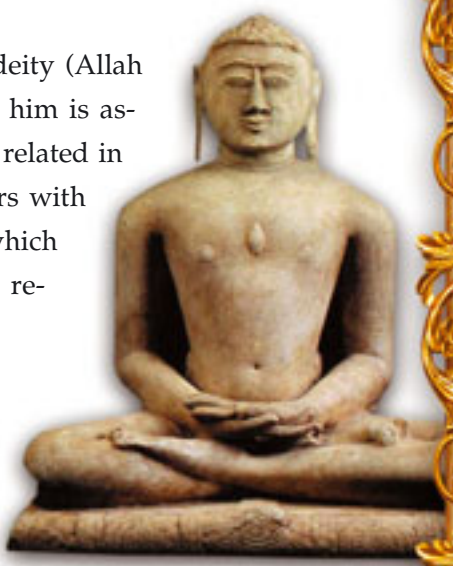
Jains make offerings to their idols of fresh coconuts, bananas and various other fruits, while condemning themselves to hunger and poverty. Jainism claims to be the elimination of all of a person's desires, but is actually a system of oppression.

JAINISM'S ERRONEOUS BELIEFS THAT IDOLIZE MEN

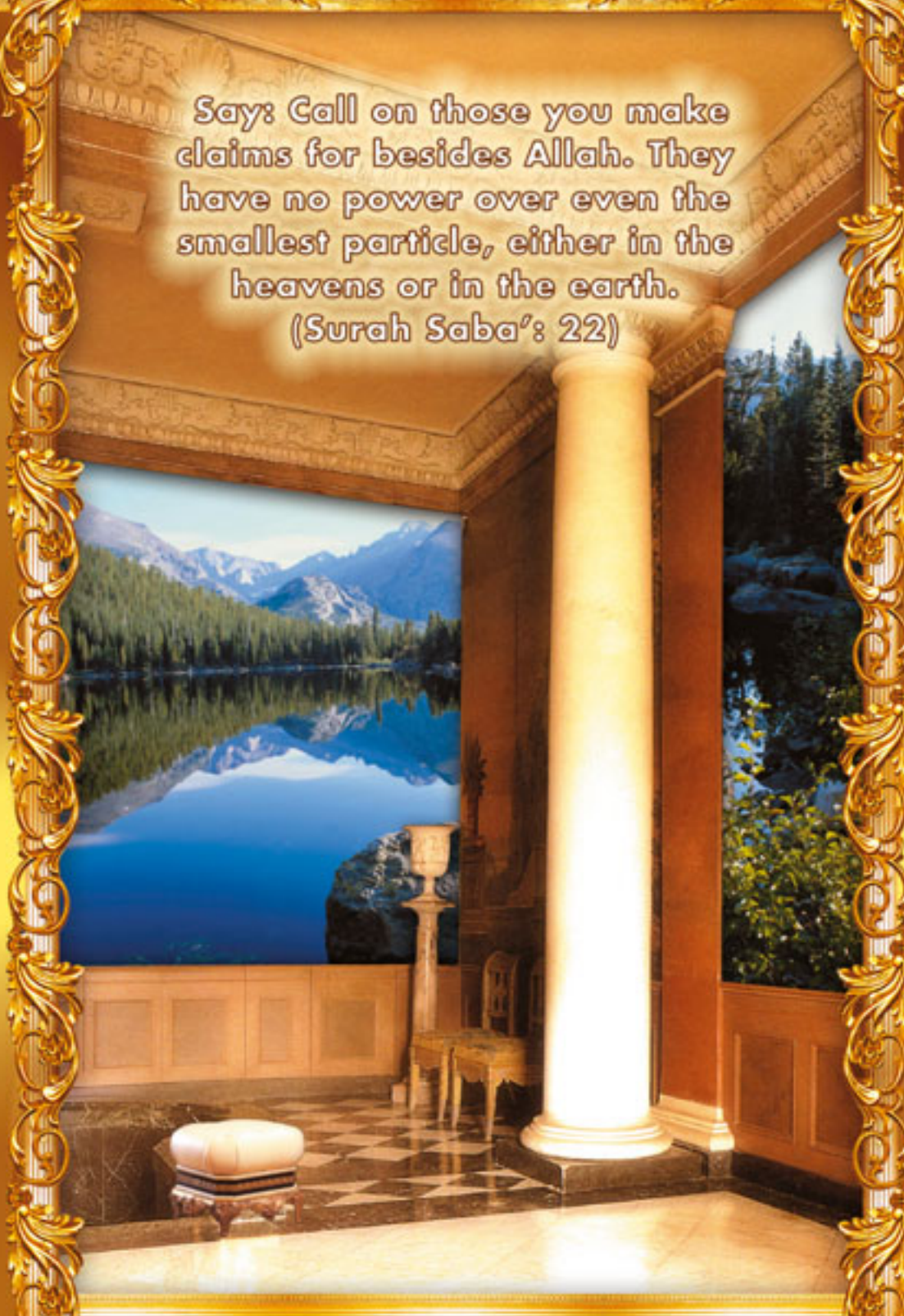
Jainism rejects the existence of Allah but prescribes perverse beliefs in other deities such as the perfect man. However, to attain this perfection, a man must go through a lengthy education process, he must diligently practice all the required rituals, must inflict sufferings on himself, exist for years in absolute destitution or even commit suicide if necessary. According to the false beliefs of Jainism, a person who succeeds in all this will break the imaginary cycle of life and death, free his soul and attain a higher state of being. *(The word Jain comes from the word Jina, meaning conquest. The word Jina is used in the sense of a conquest of the spiritual world.)*

In Jainism, a person who attains this state is termed to be a Tirhankara, a deity (surely Allah is beyond that). The aim of millions of Jains, who regard this superstitious faith as an absolute reality, is to attain that rank. It is believed that there have been 24 Tirhankaras thus far and that Mahavira, regarded as the founder of Jainism, was the 24th. Tirhankaras in the superstitious Jain religion are believed to be above everything else; the Jains revere them in rituals and seek help from them.

In reality, to regard a man as a deity (Allah forbid), to worship him or to pray to him is ascribing partners to Allah. As we have related in previous chapters, to associate partners with Allah or His attributes is a great sin which Allah says He will not forgive. Allah re-



The so-called deities the Mahavira occupy an important place in perverted Jainist rituals.


Say: Call on those you make
claims for besides Allah. They
have no power over even the
smallest particle, either in the
heavens or in the earth.
(Surah Saba': 22)

veals the situation of people who acquire idols besides Him in the following verse:

> **But they have adopted gods apart from Him which do not create anything but are themselves created. They have no power to harm or help themselves. They have no power over death or life or resurrection. (Surat al-Furqan: 3)**

Allah has created man from nothing and no man has either will nor power by Himself. Man speaks by Allah's will and lives with the life He gives him. No human being has the power to move in the slightest way outside of his Allah-given destiny, and every man will die at the time and place determined by Allah without being able to move this appointed time forward or backward by so much as a second. For this reason it is a grave mistake and an act of ignorance to idolize man, who has been created on earth with weaknesses and desires. Allah reveals that He created man weak: **"... Man was created weak."** (Surat an-Nisa': 28) The following are other verses pertaining to man's nature:

> **O man! what has deluded you in respect of your Noble Lord? He Who created you and formed you and proportioned you and assembled you in whatever way He willed. Yes indeed! But still you deny the Judgment. (Surat al-Infitar: 6-9)**

The purpose of man's creation is revealed in the Surat adh-Dhariyat:

> **I only created jinn and man to worship Me. (Surat adh-Dhariyat: 56)**

Therefore, the path suggested by Jains for the supposed salvation of the human soul is an extremely erroneous one. And it is most certainly not a means to happiness. In addition, it is a huge perversion to make claims about humans achieving divinity together with alleged salvation. The purpose of man is to serve his Lord and he can expect to win Allah's good pleasure, mercy and paradise.

SCHIZOPHRENIC PRACTICES UNDER THE GUISE OF NOT HARMING LIFE

Like all other pagan Far Eastern religions, Jainism too adopts reincarnation and karma as principles of faith. It is the aim of Jainism to break the cycle of karma and to attain the state of a higher existence. According to this faith, the only way of reaching this goal is absolute adherence to its rules. Fasting, abstinence of certain foods, total control over desires, temptations and cravings, solitary retreat and enduring maximum suffering are some of these.

The fundamental principle in Jainism is "Ahimsa" which means "non-violence, not to cause pain and not to harm life". It is the most important principle taught at Jainism's schools and forms the guiding principle of its adherents. Ahimsa has influenced all schools of thought in India and forms part of all its religions.

Because of this principle Jains try not to cause harm to any living being. When this principle is first encountered it may well appear to be a very noble principle, but it has become a source of schizophrenia for Jains. As they believe that every living being has a soul, albeit at different levels, animals, insects, plants and even microscopic forms of life are all included in the Ahimsa principle. It goes without saying that it is practically impossible to live without harming or killing at least some small forms of life which die when we breathe, drink or eat. Moreover, there are many microscopic beings everywhere we sit and sleep or even on the clothes we wear. The Jains take irrational, illogical and nonsensical precautions in this regard. For instance, they wear masks over their mouths in order not to kill any small creatures and they do not take any medications to kill viruses; it is forbidden in the superstitious Jain religion to use antibiotics or disinfectants, or to eat honey, fruit or meat. *The Catholic Encyclopaedia* writes the following on Ahimsa:

"The Jain ascetic allows himself to be bitten by gnats and mosquitoes rather than risk their destruction by brushing them away. … for example, in 1834 there existed in Kutch a temple hospital which supported 5000 rats…"[107]

Jain priests have even stricter rules governing their everyday lives. For instance, they do not eat at night as they think they might swallow some small insect or other living being, and in some sects of Jainism they can only eat once a day. Most Jain priests do not wear any clothes, preferring instead to go about totally naked; others wear a tiny loin-cloth. The reason behind this nakedness is that they do not want to



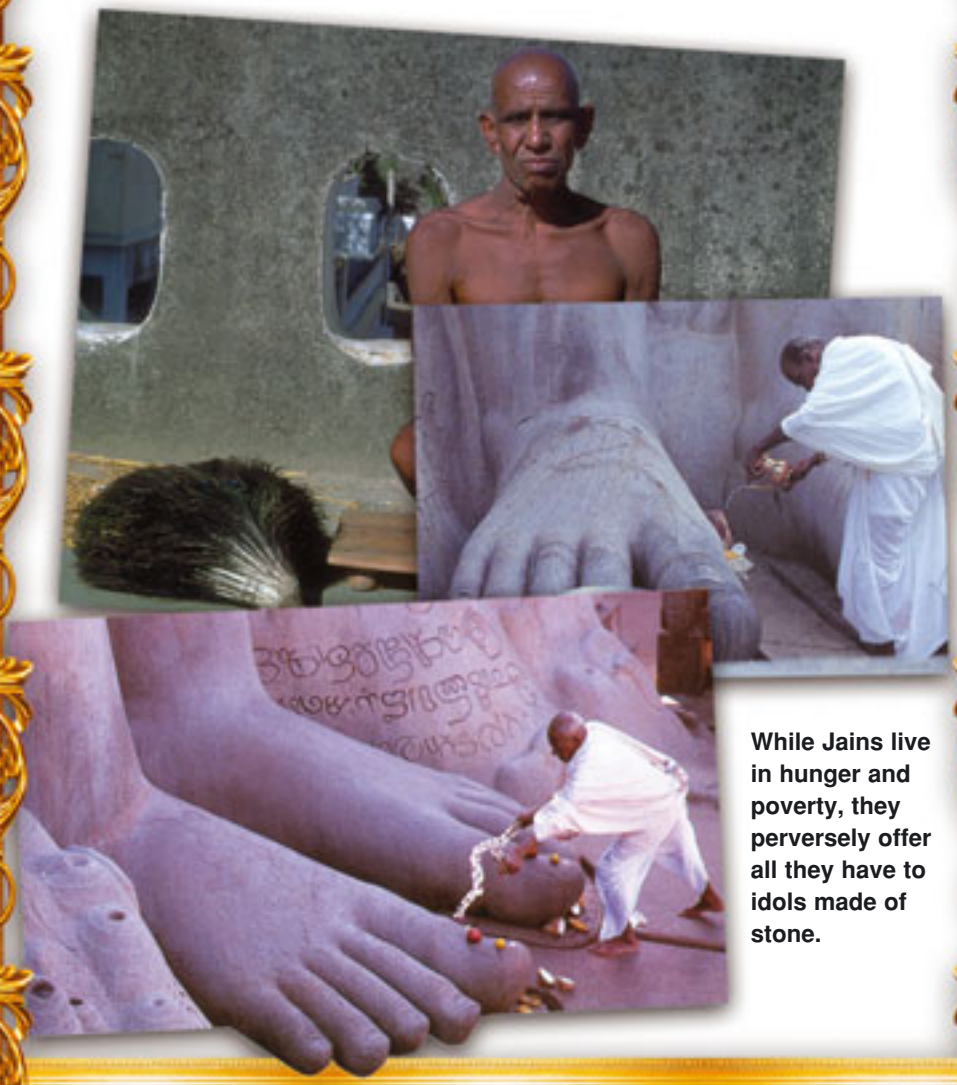
Jains believe that they can save their souls through superstitious practices, but in reality they are merely torturing themselves for nothing.

harm any creatures that might get in the creases of their garments. The Digambara sect, one of the oldest in Jainism, is particularly strict in this regard. The word means "heaven garment" and they wear no clothes at all. This means that they have to stay clear of all material things. These practices still continue and such Jains hardly ever leave their monasteries or temples. They cannot own property or marry. Jain monks believe that they should not even own clothing. This means that Jain priests' lives are spent in absolute destitution and hunger. They refrain from anything that is entertaining, comforting, pleasant or pleasurable, because their belief dictates the destruction of all their desires, to severe all ties with this life in a schizophrenic manner and simply to live a sad life. Jains believe that the more they suffer and the more they live in hunger and destitution, the quicker they will "free their souls". This however is not freedom, it is self inflicted torture. Such practices cannot free people but serve only to enslave them within an oppressive system. The claim that Jainism destroys all human desires is in reality a guise of a cruel and oppressive system.

Islam is wholly different to such superstitious beliefs. Allah has created the things in this life for people to benefit from them, to enjoy them and to be grateful for them. The beauty in nature, foods of different tastes and scents, fruits and vegetables are the gifts of Allah. A believer enjoys nice clothing or a tasty fruit and he is grateful to Allah for it. Allah reveals His gifts to mankind as follows:

> **And He created livestock. There is warmth for you in them, and various uses and some you eat. And there is beauty in them for you in the evening when you bring them home and in the morning when you drive them out to graze. They carry your loads to lands you would never reach except with great difficulty. Your Lord is All-Gentle, Most Merciful. And horses, mules and donkeys both to ride and for adornment. And He creates other things you do not know.**

The Way should lead to Allah, but there are those who deviate from it. If He had wished He could have guided every one of you. It is He Who sends down water from the sky. From it you drink and from it come the shrubs among which you graze your herds. And by it He makes crops grow for you and olives and dates and grapes and fruit of every kind. There is certainly a Sign in that for people who reflect. He has made night and day subservient to you, and the sun and moon and stars, all subject to His command. There are certain-



While Jains live in hunger and poverty, they perversely offer all they have to idols made of stone.

ly Signs in that for people who use their intellect. And also the things of varying colors He has created for you in the earth. There is certainly a Sign in that for people who pay heed. It is He Who made the sea subservient to you so that you can eat fresh flesh from it and bring out from it ornaments to wear. And you see the ships cleaving through it so that you can seek His bounty, and so that hopefully you will show thanks. He cast firmly embedded mountains on the earth so it would not move under you, and rivers and pathways so that hopefully you would be guided, and landmarks. And they are guided by the stars. Is He Who creates like him who does not create? So will you not pay heed? If you tried to number Allah's blessings, you could never count them. Allah is Ever-Forgiving, Most Merciful. (Surat an-Nahl: 5-18)

Allah has given countless things for people to make use of because He wants them benefit from them. Those who say that blessings made lawful by Allah are actually forbidden or, in other words, prevent people from enjoying them are on the wrong path. Allah reveals this fact:

Say: "Who has forbidden the fine clothing Allah has produced for His servants and the good kinds of provision?" Say: "On the Day of Resurrection such things will be exclusively for those who had faith during their life in the world." In this way We make the Signs clear for people who know. (Surat al-A'raf: 32)

As this verse suggests, superstitious Jain belief forbids most of Allah's gifts in an incomprehensible way. Jainism demands of people that they deny themselves all desires and wishes and commands them to inflict suffering and pain on themselves. It portrays the suffering of pain, hunger, cold and sickness as a supposed moral high ground and the followers of this superstitious religion come to enjoy sufferings in order to attain this supposed morality. This situation is the realization of the following verse:

Allah does not wrong people in any way; rather it is people who wrong themselves. (Surah Yunus: 44)

In reality what people are expected to do is to refrain from the few things that are forbidden to them and then enjoy all the rest of Allah's gifts in the purest and finest manner, not forgetting that it is our most gracious Lord Who provides these and to be grateful to Him. People should not unnecessarily deprive themselves of the beautiful things in life, nor should they crush their desires or cause themselves suffering. Allah reveals:

(Allah said,) "Those who follow the Messenger, the unlettered Prophet, whom they find written down with them in the Torah and the Gospel, commanding them to do right and forbidding them to do wrong, making good things lawful for them and bad things forbidden for them, relieving them of their heavy loads and the chains which were around them. Those who believe in him and honor him and help him, and follow the Light that has been sent down with him, they are the ones who are successful." (Surat al-A'raf: 157)

It is revealed in these verses that our Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) "**eased the burden and broke the chains of people**" and freed them from the pressures and prohibitions of their false beliefs.

The self-inflicted cruelty of Jainism is not just limited to destitution and hunger. A Jain, when physically incapacitated, or when desiring to supposedly "free" his soul has reached such a state where he can no longer abide by his vows, must die by starving himself happily to death, because according to Jainism, death by starvation is the alleged highest virtue. *The Catholic Encyclopaedia* explains this peculiar aspect of Jainism in the following way:

According to Jain ethics a monk who has practiced twelve years of severe as-



ceticism, or who has found after long trial that he cannot keep his lower nature in control, may hasten his end by self-destruction.[108]

As could be expected, the Jains' view of women is most unenlightened. The Digambara, one of the two main Jain sects, does not even regard women to be human, as it is believed that women cannot attain nirvana.[109] The Svetambara, the other sect, is less damning about women, but nevertheless considers them to be inferior beings.

To sum up, Jainism contains cruel beliefs that promote suicide in order to attain a status of divinity. Jainism commits many acts of sheer cruelty when condemning people to hunger, destitution, nakedness, inaction in the face of poisonous bites by insects, or when encouraging its adherents to refrain from taking antibiotics to kill infectious bacteria or the use of disinfectants when the need arises. Whereas Jainism claims to regard man as a potential deity, in reality it values him less than bacteria, condemning him to live in filth. It is an oppressive and perverse religion that forbids cleanliness, comfort and good food. Allah reveals the following about man's creation:

… Formed you, giving you the best of forms. And He is your final destination. (Surat at-Taghabun: 3)

It is He Who appointed you successors on the earth and raised some of you above others in rank so He could test you regarding what He has given you... (Surat al-An'am: 165)

When your Lord said to the angels, "I am putting an overlord on the earth,"… (Surat al-Baqara: 30)

We created you and then formed you and then We said to the angels, "Prostrate before Adam," and they prostrated–except for Iblis (satan). He was not among those who prostrated. He said, "What prevented you from prostrating when I commanded you to?" He replied, "I am better than him. You created me from fire and You created him from clay." He said, "Descend from Heaven. It is not

for you to be arrogant in it. So get out! You are one of the abased." (Surat al-A'raf: 11-13)

As revealed in these verses, Allah created mankind in the best way, designating them to be the beneficiaries of the world and providing them with all they ever need. In Surat al-Bayyina our Lord describes those who believe and perform good deed as **"the best of creatures".** (Surat al-Bayyina: 7)

CONCLUSION

The Jain community has preserved its pagan beliefs for 2500 years but was reformed to a great extent with the arrival of Islam on Indian soil.

Whereas Jains were oppressed by Hindu rule, they attained great freedoms during the reign of the Mogul emperor Ekber Shah. They were at liberty to practice their religion freely and to live as they wished by virtue of the environment of justice, compassion and peace delivered by the morality of Islam.[110] Living side by side with Muslims also gave them the opportunity to acquaint themselves with Islam which caused some fundamental changes to their beliefs. Many new Jain sects were formed influenced by the monotheistic beliefs central to Islam. They left idolatry for such beliefs. This influence is described in a book titled Jainism and Other Religions as follows:

"But the most prominent and lasting impact of Islam on the Jainas was in the field of their practice of idol-worship. Considering the strict opposition of the Muslims to idol-worship and their policy of destruction of idols, some Jaina thinkers like Lonka Shah began to show their inclination towards non-idolatry in Islam and ultimately it gave rise to the establishment of non-idolatrous sub-sects of Sthanakvasis among the Svetambara sect and of

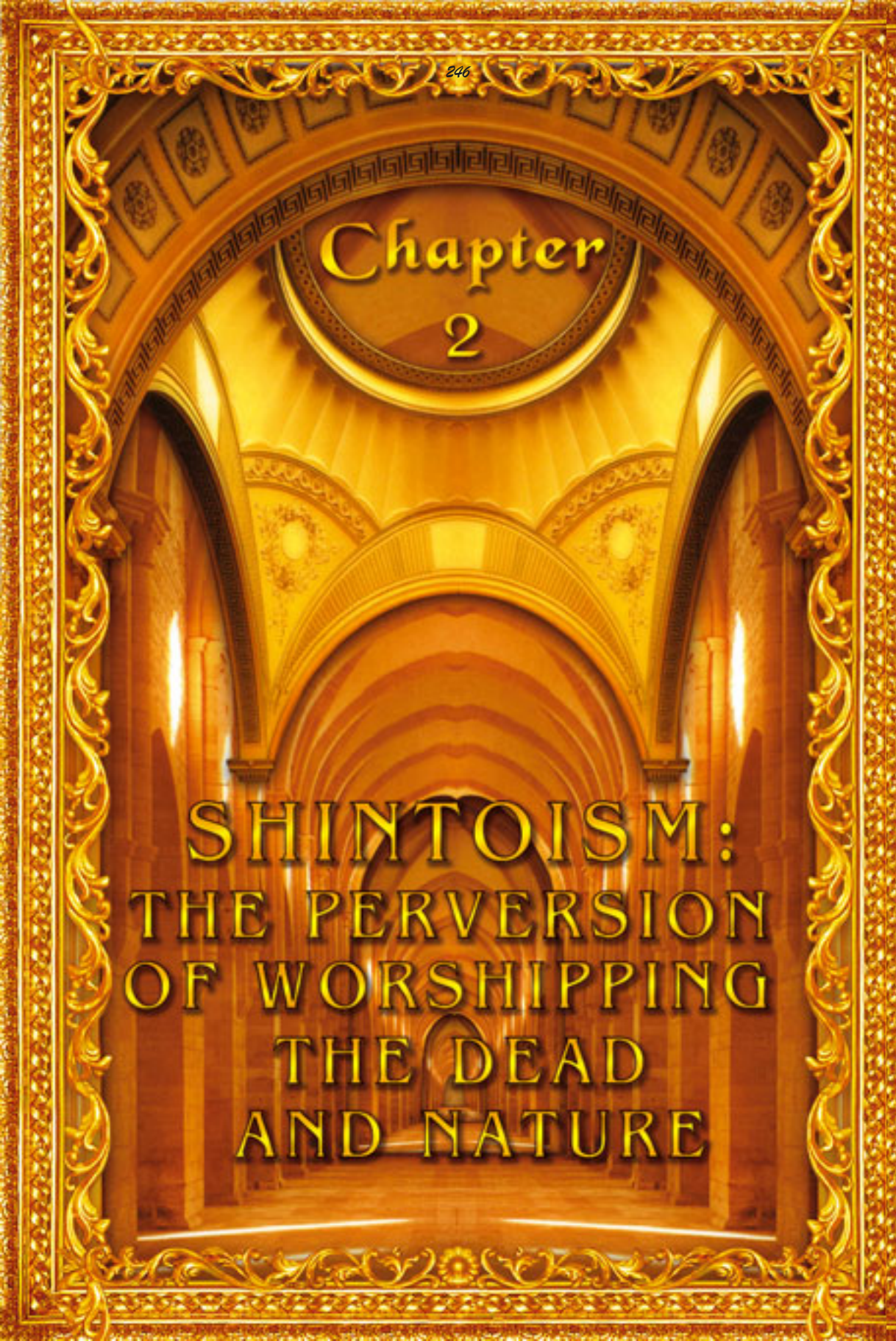
Taranpatha among the Digambara sect of Jainism during the medieval period of Muslim domination in the central and western regions of India."[111]

Even today Jains live alongside Muslims and witness their pure, safe and contended life blessed by the Islamic faith. This is why all Jains should come to realize the error of living under the influence of false beliefs, self-inflicted cruelty stemming from ignorance and a sad life spent away from all the truths of life. The call of Islam is so close to them and they should surely listen. Allah reveals that some people responded in the following way to this call:

> **When they are told, "Come to what Allah has sent down and to the Messenger," they say, "What we found our fathers doing is enough for us." What! Even if their fathers did not know anything and were not guided! (Surat al-Ma'ida: 104)**

Jains should not make the same mistake by preferring their superstitious traditions over the truth and should also know that those who realize that their forefathers were blinded by false beliefs and that idolatry is a great perversion, **"will find our Lord most forgiving and compassionate"** if they listen to the voice of their conscience, believe in Allah, repent and feel remorse for their previous way of life. Allah says in the Surat ash-Shura:

> **Allah… By His Words Allah wipes out the false and confirms the truth. He knows what the heart contains. It is He Who accepts repentance from His servants and pardons evil acts and knows what they do. (Surat ash-Shura: 24-25)**


Chapter
2
SHINTOISM:
THE PERVERSION
OF WORSHIPPING
THE DEAD
AND NATURE

Shintoism is a religion of aberrant traditions indigenous to the Japanese people. Essentially it is the perverse worship of nature, deceased ancestors, and literally millions of other beings.

It existed since the oldest times of Japanese history and prevailed in the superstitious tradition, worldview, perverted worship and rituals of the native Japanese population. However, it is not possible to access any written records of this superstitious religion's origins, mainly because literacy entered Japan only in the 5th century AD, at which time the Chinese alphabet was adopted and the first written records appear. Shintoism's foremost scriptures, the "Kojik" (The Book of Ancient Things) and "Nihongi" (A Chronology of Japan) were committed to paper in the 8th century in the Chinese language.

The word Shinto does not appear before the 6th century and was only used from the 6th century onwards with the purpose of distinguishing Japan's native religion from Buddhism, which by that time had entered Japan from China and Korea. Thus a line was drawn between the two false religions and Japan acquired its national religion (The word Shinto is formed by the two Chinese words "shin" and "tao", meaning the "way of the gods").

However, Buddhism and Confucianism have had a great influence over Japanese culture. As a consequence of the dealings between the Japanese and the kingdoms of the Korean peninsula, Chinese influences reached Japan. Japanese aristocracy revered the Buddha from the 7th and 8th century onwards, promoted Buddhism, built Buddhist temples and thus this religion spread rapidly in society. Confucianism was also promoted by the Japanese empire, which offered it as an eth-

ical teaching to its people. The fact that Shintoism has no inherent morality enabled the rapid acceptance of Confucianism in Japan. The effect of these two false beliefs on the people caused the gradual weakening of the other false belief; Shintoism. People began to prefer Buddhist temples over Shinto shrines and they also adopted the practice of incinerating the deceased, aided by Buddhist monks.

This gradual decline of Shintoism was eventually to bring about the **"revival movement of Shintoism and return to ancient traditions"** in modern times. As we will see in great detail in the coming chapters, this movement was to play a major role in the transformation of Japan into a colonialist empire and its subsequent destruction in the Second World War.

ABERRANT SHINTO TRADITIONS: A FALSE RELIGION WITH MILLIONS OF IMAGINARY DEITIES

Shintoism is founded on the false "Kami" belief. Kami means "up" and "above" and is used in Shintoism in the meaning of god, goddess, deity, spirit, and holy power. Another name for Shintoism is "Kami No Michi" meaning the "Path of Kami".

Shintoists believe that "kami" are everywhere in the universe. Accordingly, man, flowers, mountains, oceans, springs, swords, combs and mirrors can all be an imaginary deity (Allah forbid). This aberrant Japanese belief contains 8 million odd kami which is why Shintoism is often termed to be "the superstitious religion of millions of mythical deities".

According to the false Shinto belief, Kami can be good as well as evil or exist in any shape or dimension. They are born, get married, get sick, weep, envy and die, but despite these qualities, they are considered superior to ordinary people. A hero who has achieved military

According to the superstitious beliefs of Shinto, the souls of visitors to this rock shrine at Ise can be purified. However, like all other Shinto beliefs, this is false. It is only possible to cleanse the soul and attain salvation through sincere submission to Allah and living solely for His approval.





Japanese people's lives are full of various superstitious rituals. When they visit a temple, for example, they write all their desires, their names and addresses onto pieces of paper they call "ema" and then pray to false deities to make these desires come true.



success or a leader of service can be pronounced a "Kami" by the Japanese and becomes from then on a revered imaginary deity.

There are over 100,000 Shinto shrines in Japan and each has its own Kami. It is believed that the Kami's spirits are present in the shrines even if their pictures or statues are absent. People make offerings of food, water, fruit, make what they imagine to be shows of respect for, and burn incense to the Kami in Shinto shrines as an act of supposed worship. Obviously these false beliefs will not benefit the people. In the previous chapters of the book, we examined how great a perversion it is to ascribe partners to Allah and reminded that He warns such people of the fierce punishment awaiting them. Allah says the following in the Surat al-Hajj:

> **… Have done with the defilement of idols and have done with telling lies. Be people of pure natural belief in Allah, not associating anything else with Him. As for anyone who associates others with Allah, it is as though he had fallen from the sky and the birds had seized him and carried him away or the wind had dropped him in a distant place. (Surat al-Hajj: 30-31)**

As revealed in the verses, these people who ascribe human or other idolatrous partners to Allah, irrationally trusting in them and completely and ignorantly befriending them in the belief that they will help them in times of need, are in a state of delusion, because these idols which are loved more than anything else, are themselves helpless and needy beings unable to help themselves, never mind helping others. The example of **"… It is as though he had fallen from the sky and the birds had seized him and carried him away or the wind had dropped him in a distant place"** in the above verse, reveals the hopelessness and ignorance of worshipping idols, which are wisely described as **"with the defilement"** (Surat al-Hajj), and lead people to false beliefs by distancing them from our Lord Allah. Allah says **"… Call on your**

partner-gods! They will call on them but they will not respond to them. They will see the punishment. Oh if only they had been guided!" (Surat al-Qasas: 64) and reveals that idolaters will meet eternal hellfire. Shintoists should reflect on this truth, leave these mistaken beliefs behind and turn to the Creator, Lord and Guardian of all people, Allah, entering His true religion. It is the Muslims duty to relate the religious morality to these erring people, effectively and to the best of their ability.

SHINTOISM IS THE PERVERSION OF WORSHIPPING THE DEAD

Shintoists believe that the spirits of the dead become "kami" upon which they wander amongst the living, live in cemeteries, share in the joys as well as sadness of their children and grandchildren and watch over them. When they die, it is believed they obtain supernatural powers and this superstitious and perverse belief have led Shintoists to create myths that simply makes rational people wonder. It is also believed that the dead supposedly control natural phenomenon, death, prosperity, the seasons, famine and natural disasters. This false belief leads people to ignorantly believe that their families, villages, tribes and nation are being watched over by "the spirits of their ancestors". Some Kami are supposed believed to give life to trees, nature, tools or even the pots and pans in the kitchen.(Surely Allah is beyond that.)

This false belief has Shintoists believing that some Kami help them regain health after an illness and help them pass university entrance exams or driving tests. According to this ignorant and perverse belief, the world is full of good and evil spirits and for every Shintoist, his personal Kami is the source of the universe and existence itself. In reality it is a sign of great ignorance, foolishness and perversion to believe that

helpless people or stone or wooden idols have powers, as it is only the infinitely powerful and mighty Lord Who is responsible for everything that happens in the universe. The 5th verse of the Surat as-Sajda says: **"He directs the whole affair from heaven to Earth"** (Surat al-Sajda: 5). Allah created the whole universe and every living or lifeless being it contains. It is revealed in the verses as follows:

> **Your Allah is One god. There is no god but Him, the All-Merciful, the Most Merciful. In the creation of the heavens and earth, and the alternation of the night and day, and the ships which sail the seas to people's benefit, and the water which Allah sends down from the sky – by which He brings the earth to life when it was dead and scatters about in it creatures of every kind – and the varying direction of the winds, and the clouds subservient between heaven and earth, there are signs for people who use their intellect. (Surat al-Baqara: 163-164)**
>
> **Allah is He Who raised up the heavens without any support – you can see that – and then established Himself firmly on the Throne. He made the sun and moon subservient, each running for a specified term. He directs the whole affair. He makes the Signs clear so that hopefully you will be certain about the meeting with your Lord. (Surat ar-Ra'd: 2)**

As stated in these verses, it is possible to realize the existence and unity of Allah by observing the harmony that exists in the universe and nature. The existence of a great harmony and balance in the universe that enables human life, or the fact that all living beings in nature bear the signs of a common creation (like DNA for instance), show that the world of existence is governed by an infinitely rational order. Michael Denton, a renowned molecular biologist, states in his book titled Nature's Destiny: *How the Laws of Biology reveal Purpose in the Universe* that everything from the universe itself down to the structure of the

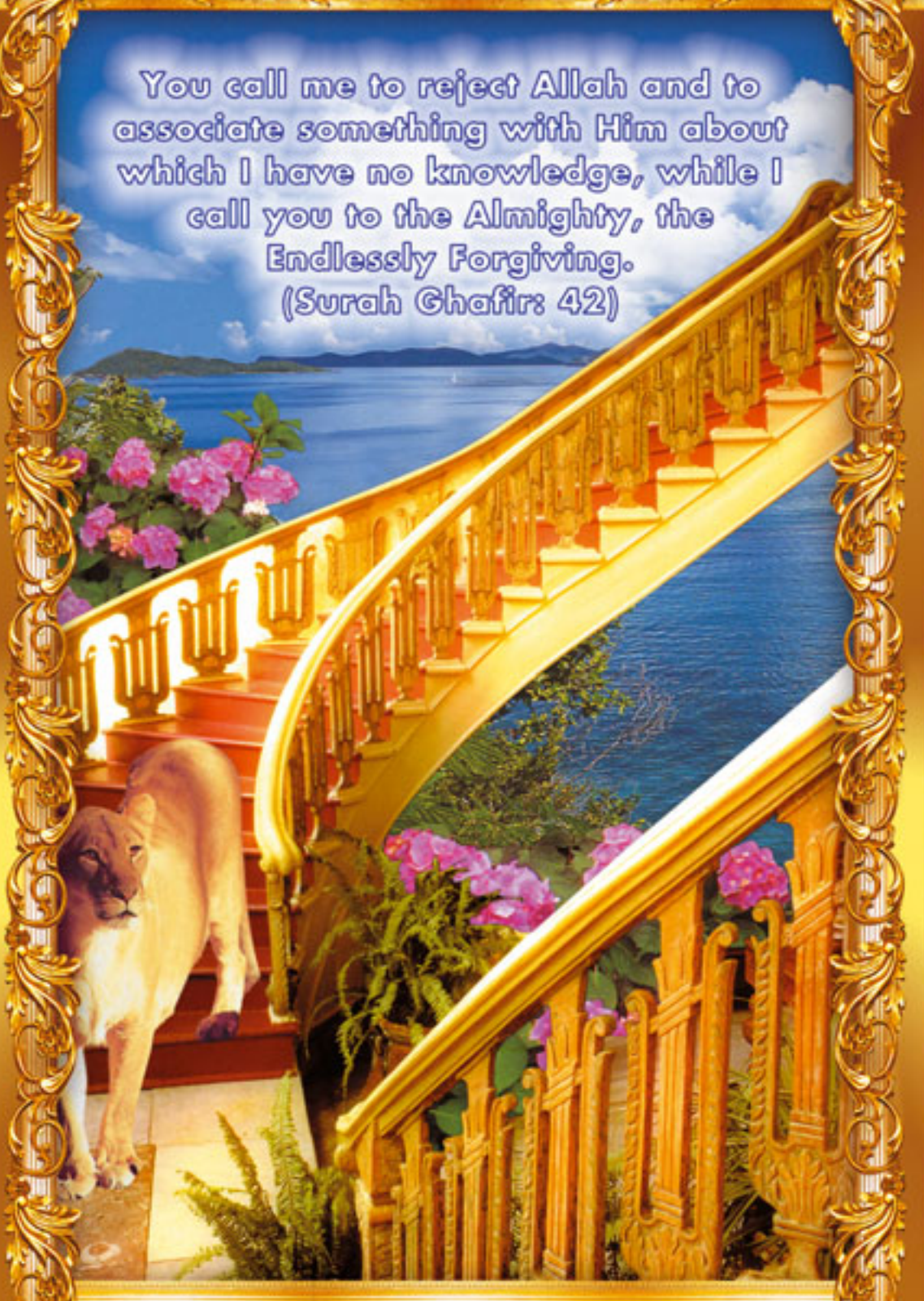
atom has a common order governing it all which proves the existence of one Creator. To think otherwise, to think that there are other deities besides Allah Who have separate powers, is great ignorance and foolishness. Allah reveals in the Qur'an that idolaters like the Shintoists who believe in millions of imaginary deities are erring:

> **Allah has no son and there is no other god accompanying Him, for then each god would have gone off with what he created and one of them would have been exalted above the other. Glory be to Allah above what they describe, (Surat al-Muminun: 91)**

Shintoists who accredit the dead with divinity should reflect upon this verse carefully, should free themselves from fictitious and perverse beliefs in their minds, acknowledge Allah's clear existence and submit to him.

Shintoists, with such nonsensical beliefs about the dead, have on the other hand no concept of death, Judgment Day, the life of the hereafter, hell or paradise. Their false beliefs led them to irrational and nonsensical practices in these matters which are incompatible with reason or logic. According to the erroneous Shinto scriptures, the well-being of the dead "depends on the care, food and other offerings presented to their graves by the living". They hold to the illogical belief that the dead will take revenge if they are not revered, presented with offerings or given presents. For this reason a Japanese person believing in Shintoism considers the reverence of the dead, visits to the grave, and offerings made to the dead as a very important duty, at least in his own eyes. This belief regarding death and the dead, like all the other beliefs of Shintoism, is another great error inherited by the Japanese from their ancestors.

No manmade teaching can be accurate about what comes after death because no man has died and then come back. The only reliable source from which we can acquire true knowledge about death and the


You call me to reject Allah and to associate something with Him about which I have no knowledge, while I call you to the Almighty, the Endlessly Forgiving.
(Surah Ghafir: 42)

life thereafter is the Qur'an revealed to us by Allah. Our Lord informs us in the Torah and Bible (both corrupted to a great extent at present) as well as the Qur'an, the only Divine book of revelation that remains uncorrupted and unchanged, that with death, man's earthly life ends and the life of the hereafter begins. Man will not return to earth in a new body as those who believe in reincarnation insist and neither will his soul live on in the life of earth as the Shintoists claim. Allah says in the Qur'an:

> **When death comes to one of them, he says, "My Lord, send me back again so that perhaps I may act rightly regarding the things I failed to do!" No indeed! It is just words he utters. Before them there is an interspace until the Day they are raised up. (Surat al-Muminun: 99-100)**

As the verses suggest, the unbelievers' expectation of being returned to earth is in vain and Allah reveals in another verse that those in paradise will not experience another death other than the "first".

> **They will not taste any death there – except for the first one. He will safeguard them from the punishment of the Blazing Fire. A favor from your Lord. That is the Great Victory. (Surat ad-Dukhan: 56-57)**

Allah reveals much information about the death of the deniers. Death is only the beginning of a great suffering for all those who deny the existence of Allah and the eternal life in the hereafter. Whilst an observer may well think that a person is dying peacefully in their bed, they are in reality entering fierce punishment (Allah knows the truth). Angels of death debase and hurt them when taking their lives from their bodies. The following is revealed in verses about the unbeliever's moment of death:

> **... If you could only see the wrongdoers in the throes of death when the angels are stretching out their hands, saying, "Disgorge your own selves! Today you will be repaid with the punishment of hu-**

miliation for saying something other than the truth about Allah, and being arrogant about His Signs." (Surat al-An'am: 93)

If only you could see when the angels take back those who disbelieved at their death, beating their faces and their backs: "Taste the punishment of the Burning! That is for what you did. Allah does not wrong His servants." (Surat al-Anfal: 50-51)

In other verses it is revealed as follows:

No indeed! When it reaches the gullet and he hears the words, "Who can heal him now?" and he knows it is indeed the final parting, (Surat al-Qiyama: 26-28)

Then, the denier comes face to face with the reality he has refused to acknowledge all his life. Together with death, he begins to suffer the punishment for the great sin he was committing throughout his life. The angel's taking his life from deep within, beating his back, is only the beginning of his eternal punishment.

Shintoism has produced an erroneous myth about the creation of the universe from nothing just as it has about the aftermath of death. All Japanese people who believe in Shintoism, educated or not, unemployed or professional, ignorant or intellectual, believe that the universe was produced by two deities, "Izanagi" and "Izanami", but the myth continues: all the Japanese islands, people and Kami have supposedly been "created especially" by this duo. (Surely Allah is beyond that.) According to this irrational and illogical way of thinking, the oceans and Susanu (proud man, Kami), who controls the storms and winds blowing over the seas, were given birth to by the water flowing from Izanami's nostrils; from a tear from his right eye the moon god Tsukinomani, and from a tear from his left eye the sun goddess Ameterasu were born.[112] As we will see in greater detail over the coming chapters, Japanese nationalism feeds off this superstitious myth,

which is self-evidently nonsensical, because even a child of average common sense can comprehend the irrationality of what we is related here. However, many Japanese people are far from seeing this reality as they are blindly and proudly following in the footsteps of their ancestors. A Japanese proverb explains this perverse belief as follows: *"Devotion to the mother of all ancestry is the source of all virtue and a person, who fulfills his responsibility to the dead, will also faithfully fulfill his responsibilities to the living".*



In reality this is a great error and everyone who uses his mind can see this. Every culture and society on earth has its own traditions, therefore how can it be believed that "following these traditions" leads to truth? Is it a "truth" to continue some perverted practices of the ancestors of an African tribe? Is it right for the son of a Nazi to follow the racist, violent and cruel ideology of his father? All these are contradictory to one another; they all are based on different

The superstitious Shinto traditions inherited from their ancestors oblige all Japanese people to believe that the universe was brought into being by two so-called deities known as "Izanagi" and "Izanami." According to this irrational tale, all the islands of Japan and the Japanese people were brought into being by this twosome



As with many other pagan societies, Shinto belief has its own supposed Sun-god: Amaterasu.

myths, rules and traditions and which one of these would lead to truth? How can it be ascertained which of these is right or contains an element of truth, even if it be a little one?

All these questions are the result of the fact that following the superstitious traditions and perverse values of one's forefathers cannot lead to the truth. Allah advises in Surat al-Baqara to those who blindly believe in the superstitious religion of their ancestors to reflect on this reality:

When they are told, "Follow what Allah has sent down to you," They say, "We are following what we found our fathers doing."

What, even though their fathers did not understand a thing and were not guided! (Surat al-Baqara: 170)

The Surat an-Naml reveals in the following verse that those who deny our Lord and prostrate instead in front of powerless stone idols are in a grave aberration:

… Is Allah better, or what you associate with Him? He Who created the heavens and the earth and sends down water for you from the sky by which We make luxuriant gardens grow – you could never make their trees grow. Is there another god besides Allah? No indeed, but they are people who equate others with Him! He Who made the earth a stable dwelling place and appointed rivers flowing through its midst and placed firmly embedded mountains on it and set a barrier between the two seas. Is there another god besides Allah? No indeed, but most of them do not know it! He Who responds to the oppressed when they call on Him and removes their distress, and has appointed you as inheritors of the earth. Is there another god besides Allah? How little you pay heed! He Who guides you in the darkness of land and sea and sends out the winds bringing advance news of His mercy. Is there another god besides Allah? May Allah be exalted above what they associate with Him! He Who originates creation and then regenerates it and provides for you from out of heaven and earth. Is there another god besides Allah? Say: "Bring your proof if you are being truthful." (Surat an-Naml: 59-64)

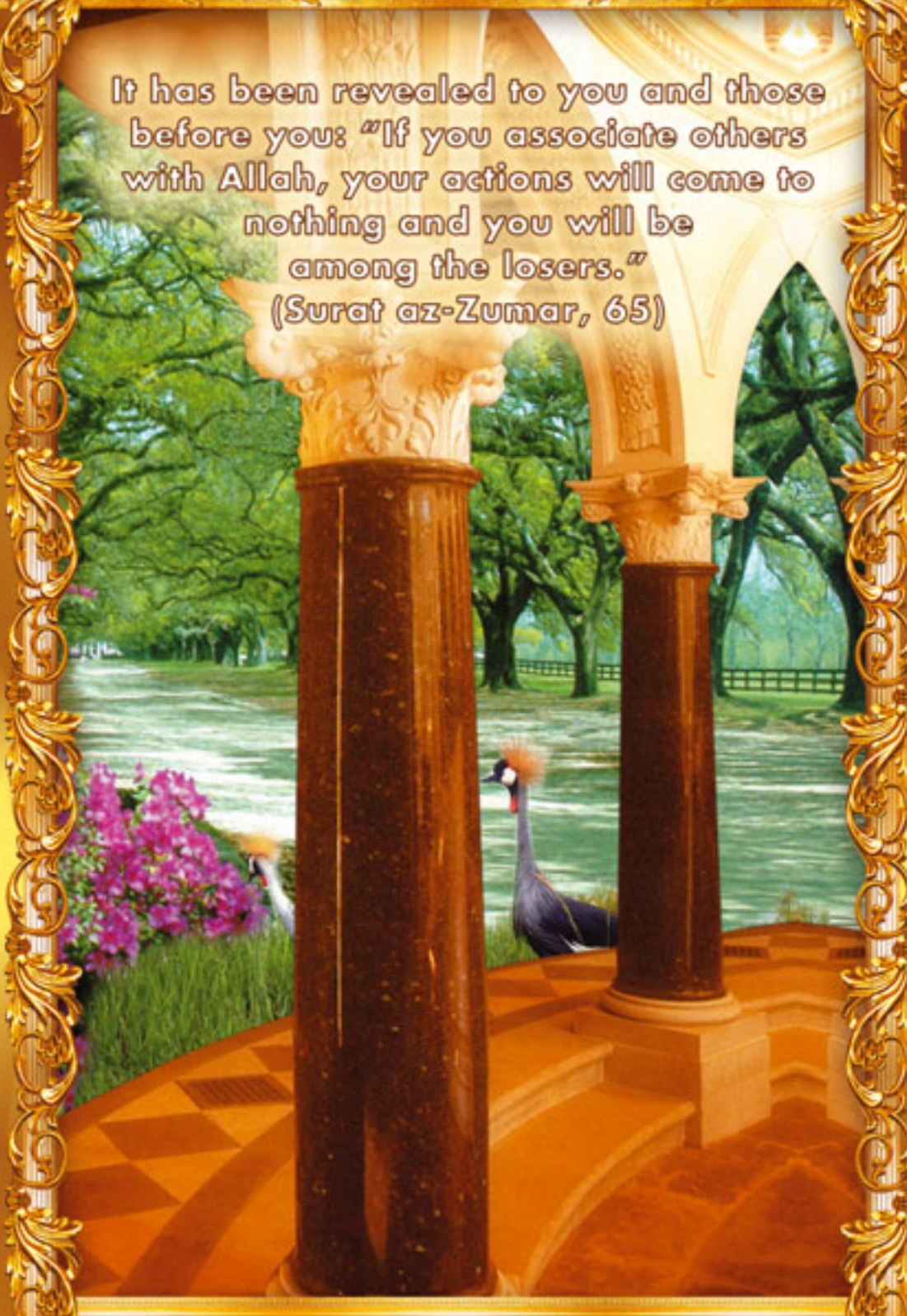
SHINTOISM DOES NOT RECOMMEND VIRTUE

The requirements of the superstitious Japanese religion can be summed up as "respect for the spirits of ancestors, reverence and supposed worship of ancestors and Kami, submission to the State, the Emperor and patriotism". Besides these there are no moral prohibi-

tions, recommendations, requirements or rules. The Japanese say that, as an alleged "chosen race", they are anyhow on the righteous path. This is obviously a great lie. As we have already mentioned, this is a fabricated and irrational myth by which the Japanese delude themselves.

No nation or people can claim supremacy because of race, ancestry, language or ethnicity as superiority is only relative to one's closeness to Allah, Who says: **"… The noblest among you in Allah's Sight is the one of you who best performs his duty."** (Surat al-Hujurat: 13) *(See chapter: "India's cruel social order")*

Some Japanese people developed a very strict and merciless code of honor as a consequence of considering themselves a supreme and sacred race, a code which has no room for mercy for mistakes or errors in life; so much so, that it is common practice to commit suicide in the face of failure. For centuries the tradition of "Hara-kiri" (also known as "seppuku"), or the disemboweling of oneself by ones own knife or sword was in wide-scale practice and continues in the present day under a variety of ways. In modern day Japan, people who fail university entrance exams, break down under the pressure of the education system or suffer bankruptcy, commonly commit suicide.[113] Japan leads the list of industrialized countries in terms of its suicide rate[114] with 33,000 recorded suicides in the year 2000.[115] This is a consequence of living outside religious morality. Shintoists are removed from moral qualities like modesty, patience, faith and compassion, which are prescribed by Divine religions, and considers this perversity, inherited from their ancestors, as honor. The fact that they do not believe in death, hereafter, hell and paradise can cause them to be extremely cruel and uncompassionate towards themselves as well as others. Their self-righteous sense of pride and their image as perceived by others is so important to them


It has been revealed to you and those
before you: "If you associate others
with Allah, your actions will come to
nothing and you will be
among the losers."
(Surat az-Zumar, 65)

that they would rather die than be perceived of as a failure. No doubt the perception of failure as a moral deficiency and the unforgiving attitude towards weaknesses and imperfections, instead of understanding and compassion, play a major role in this. The fascist culture of Shintoism, as will be seen later in more detail, can decree the death penalty for even minor mistakes. Considering suicide as a supposed virtue is a consequence of nihilism.

Suicide is a great sin according to Allah and it contravenes Islam just like murder. Allah clearly forbids suicide: **"... And do not kill yourselves"** (Surat an-Nisa': 29) Islam forbids suicide under all circumstances. In a society in which Islamic morality is practiced, people who make mistakes, or are unsuccessful, are not considered bad but are received with compassion and care. What matters is whether someone is of good character, and not whether he is successful or not. Those of inferior character are encouraged to improve themselves in a compassionate and friendly manner.

THERE IS NO CONCEPT OF SIN OR CRIME IN SHINTOISM

Allah has throughout history revealed through His messengers and books of revelation, His prohibitions and good deeds, taught moral virtue and warned people of the things they must refrain from. Every human being is in a trial for the duration of his earthly life. This is a fact revealed in our source of guidance, the Qur'an:

> **He Who created death and life to test which of you is best in action. He is the Almighty, the Ever-Forgiving. (Surat al-Mulk: 2)**

Every human being must fear and respect Allah, abide by our Lords commandments and adopt the morality approved by him. This is the only thing that will benefit him in this life here as well as in the hereafter.





Followers of Shinto try to convince themselves that no matter what evil they commit, fire, water and salt will purify them. The fact is, though, that were they to think honestly for a few minutes and heed the voice of their consciences they would quickly realize the nonsensical nature of these superstitious ceremonies.



People believing in Shintoism have no concept of sin. They believe that the evil deeds they may commit are simply caused by evil spirits and that they must therefore frequently purify themselves from their effects. Various odd rituals for this purpose are practiced in temples. They hold the irrational belief that partaking in such rituals called "harae," in which salt, water or fire are used, cleanses people physically as well as spiritually.

"Harae", like the other pagan practices of the Japanese, is erroneous because to purify oneself spiritually, one must genuinely listen to the voice of conscience, cleanse oneself from evil and turn to Allah. Salt or fire rituals won't do. Every human being will receive in the life of the hereafter the recompense for his actions in this life. Those who live according to Allah's direction, refrain from sin and immorality and do good, will earn Allah's good pleasure, mercy and eternal paradise. Allah reveals the following: **"This is your Garden which you have inherited for what you did."** (Surat al-A'raf: 43) And those who have rejected Allah, who have ascribed handmade idols to be His partners, who have competed with one

another in sin and evil and worked to spread immorality among people, will receive their fair due on the Day of Judgment. We are told in verses that:

> **Abandon wrong action, outward and inward. Those who commit wrong action will be repaid for what they perpetrated. (Surat al-An'am, 120)**
>
> **As for those who disbelieved and barred access to the way of Allah, We will heap punishment on top of their punishment because of the corruption they brought about. (Surat an-Nahl: 88)**
>
> **… If you could only see the wrongdoers in the throes of death when the angels are stretching out their hands, saying, "Disgorge your own selves! Today you will be repaid with the punishment of humiliation for saying something other than the truth about Allah, and being arrogant about His Signs." (Surat al-An'am: 93)**

However, it must be pointed out that if these people repent and change their ways, they will find our Lord accepting, forgiving and most compassionate.

> **They want you to hasten the bad rather than the good when examples of punishment are there before them in the past. Your Lord has forgiveness for people for their wrongdoing; but your Lord is also severe in retribution. (Surat ar-Ra'd: 6)**

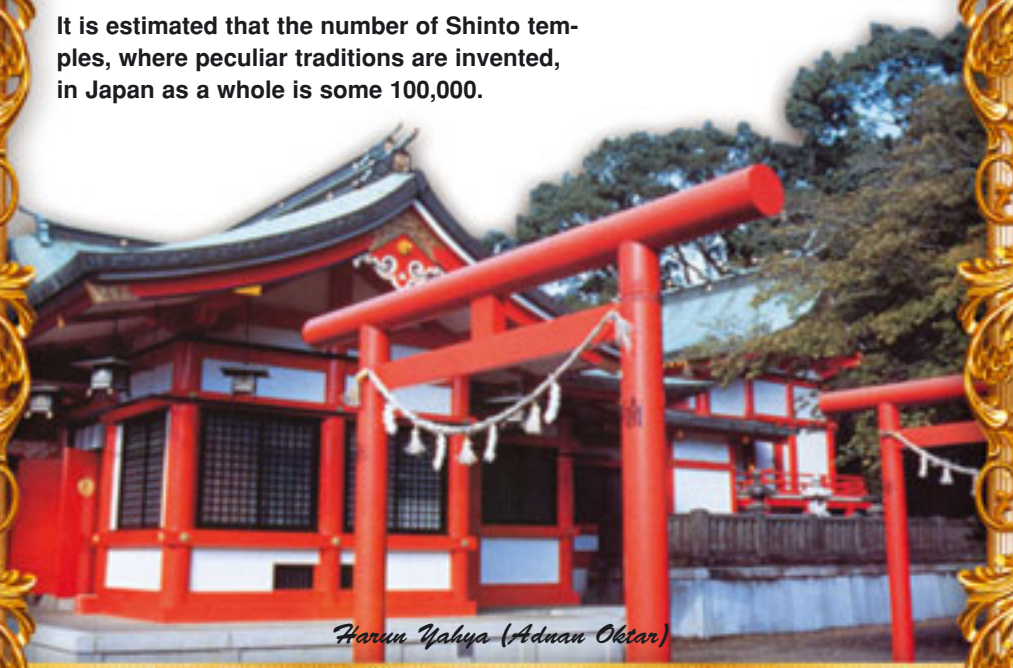
SHINTOISM'S TEMPLES OF IDOLATRY

In Shintoism it is of great importance to make solitary personal visits to the shrine as well as partaking in sermons conducted by professional priests, whose main responsibility in the superstitious Shinto belief is to oversee all rituals conducted in the shrine. They are not expected to be a religious guide, to preach or to be a spiritual leader. The only thing Shintoists derive from their superstitious religion is the vis-

its to the temple shrines, where they perversely revere their imaginary deities, participate in rituals, sermons and meetings and generally abide by the traditions of their forefathers.

Those who partake in Matsuri, a Shinto festival taking place in the shrine, purify themselves beforehand with dietary restrictions lasting anywhere from a few hours to a few days, as well as bathing in salt water. Then the Kami are asked to enter the objects they are expected to occupy, which is often a symbol. No doubt, a call in vain. It is incompatible with rationality to believe that "Kami" which can be a stone, fish or mountain can hear or help them. Then offerings of food and presents are made to the kami. The priests make calls to their idols which cannot possibly hear or answer them. Offerings are hung onto the branches of trees that are, in their own eyes at least, considered sacred. Ritualistic music is played and people dance. Then the offerings are removed and the kami are asked to leave. People sometimes have the belief that the kami occupies a mobile object or idol, and they parade

It is estimated that the number of Shinto temples, where peculiar traditions are invented, in Japan as a whole is some 100,000.



them in such cases through the streets in the belief that the streets will supposedly be blessed. Floats in the form of mountains, temples or boats are drawn by people or oxen, or even carried on shoulders. Shintoists follow these traditions inherited from their ancestors without fail, and spend their lives abiding by these perverted beliefs. Shintoists are misled and mistaken in their belief of finding salvation in these practices, because it is not possible for the idols they carry on their shoulders, imagine that they worship and to which they make offerings to understand their reverence, respond to their calls or answer their prayers. Allah says:

Blessed be He Who has sent down the Furqan (Discrimination) to His servant so that he can be a warner to all beings; He to Whom the

Kyoto, Japan's first royal capital, is also regarded as the centre of the superstitious Shinto faith.



kingdom of the heavens and the earth belongs. He does not have a son and He has no partner in the Kingdom. He created everything and determined it most exactly. But they have adopted gods apart from Him which do not create anything but are themselves created. They have no power to harm or help themselves. They have no power over death or life or resurrection. (Surat al-Furqan: 1-3)





Adherents of Shinto have resorted to various means in order to maintain the superstitious rituals inherited from their forebears and to perform their observances to the letter. One of these is portable shrines.

STATE SHINTOISM AND JAPANESE FASCISM

Superstitious Far Eastern religions have an irrational tradition of reverence to the rulers of the country. For instance the Chinese Emperor was termed the "Son of Heaven" (Tian Zi) whereas the Japanese Emperor is known as the "Heavenly Sovereign" (Tenno) with the difference that the Japanese Emperor was also, as the extension of one superstitious belief, perversely regarded as a living divinity.

Amaterasu is known as the sun goddess in the superstitious religion of Shintoism, and the Japanese Emperor is falsely deemed to be her descendent. For this reason every word from him and everything he touches is considered supposedly sacred and allegedly divine. Even the collection of his poems is ignorantly considered to be a supposed sacred scripture, and people in his service are regarded as intermediaries of the divine.

This superstitious belief in the supposed divinity of the emperor declined with the arrival of Buddhism and Confucianism in the country in the 6th century. The internal disorder prevalent in the country weakened the emperor's influence over the people. At the end of the 8th century the Fujivara dynasty came to power, but the aristocracy revolted and a civil war lasting centuries broke out. In 1192 one of the aristocracy, Yoritomo Minamoto defeated the rest of the warring fractions and acquired power under the title of "Shogun" (military dictator), beginning a new era of military rule. Yoritomo made this title hereditary and therefore controlled the rest of the aristocracy. The emperor on the other hand continued his existence as a sovereign spiritual leader, albeit without political powers.

FROM STATE SHINTOISM TO AGGRESSIVE JAPANESE NATIONALISM



Yoritomo Minamoto

In 17th and 18th century Japan new movements envisaging a revival of Shintoism emerged. The most important of which was the *National Learning Movement*. It set out to put the superstitious Shinto religion at the centre of Japanese society, thus reducing the influence of Buddhism and Confucianism to a minimum. This movement was to become the leading force behind the creation of state Shintoism. Japan until the second half of the 19th century was a feudal society ruled by Shoguns, but in 1867 re-established the primacy of the monarchy with the Meiji Restoration.. This new era began with Mutsuhito taking the name of Meiji, and this monarchy rules to this day (indeed, the Japanese imperial family is the oldest continuing hereditary monarchy in the world, its rule beginning roughly around the year 660 BC). He was also the architect of making Shintoism the state religion with total control over it.

The monarchy was at the core of this extreme nationalist system of "State Shintoism". The emperor was a "father" figure, a spiritual leader and the head of state. State Shintoism concentrated on sermons in shrines supervised by the emperor. The Shinto ministry, as a part of the government, controlled the shrines. This ministry passed laws restrict-



Buddhism and Shintoism are inextricably bound together in present-day Japan. While some ceremonies are performed according to Shinto tradition, that of burning the dead is performed in Buddhist shrines.

ing the movement of other religions, sects and schools of thought. The 1889 constitution made it obligatory for the Japanese people to revere all Shinto shrines as a duty to the fatherland. All 100,000 Shinto shrines were controlled by the government, Shinto became mandatory in all education and the emperor's sacredness was further strengthened by laws passed by politicians.[116]

This was an oppressive regime reminiscent of Pharaoh's government, related in the Qur'an, as divinity was perversely ascribed to the head of state just as it was in the case of Pharaoh.

THE PERVERSION OF WORSHIP OF THE EMPEROR

State Shintoism was not wholly compatible with the Japanese Shinto religion until the 19th century. The emperor and his government created new rules by the day, and the so called sacred scriptures were written and rewritten by the state administration. Basil Hall Chamberlain, an expert on Japans at the Tokyo University was drawing attention to that era's Japan in his famous book titled *The Invention of A New Religion*.[117] He was relating the following in his work on the empire, those who worked in its service and how they created a new religion:

Mikado-worship and Japan-worship — for that is the new Japanese religion — is, of course, no spontaneously generated phenomenon. Every manufacture presupposes a material out of which it is made, every present a past on which it rests. But the twentieth-century Japanese religion of loyalty and patriotism is quite new, for in it pre-existing ideas have been sifted, altered, freshly compounded, turned to new uses, and have found a new centre of gravity. Not only is it new, it is not yet completed; it is still in process of being consciously or semi-consciously put together by the official class, in order to serve the interests of that class, and, incidentally, the interests of the nation at large.[118]

As the author states, the new superstitious and perverse religion of State Shintoism began to be created towards the end of the 19th century. As it was not a faith based on Divine revelation, the traditions and erroneous beliefs by the name of Shintoism could be easily adapted to the needs of the regime without it being considered "strange" by society. Thus, State Shintoism became the means to an end of the ascend-

ing fascist tendencies of the Japanese empire. The official religious teachings were frequently making references to the so called sacredness of the Japanese emperor and nation, and introduced gradually the lie of the supremacy of the Japanese race over all other nations. As a consequence of this baseless and nonsensical idea, racism and hostility towards foreigners emerged. However, the people's interest in Buddhism continued to worry the state administration which sought to minimize the place of Buddhism in Japanese society. Basil Hall Chamberlain describes this situation as follows:

> *The common people, it is true, continued to place their affections on Buddhism, the popular festivals were Buddhist, and the temples where they buried their dead were Buddhist. The governing class determined to change all this. They insisted on the Shinto doctrine that the Mikado allegedly descended in direct succession from the native goddess of the Sun, and that he himself is supposedly a living god [Surely Allah is beyond that] on earth who can justly claim the absolute fealty of his subjects. Things such as laws and constitutions were but magnanimous gifts on His part, not in any sense popular rights. Of course, the ministers and officials, high and low, who carry on His government, are to be regarded not as public servants, but rather as executors of supreme — one might say supernatural – authority.*[119]

Whereas Japan had been closed community to the outside world for centuries, during the Meiji era know-how and technology from Western societies were acquired with great interest. Great importance was placed on the army and navy, and Japan acquired a military capability strong and aggressive enough to defeat China and Russia. Economic growth driven by radical nationalist sentiments required ever greater natural resources and greater markets and consequently led to colonialist ambitions. A patriotism that considered violence as an appropriate means, at least in their own eyes, developed and Japan de-

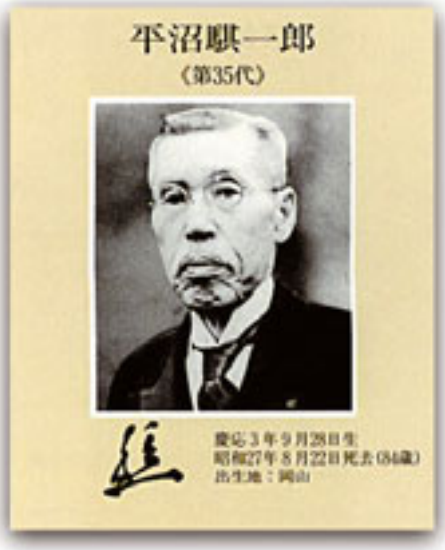
scended into aggression, fascism and imperialism that had no regard for the rights of other nations.

Japan attacked and made war with China (1894 – 1895) and then Russia (1904 – 1905); they easily won both. In the 1930's they occupied Manchuria and committed unbelievable atrocities against the civilian population in their war against China. In 1937, Japanese forces occupied the city of Nanking, China where 300,000 innocent people became subjected to an orgy of torture, rape and genocide. During the Second World War Japan attacked Malaysia, Singapore, New Guinea, Manila and Java. These wars further increased the power of State Shintoism. Chamberlain describes the conquest policies of the "New perverse Shinto Religion" as follows:

> *All military successes were ascribed to the miraculous influence of the Emperor's virtue, and to the virtues of His Imperial and divine ancestors — that is, of former Emperors and of Shinto deities. Imperial envoys were regularly sent after each great victory to carry the good tidings to the imaginary Sun Goddess at her great shrine at Ise. Not there alone, but at the other principal Shinto shrines throughout the land, the cannon captured from Chinese or Russian foes were officially installed, with a view to identifying Imperialism, Shinto, and national glory in the popular mind. The new legend is enforced wherever feasible — for instance, by means of a new set of festivals celebrating Imperial official events.*[120]

A work titled "History of Religious Statism and Buddhism in Japan" explained that Japans imperialism was founded on "State Shintoism". During the war with China (1937-1945), the Prime Minister at that time, Hiranuma Kiichiro, pointed out that "*All religions should be made to comply with Japan's national policies and should in no way conflict with the strategy of the empire" he also said, «Those who act differently will be punished.».* Laws were passed that assured the government's total control over all religious entities, but these laws were used to promote

aggressive nationalism and a fascist and imperialistic consciousness was imposed on the masses through the education system.[121]



Hiranuma Kiichiro

Schools were the most prominent means of the State Shinto's propaganda. History was taught with an imperialist spin. Likewise military and naval training was based on the principle that the emperor is paramount. Members of the armed forces were expected to be totally loyal to the emperor and criticism was absolutely forbidden. History was shaped by this new perverted religion and "rewritten" accordingly, and the status of the emperor was strengthened by ever new mythological legends. This aggressive and biased worldview that considered the Japanese superior to all other races blinded the Japanese people and its effect, together with the pressure applied by the Japanese generals, drew the country into the Second World War.

THE END OF STATE SHINTOISM: THE SECOND WORLD WAR

Decisions taken by the emperor and the army could not be questioned and the whole Japanese nation was forced into submission unconditionally. Japan entered a military alliance with Germany and Italy in 1939 and sank or crippled a majority of the American navy's Pacific

Fleet anchored at Pearl Harbor in Hawaii on the 7th of December 1941. In this way, Japan declared war on the greatest military power on earth and at the same time paved the way to its own demise. In the final stages of the war, Japan decided to continue the war despite the fall of Italy and Germany, suffering heavy losses in the process. The Second World War was brought to an end with the two atomic bombs dropped by American bombers on the 6th of August 1945 on Hiroshima, and on the 9th of August 1945 on Nagasaki. More than 100,000 people perished, tens of thousands suffered crippling injuries, and these two large cities were simply wiped off the face of the earth. In addition, the Soviet Union had declared war on Japan on August 9th, 1945 as well, and thus created another front. Japan could no longer withstand these pressures and capitulated on the 14th of August 1945 and on the 2nd of September 1945 Japan officially signed her unconditional surrender.

The Second World War also ended State Shintoism. Japan was prohibited from forming an army or producing arms and her security was underwritten and guaranteed by the United States. American forces occupied all of Japan. The Japanese emperor made his historical speech on the radio, in which he proclaimed that Japan had lost the war and declared that he was "neither a divinity nor a sacred personality"(Surely Allah is beyond that). The empire was dissolved. Japan's new constitution separated the state from religion and State Shintoism was replaced with "temple Shintoism" (Cinca Shinto).

At present temple Shintoism continues to have a relationship with the royal family, albeit without any underlying political functions. The emperor Hirohito who ascended to the throne in 1926, died on the 7th of January 1989. He was succeeded by his eldest son Prince Akihito who was crowned in November 1990. At present the emperor of Japan is a symbolic figurehead.



As the Japanese victories in Asia at the outset of the war continued, they carried out countless suicide attacks against American ships using the jet planes they produced. They called these Kamikaze (Divine Wind). Very often, insufficient fuel was placed in the planes to allow them to return to base after attacking the enemy, and thus prevent their troops avoiding carrying out such suicide attacks. The 3913 kamikaze pilots who died were young men aged 17-24."Kamikaze, Absolute Insanity - Origins of the Kamikaze", (http://www.bridgewater.edu/~dhuffman/soc306/sp02grp1/origin.html) As in the example of the kamikaze pilots, Shinto belief is capable of portraying suicide as a virtue and a sacred duty.

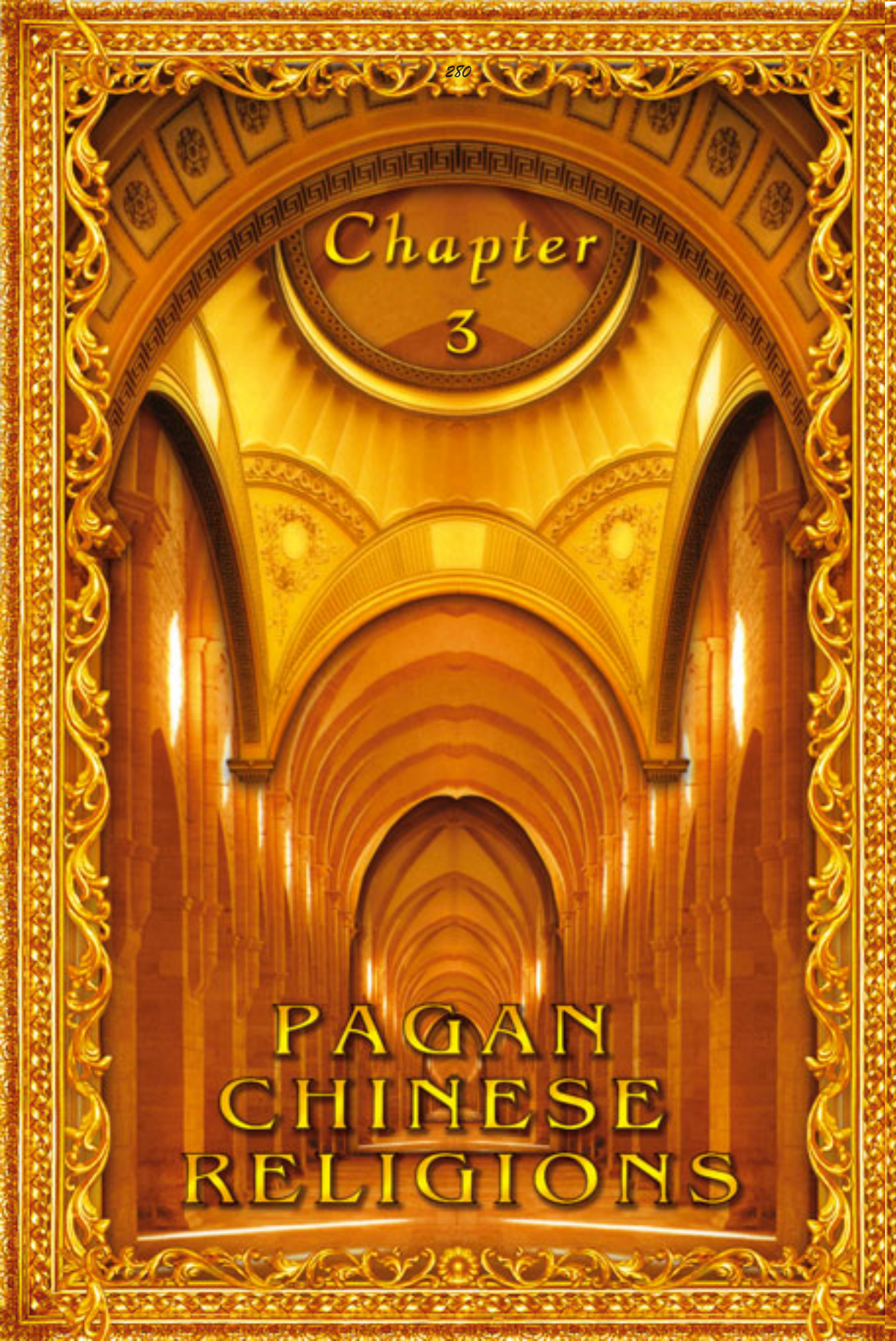
The great devastation suffered by the Japanese empire became a historical proof of the fact that Shintoism was a false belief. Just as the Nazi defeat in the Second World War proved the falseness of the racist and pagan Nazi ideology that had promised to deliver a "thousand year German Empire", so too was the pagan Shinto religion that proclaimed racial supremacy exposed as a fraud. People who believe in this erroneous religion prepare their own demise in the cause of worshipping false idols besides Allah.

Allah explains the error of such people as follows:

Say: "Call on those you make claims for besides Allah. They have no power over even the smallest particle, either in the heavens or in the earth. They have no share in them. He has no need of their support." (Surah Saba': 22)

For most people in present-day Japan, religion consists more or less of talking to idols and prayers for success and happiness, especially around the New Year holiday. However there are around 180,000 larger or smaller sects in Japan as the derivatives of Shintoism and Buddhism, or bizarre and perverse sects that idolize Thomas Edison and electricity (Denshinkyo), sexual organs or even mountains.[122] The most prominent sects in Japan are Tendai, Shingon, Jodo Shinshu, Nichiren, Tenrikyo, Konkokyo, Secho No Le and Omotoleyo. Islam on the other hand rejects all perversions of religion in all nations and commands the worship of the Most Compassionate and Merciful Lord and Sole Proprietor of the universe. Allah says in Surat al-Baqara:

Those are the people who have sold guidance for misguidance. Their trade has brought no profit; they are not guided. (Surat al-Baqara: 16)


Chapter
3
PAGAN
CHINESE
RELIGIONS

Chinese civilization is one of the oldest on earth. The country is the size of all of Europe, has a population of 1.2 billion and is one of the most important countries of the world with a dynamic and rapidly growing economy. China, was until the end of the 18th century, an isolated country far removed from Western culture. For this reason Chinese society managed to preserve its traditional superstitious religions and culture over the centuries, but with the arrival of British trade in the 19th Century, social life began to change. In 1949, the communist party came to power and China was changed forever. The militants of Mao Zedong had fought a guerrilla war for years setting up "freed zones" as they went along. They staged the second biggest communist revolution in history and took over the government. China became a feared country under Mao's rule. His arrival brought genocide, torture, destitution and famine to the Chinese people. Nonetheless, communism has been China's identity, and it's people's ideology since Mao came to power in 1949, though successive leaders, such as Deng Xiaoping ultimately introduced badly needed economic reforms, and have subsequently improved the overall socioeconomic climate dramatically.

Chinese culture has been influenced by Buddhism, Confucianism and Taoism besides communism.

CHINA'S ANCIENT AND PERVERSE RELIGION: SHAMANISM

Shamanism is considered perhaps the oldest superstitious religion in China. This pagan religion is founded on the erroneous belief that the "Kam", the Shaman priest, communicates directly with the spirit world and that with the imaginary power he thus derives from there he can

prevent evil, heal the sick, exorcise demons or evil spirits, lead one on the path to eternal life or prolong it. (Surely Allah is beyond that.)

Shamanism was the dominant belief in China before Confucianism emerged. It was the support for Confucianism by the ruling classes that led to its widespread acceptance by the people, thereby eroding the influence of Shamanism in society.

Shamanism and Confucianism are wholly contradictory to one another. Confucianism appears to be an ethical teaching or a philosophy, even though it does not have a concept of Allah or the hereafter and is, as such, a "false" religion. Contrary to Confucianism, Shamans believe in the power of the "Kam", in sorcery and the power of good or evil spirits over people. Confucianism is perceived to promote the values of "reason, reality, order, control and balance". Shamans, on the other hand, were considered an ignorant, disorderly and anarchistic lot which meant that Confucianism rose upon the decline of Shamanism. However the decline of Shamanism did not mean that its erroneous beliefs, sorcery and quest for eternal life on earth disappeared completely. Some magic potions, formulae, rituals and other acts of sorcery were commonly believed by Chinese people to prevent death. Even some Chinese emperors supported this irrational belief and its accompanying perverted rituals which ultimately led to the creation of another pagan religion. In the 2nd century AD, a number of schools of sorcery, spiritualism and healers regrouped around certain shaman leaders. This new movement of exorcism, quest for eternal life and other futile Shaman practices was offered to people under the name of Taoism.

We will examine over the next pages Taoism and the other pagan religions that shaped China, but it will be of benefit to examine Shamanism as the ancient superstitious religion of China (and many other Asian countries) a little closer.

SHAMANISM AND PRAYERS TO LAKES, RIVERS AND MOUNTAINS

Shamanism is a pagan religion that emerged in prehistory in Siberia and spread through Central Asia's tribal communities. Shamanism has two perverse principles:

-It is mistakenly believed that everything in nature (stones, soil, water, trees etc.) has both a soul and a will, and that it is therefore necessary to maintain a dialogue with them. (Surely Allah is beyond that.)



Shamanism is a heretical, magical faith. Shamanist priests wear the kind of peculiar clothing seen in the picture to the side and allegedly enter the spirit world. Below is a depiction of a Siberian shaman.







-The person who can establish this dialogue is the "Shaman" who communicates with these objects in nature through trance inducing rhythms, burning incense and dancing. He tries to convince them in order to heal. (Surely Allah is beyond that.)

The belief in nature's soul and will is central to Shamanism. For instance, it holds the irrational and illogical belief that rain is caused by a spirit living in clouds, or that fire is lit and maintained by the "fire spirit".

This superstitious belief is contained in many ancient pagan religions and is otherwise known as "animism", which is the belief that every single thing in nature is a spirit or supposed deity. The superstitious Shaman religion is a form of animism specific to Central Asia. The famous anthropologist Ivar Paulson sums it up by saying: **"Shamanism is an animistic ideology".**[123]

N. A. Alekseev, who researched various branches of Shamanism in Siberia and central Asia, published a book in 1980 and describes their strange ways of belief in the chapter titled: "The Idolization of Natural Powers and Phenomena" (Surely Allah is beyond that.):

There are various shamanist communities around the world, especially in Asia and America. The nonsensical spells caste and the heretical rites and ceremonies performed never change, however.

"According to the beliefs of Southern Altaic peoples, every mountain, every lake or river has its own spirit owner, which owns the place, and is in command of the animals and birds living there. It could protect people who lived there or crossed the area. Spirit owners were believed to be able to understand human speech, and the myths associated with them say that, like people, they also had children, and one could obtain their goodwill with prayers, supplications and sacrifices".[124]

Superstitious Shamanism is an idolatrous religion that ascribes partners to Allah. Its adherents believe in countless imaginary "deities," imagine that they pray to them and make sacrifices. Each river, lake, forest or mountain is considered to be another supposed deity and they are all revered in a most perverse manner.

La ilaha illa Allah (There is no other god but Allah), is the central principle of Islam, and it is evident that such erroneous animist beliefs are incompatible with reason, as well as Islam. Rocks, soil or water have no soul and they have been created by the Lord of the universe, Allah. Shamanists however, do not comprehend the fact that the whole universe has only One Creator and Lord and they are a people who have acquired many false idols and therefore ascribe partners to Allah.

Allah reveals the irrationality of people who ascribe partners to Him as follows:

Allah… There is no other god accompanying Him, for then each god would have gone off with what He created and one of them would have been exalted above the other. Glory be to Allah above what they describe. (Surat al-Muminun: 91)

Careful consideration of the facts reveals that there are many similarities between superstitious Shamanism and the old Arab (and other idolatrous tribes') beliefs when they were confronted by the prophets. Pagans perversely believed in many nature gods like the "sky god",

"earth god", "prosperity god", "war god" etc. They then made their representative figures and worshipped them. The only difference in Shamanism is that they did not make carved idols of their imaginary deities. Instead, the shaman turned to the sky, earth, sea, lake or forest and worshipped them. In the end, all these teachings amount to ascribing partners to Allah and are a terrible perversion.

Despite the fact that superstitious Shamanism was a myth that contradicted reason and logic, it nevertheless was passed down from generation to generation, each generation adopting it as a tradition of their forefathers. Many tribes and nations ignorantly continued to worship and make sacrifices to mountains, rocks or rivers even though they could clearly see that these objects have neither reason nor will. The dialogue between the Prophet Abraham (pbuh) and his people is revealed as follows in the Qur'an:

> **Recite to them the story of Abraham when he said to his father and his people, "What do you worship?" They said, "We worship idols and will continue to cling to them." He said, "Do they hear you when you call or do they help you or do you harm?" They said, "No, but this is what we found our fathers doing." (Surat ash-Shu'ara': 69-74)**

IRRATIONAL BELIEFS IN SHAMANISM

The myth of supposedly divine objects in nature is a central belief of Shamanism and has led them to develop strange rituals:

> *"The Shors believe in the existence of mountain spirits (tag-azi) and water spirits (shug-azi). Every clan had its own clan mountain and its mountain spirit, who protected the members of the clan. Every three years sacrificial ceremonies were held on that mountain. To express their respect, every Shor threw a libation to the spirit owner of the mountain or river, when he or she was near the mountain or river... The spirit owner of the waters was imag-*

ined as a long-armed naked woman by the Kumandines... The Tuvans used to believe in the spirit owners of the waters. They made an ovaa of stones and dry branches for her, too, on the riverbanks, and near the fords. This looked like a hut, and they placed the sacrificial objects in it: stones, rags, horsehair etc. Before crossing the river they usually performed a sacrifice."[125]

The Shamans' perverse belief in this imaginary water goddess is reminiscent of other pagans' belief in the so-called prosperity goddess. Anthropologist S. M. Malinovskaya syas: "Before Shamans began fishing at a certain spot, they were making offerings or sacrifices to the mythical water goddess."[126]

The "fire cult" is part of perverse Shamanism's culture just like in many other pagan religions. Shamans believe that fire has a spirit which must be placated, to which end they traditionally make perverse offerings or sacrifices to fires.

The totem-worshiping Samoyeds also ignorantly believed that fire was a living being, notably an old woman. The licking flames of the fire are her movements, and she is the guardian of the tent, who immediately gets angry if someone throws trash or trodden wood shavings, or spits into the fire, or hits it. When children lost their teeth, they were told to throw the teeth into the fire, so that "Old Grandmother Fire" would give them new ones . They where awed by fire, and respected its power so much that they ignorantly swore by it, saying "May I be devoured by Old Grandmother Fire if I am guilty!"[127]

Among the Turkic peoples of Siberia the Tuvans held the compulsory family holiday "fire-feast," which meant that under the direction of the most powerful shaman, they perversely sacrificed a lamb or a calf to the fire. They fed the fire with oil and butter, so that for the following year the spirit would provide the family members with both health and happiness.[128]



Despite being irrational and illogical nonsense, shamanism has been passed down from generation to generation, and every generation has accepted it as a tradition handed on from its forebears. Ceremonies performed hundreds of years ago are still performed in exactly the same manner today.





Shamans of Yakut origins truly exaggerated the fire spirit (Uat Iccite) in the sense that they had made him into a supposed Sun god, as in Zoroastrianism. Anatolij Ignatevia Gogolev says the following in his book about the Yakut and these perverted and superstitious beliefs:

> *"The fire, burning in the family hearth, however, understands brilliantly what is being said and done around him. Hence the warning that it would be dangerous to insult the fire. It was thought of as a living being, wherefore it was not advisable to poke at fire with iron. Housewives always attempted to keep the fire satisfied, and they gave him a piece of everything they cooked or baked. Similarly he got some from the results of a lucky hunting expedition".*[129]

WOMEN ARE "FILTHY" IN THE SUPERSTITIOUS SHAMANIST RELIGION

Another feature of pagan Shamanists is that they, with their low minds, considered women and girls as "spiritually filthy" beings. So much so that they forbade women or girls to step on and supposedly "pollute" fire, which they literally regarded as a supposed deity. Prof. M. Ya Barmich from the Russian Humanities Educational University, writes the following in his book on perverse Shamanist beliefs:

> *"The taboos connected with the cult of fire are aimed not to hurt or pollute fire which gives pure warmth and to life property, so that the people are forbidden to pour water on fire hastily, throw any unclean sweepings to the fire, or to spit into the fire. It used to be forbidden to stir up fire with sharp metal objects, otherwise the hostess of fire might be wounded. Women and girls are forbidden to step over the fire, since they are considered unclean and may pollute the fire."*[130]

SHAMANISM IS A BELIEF OF IGNORANCE

Shamanism is a belief of ignorance. Just as the Arabs worshipped idols, perversely ascribing beings other than Allah with powers that were only attributable to him, Shamans went astray by ascribing divinity to mountains, rocks, soil and fire within their mythological beliefs.

It is a quality of ignorance not to reflect. Idol worshippers or people who perversely ascribe partners to Allah cannot comprehend, or in other words ponder, that all things in nature are Allah's creation, that they have no will or power by themselves. All people who perversely worshipped the Fire, Sun or Moon got stuck in this irrationality. Allah reveals in the Qur'an the irrationality of people who worship the created like the Sun or Moon:

> **Among His Signs are the night and day and the sun and moon. Do not prostrate to the sun nor to the moon. Prostrate to Allah Who created them, if you worship Him. (Surah Fussilat: 37)**

CHINA: THE HOME OF THREE FALSE RELIGIONS

China, following centuries of Shamanism's domination of the lands, became the home for three further superstitious religions which are still widely practiced. These are Buddhism, Taoism and Confucianism. These pagan religions were greatly influenced by one another and interchanged traditions and practices. For this reason many researchers choose to examine these perverse religions together. One of these is Buddhism, which initially emerged in India in the 6th Century BC as an alternative to Hinduism. By the time it had made its way into China, it had fused together with other Chinese religious concepts and became therefore known as Chinese Buddhism. We have examined the erroneous practices of Buddhism, with its perverse worship

of the Buddha and requiring poverty and destitution from its adherents, in great detail in our book entitled *Islam and Buddhism*.

The interrelation between these three false religions is pronounced with the Chinese saying "three religions are one religion". Chinese people consider all three religions as complimentary to one another. Whilst Confucianism concentrates on social life and state governance, Taoism and Buddhism focus on people's spiritual development and everyday life with their rituals, false beliefs and rites. Even though there a large number of Buddhists in China, it is not considered a national religion because it still contains Hindu principles and practices, which is why Chinese culture tends to revolve more around Confucianism and Taoism.

Confucianism
A Superstitious System Disregarding Allah's Existence and the Life of the Hereafter

Confucianism is a social system that has at present approximately 200 million followers and is deeply rooted in Chinese culture. Its teachings are also widely practiced in Japan, Burma, Singapore and Thailand. It is the ordered and systemized product of various religions that have been practiced during China's 4,000-year history.

Superstitious Chinese religions are based on many nonsensical teachings and rest on the principle of faith in imaginary deities, and the spirits of ancestors, earth, water, mountains, forests and nature in general. Pagan rituals, acts of worship, sorcery, fortune telling and clairvoyance are common ground in Chinese society. The ancient agricultural society of China worshipped nature in ignorance, which they believed to be responsible for prosperity and famine, wealth and poverty. Furthermore, they believed in the influence of stars on everything

that took place on earth and therefore revered them as divinities. The spirits of deceased ancestors were revered above all else in their own foolish eyes. It was believed that they walked invisibly among men and exercised positive or negative influence over the lives of the living.

Besides all these divinities, there is another supposed "god" (Tien) above them in Chinese systems of faith. They believe that all other imaginary deities are subordinate to Tien, and follow his directives. As we have previously stated, this belief contradicts the monotheism of the Divine religions (to believe in Allah as the One and Only) and bears resemblance to idolatrous societies described in the Qur'an. People who have a monotheistic belief submit only to the all- powerful and Almighty Lord, ask only Allah for help, fear only Him and love only our exalted Lord. Idolaters on the other hand ascribe to beings other than Allah various powers, revere them in their own eyes and foolishly pray for their help. The pagan Chinese people worship invented idols, perform rituals for them, make offerings of food and presents to them and ask them to provide for their needs. Allah reveals the situation of people who follow blindly in the footsteps of their forefathers and ascribe partners to Him as follows:

> **They are nothing but names which you yourselves have given, you and your forefathers. Allah has sent down no authority for them. They are following nothing but conjecture and what their own selves desire. And that when guidance has reached them from their Lord! (Surat an-Najm: 23)**

Confucianism is based on pagan traditional religions that have existed for over 2500 years in China and is widely considered to be the ultimate socioethic guidance.

Confucianism is not a true religion based on Allah's revelations but is a system formulated by the Chinese thinker Confucius. This sys-

tem, formulated by K'ung Tzu (551-479 BC), otherwise known in the West as Confucius[131] , does not make any reference to matters of religious substance, death or the hereafter. In time it evolved into a false religion that spread across the Far East.

Confucius was born in China's Shangtung province and lived five centuries before Christ's birth during the reign of the Chou Dynasty (BD 1027-256). His primary aim was to revive the ethical values of the initial period of the Chou dynasty because according to him, this was the "golden era" of the ruling dynasty. He believed that reviving these values was the only way of ensuring Chinese unity. For this reason he chose to reform and systemize the various beliefs, traditions and rituals that had dominated China for centuries rather than formulating a new system from scratch. The system he formulated focused on the social order. It regulated interfamilial relations, teacher-student relations, and sought to place the citizen-state relations on a sound footing. However, whilst he was realizing his ambition, he also reintroduced many pagan practices from ancient superstitious religions like reverence of ancestors, making offerings to them and considering women as second class citizens. There were other perverted practices he inherited from pagan religions existing in China that were not based on Divine revelations. As there was no concept of life in the hereafter, Judgment Day, fate, hell and paradise



Confucius

in the ancient superstitious Chinese religions, he made no mention of these realities revealed in Allah's Divine scriptures in the system he formulated. He did not reply or comment on such questions.[132] The system he tried to establish was thus doomed from the outset. As we will examine in greater detail over the coming pages, virtue is only possible with the fear of Allah and loving Him very deeply. For a person to be virtuous and consistent, a deep love as well as fear of Allah is essential.

At the beginning of the Chou dynasty, political unity and power was the most significant entity which had been gradually eroded by conflicts between the city states that formed the basis of the dynasty, by warring factions with imperialistic ambitions and attacks by marauding nomadic tribes. Confucius' city came under the rule of occupying forces. At this time, Confucius began to travel from royal court to royal court with a small group of his followers teaching and advising rulers as he went along. Within a short period of time he was appointed first a judge and then a justice minister. During this period Confucius' social system became highly influential in the workings of the state bureaucracy, but as it was also causing discomfort in certain circles he was forced to resign from his office. From then on he spent the rest of his life teaching his ethical social system until his death at the age of 74 in 478 BC.

Two centuries after his death the Sung dynasty was founded in China, and the emperor of the dynasty managed to establish his rule across all the provinces of the country. However, he was not as successful in banishing the followers of Confucianism as he wished, so he therefore had all books on Confucianism burned bar none. This action apparently proving insufficient to the emperor, he contented himself with having hundreds of Confucians burned alive as well. The Han dynasty, on the other hand, adopted a respectful stance towards



A picture depicting the burning of written texts and the killing of priests by the Emperor Ch'in Shih Huang Ti'nin.

Confucianism. Confucius himself had not left any written material behind, but his followers published a collection of his teachings under the name of "Great Knowledge and the Doctrine of the Middle Path" during the Han dynasty.

During the reign of the Han dynasty Confucianism became the official religion of China, and remained so for the next two thousand years, during which it changed considerably. The emperor became also the high priest known as the "Son of heaven" (Allah forbid). The

worship of the heavens and the earth entered the teachings and for centuries, almost all government agencies, traditions and the social order were based on Confucius's heretic beliefs. Between the years of 1313 and 1905, the entry exams for civil servants required knowledge of "the four books of Confucius" and until 1912, this system was an obligatory subject in the education system. Consequently, whole generations emerged that lived only for the world, never reflected on death, the hereafter or Judgment Day, seeking happiness instead in perverse and meaningless rituals.

The influence of Confucianism began to decline in 1911 when the empire collapsed. During Mao's reign, Confucianism was declared the arch enemy and he had first all religious centers subordinated to the central authority, and then turned them into Maoist propaganda cen-



Maoists held anti-Confucian rallies all over China, and resorted to all forms of oppression in order to eradicate Confucianism from the country.

ters. Mao ordered all temples destroyed and all religious books burned, and Confucians began to be persecuted. Successive regimes subsequently eased the pressure and, especially in recent history, Confucianism's heretical principles have begun to play a role in everyday life once more. At present Confucianism plays an important, albeit unofficial, role in public life. Indeed, many Sinologists have referred to current Chinese government doctrine as "neo-Confucianism".

In Japan it has about 10 million followers where it enjoys widespread support in society.

THE SUPERSTITIOUS SOCIAL ORDER ENVISAGED BY CONFUCIANISM

Confucius' life is largely mythological as far as in the written records are concerned, the reason being that there are no written records remaining from that period. All of what is today the written material was based on verbal transmissions. At present the material available to us consists of his views reworked, altered and rearranged by his followers. This is what comes to mind when Confucianism is spoken of, and it is therefore all but impossible to verify the authenticity of the material accredited to him. However it is still possible to get a picture of his fundamental ideas from the available material.

❖ Confucius and Belief in Allah

Works written on Confucius claim that he had a belief in Allah, and it is possible to encounter claims that he believed in a "god of the Heavens", but the works accredited to him make no reference to a belief in Allah. Confucius advises people to be individuals of virtue, describes deeds that are damaging to law and order and sets the rules for inter-personal relations. Besides these, he does not make any revela-

tions, answer questions or refer to subjects like death or fate. His views are based on the principle that "all people are good from birth and that they therefore do not require divine guidance".

Virtue, in reality, is only attainable with the fear of Allah and total compliance with His commandments. Fear of, as well as love for, Allah is absolutely essential for consistent, good morality. To fear Allah appropriately is dependent on the constant awareness of Allah's greatness, power and might, His infinite knowledge, His ability to do anything He wishes and His total power and sovereignty over His servants. It also requires a faith free of doubt in His promises, warnings, the Day of Judgment, the severity of His punishment and the eternity of His vengeance in hellfire which gives rise to the fear of Him. This fear leads people to act, behave, move and speak according to Allah's good pleasure and the morality He prescribes. An Allah-fearing person will be sensitive to His limits.

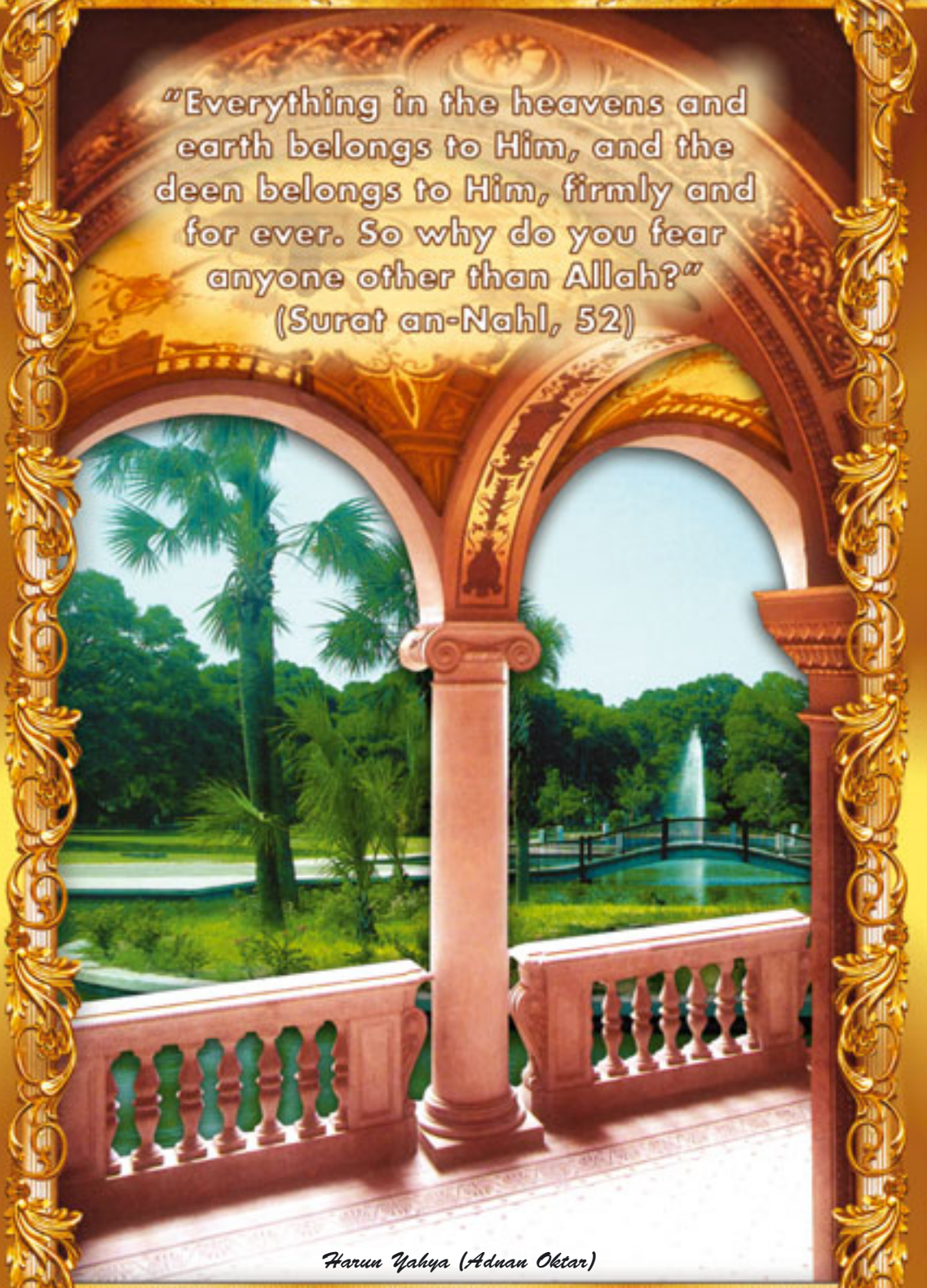
People who do not fear Allah on the other hand will, or can, do anything He does not approve of. For instance, someone abiding by Confucius's rules can, when his self interest requires him to do so, easily act in a manner contrary to these principles. He can lie where he should be honest, steal when he is in need or be corrupt because there is simply nothing to prevent him. There is no reason for someone who has forgotten that he will be held accountable by Allah, to be honest, to be selfless, to be just and honorable; in short, to be of virtue. His character is defined by his self-interest and ambitions and he has no reason for being moral towards anyone whatsoever. As he cannot comprehend Allah's determination of destiny, His threat of punishment is no hindrance for him. He can be aggressive, cruel and unrestrained towards others as he does not fear Allah and His wrath. He does not ponder Allah's might and punishment as he transgresses against His lim-

its. For such reasons, people devoid of the fear of Allah are liable to commit sin and immorality irrespective of the social system they are subject to.

For people who have no faith in and fear of Allah, the world is disorderly and unpredictable. They think that everything happens accidentally or coincidentally. In such an environment a sense of security and happiness cannot develop, because at any time, something can happen to them that may be distressing, saddening or damaging. They have countless anxieties and worries about the future such as suffering from a terminal illness, bankruptcy or a separation from his beloved ones or an unforeseen tragedy that may strike them anywhere. As they believe that all these events are uncontrolled, they have a separate fear of each of them. As they know, they have no control over these events, they are susceptible to great despair and hopelessness. There are many rivals in their environment waiting for an opportunity to take advantage of them and it is not possible to fight them all. They are constantly trying to discover what others think of them, which causes severe stress and tensions. Someone who has faith in and fears Allah has none of these issues. The fear of Allah and faith in Him removes all such worries. Knowing that Allah is the Owner and Creator of everything there is, that everything happens by Allah ordaining it, and according to the destiny determined by Him, and that He will protect and watch over His servants who believe and trust in Him, frees people from suffering every kind of fear and dependence.

It is for these reasons that the superstitious belief of the pagan father of the Prophet Abraham (pbuh) is revealed as follows in a verse:

> **Remember when he said to his father, "Father, why do you worship what can neither hear nor see and is not of any use to you at all?" (Surah Maryam: 42)**


"Everything in the heavens and earth belongs to Him, and the deen belongs to Him, firmly and for ever. So why do you fear anyone other than Allah?"
(Surat an-Nahl, 52)

❖ Concertrating Solely on Matters Reated to the Life of This World

As mentioned earlier, Confucius never referred to death, hereafter, hell and paradise or fate. His primary concern was social order. He showed no interest when questioned over death or providence and expressed the view that pondering such matters was unnecessary. He refrained from commenting on death and directed people away from the fear of Allah and belief in the hereafter towards working solely for this life.

It is a grave mistake not to reflect on death and what awaits mankind thereafter, because escaping death is not possible. Every living being is born to die one day. Some die at an early age, some in their youth and others leave the world in old age. Nothing that one possesses in terms of wealth, property, fame, power or beauty can prevent death. Allah says:

> **"You have come to Us all alone just as We created you at first, leaving behind you everything We bestowed on you..." (Surat al-An'am: 94)**

Everybody so far has surrendered to death, and everybody will continue to do so in the future. In Confucianism, people fall into the error of complacency with regards to death. People have developed a false sense of security; if they don't think about it, they won't die. Allah reveals this situation as follows:

> **Say: "Death, from which you are fleeing, will certainly catch up with you. Then you will be returned to the Knower of the Unseen and the Visible and He will inform you about what you did." (Surat al-Jumu'a: 8)**

These people will meet a fiercer punishment the more they flee the thought of death when they die. The greater their ignorance in this life,

the greater their terror, shock and pain when they meet death on the Day of Judgment and eternal condemnation.

❖ The Perversion of Ancestor Worship

Confucius used the traditional superstitious Chinese beliefs as his basis when formulating his rules governing family life. He integrated the heretical reverence of his forefathers into his system, and pagan rites and perverse sacrifice rituals became important features of it.

This perverse worship of ancestors is an important aspect of Confucianism. Today, as in the past, shrines devoted to ancestors occupy one of the corners in the homes of most Chinese people. "Ancestor Tablets" are kept there which contain the names of their forefathers. Chinese people perversely make sacrifices and offerings to these tablets, and marriage ceremonies are conducted in front of them. Food, fruit and drinks are placed before them. It is believed that the spirits of ancestors come here to rest. Each local community celebrates two festivals a year for their common ancestors with music and dancing, by which they try to please and entertain their ancestors, at least in their own eyes. It is believed that the spirits of their ancestors can only find peace and happiness in this way, but no one ponders the irrationality of such bewildering offerings and no one realizes that the spirits they believe to make contact with have no power or influence over anyone's life. They perform these rituals blindly, unconsciously and habitually. Despite China's having a rational education program or being a global leader in scientific thought does not prevent anyone from performing these heretical rituals, because the supposed worship of ancestors' spirits is so deeply ingrained in the Chinese mind.

Confucius is one of the spirits people seek to honor by performing



The present-day adherents of Confucianism, a religion of "ancestor worship," celebrate the birthday of the founder of their superstitious faith with various rituals.

rituals for him. These perverse ritualistic practices are still continued today. Peking University holds the Confucius tablets.[133]

Reverence and respect for ancestors become a pagan ritual in superstitious Chinese religions. Much of Chinese society has inherited the practice of exalting ancestors to the level of divinities, and this practice still continues after many centuries. Without ever questioning the propriety of these practices, these rituals have been a major part of Chinese life for centuries. Allah reveals in His verses that ancient nations followed their forefathers' heretical practices:

> **They found their fathers misguided and they are following hard upon their heels. (Surat as-Saffat: 69-70)**

Despite the heretical practices in the Confuciusian system, it does however contain some aspects which are compatible with the morality of the Qur'an. Confucius aimed to establish a social order that based the relationship between people on mutual love and respect. His ethical philosophy was successful in creating a sense of responsibility, honesty and dedication in the individual and thus played a major role in shaping the morality of the Chinese people in many respects.

❖ He emphasized the virtues of family life, and advised mutual love and respect between children and parents.

❖ He advised every individual to fulfill his responsibilities diligently and pointed out the importance of the shared sense of responsibility for social progress. He also stated that if everyone does his share, social ills could be eradicated.

❖ He placed "Yin", or goodwill, and love into his concept of the good. He strongly advised people to do good for one another, to be selfless and loving.

❖ He stressed the importance of loyalty and recommended loyalty in the family, work life, friendship and public life.

❖ He recommended fairness and advised people to respond with justice to injustice.

❖ His maxim of "Do not do unto others that you do not wish done to you" became one of the central tenets of Confucianism.

These positive aspects of Confucius' doctrine played a major role in the acceptance of it as a moral philosophy. However, it is not possible for a philosophy that is not based on faith in the almighty Lord and fear of Him to lead people to salvation. People can only attain true happiness in this life as well as in the hereafter by believing wholeheartedly in Allah and by submitting to Him.

TAOISM
A PAGAN RELIGION OF ANCESTOR AND NATURE WORSHIP

As we had mentioned earlier, with the emergence of Confucianism Shamanism had declined in Chinese society but returned later under the name Taoism. Taoism represented ancient Chinese culture and Chinese folk religion. Whereas Confucianism had a greater influence on the state bureaucracy and the educated classes, Taoism became popular with the masses.

In the present day, Taoism is practiced in China, Japan, North and South Korea, which is where the majority of its adherents live. It is estimated that there are approximately twenty million Taoists around the world, but some sources estimate this figure could be as high as ninety-five million, as various beliefs in China merge, making it more difficult to determine the number of Taoists there. Taoism has spread to all corners of the world, albeit not as a religion. People around the world have chosen to adopt some aspects of Taoism and not others. For instance Taoist practices like acupuncture, alternative medicine, fortune telling, meditation and astrology have gained widespread acceptance in the west.

It is believed that Taoism was founded by Lao-Tse around 500 BC, yet nothing is known of him, and there is some doubt as to whether he even existed. Some sources claim that Lao-Tse was an archivist who migrated to the West in his old age where he dictated his book The Way of Virtue to a customs official. Taoists consider this book *Tao Te Ching* as their supposed sacred scripture. It has two parts, and the text consists of 5000 words. It is believed to have been written by Lao-Tse.

TAOISM IS A MISGUIDED MYTH

Taoism is presented as a path leading to people to peace, happiness and a balanced life, but this definition does not reflect the truth because the mystical and philosophical statements it makes lead people to false beliefs, sorcery, worthless causes, magic, despair and inaction.

It is a difficult task to define Taoism as it has been constantly changing with superstitious traditions passed on from generation to generation, and the influences of Confucianism and Buddhism. A general definition says that it is the path that must be followed through life; in other words, it is a way of life based on certain principles, which are not based on Allah's revelation. This is why Taoism contains many contradictions, much nonsense and also explanations that are not compatible with reason or common sense.

Taoists believe that man is a part of the ongoing cosmic process called Tao (The Way). His most crucial choice in life is between recognizing this reality, thus becoming one with it, or to resist and remain outside of the Tao. According to this false and perverse belief man has been created by the Tao and will return to it. The Tao is the basis of, and the creative power behind everything. Taoism does not recognize the belief in the Almighty and All-powerful Allah. The Tao is considered to be the so called "cause that governs" the world without a consciousness, soul or identity; the Tao is more of an abstract phe-



A statue of Lao Tzu, the founder of Taoism.

nomenon. Questions as to how it created the miraculous balance and order in nature and the universe remain unanswered. Taoists prefer to believe in an abstract term called "Tao" instead of believing in Allah's absolute existence. For that reason they fall into a terrible perversion.

Yet the mystical aura of Taoism attracts many people and it can spread among the ignorant with relative ease. In reality however, it is a heretical, highly decorative and philosophical belief system that causes people to distance themselves from rational thoughts given up for a life of erroneous beliefs. For instance, a fictitious principle of faith in Taoism is "Yin" and "Yang". These two words stand for a lot of things in Taoism. Life in the universe is based on the principle of "Yin" and "Yang" where Yang represents all that exists on earth and Yin all that does not. Yin is thought to be the breath that created the world and it is described with words like cold, evil, dark and negative energy. Yang on the other hand is thought as warm, good, bright and positive energy. Books on Taoism frequently mention that Yin and Yang could not exist without one another and everything should have a balance of Yin and Yang. Such statements sound quite important, but in reality they are not saying anything about the truths revealed by Allah.

Taoism is an idolatrous religion that perversely reveres almost anything as supposedly divine. Every imaginary deity supposedly worshipped in Taoism is believed to represent an aspect of the Tao. For instance, Yu-huang is one of the most important deities in Taoism and all other deities are believed to be answerable to him. According to this pagan belief Yu-huang measures the other deities' performance on a yearly basis and either rewards them by increasing their responsibilities or punishes them accordingly. It is interesting to note that Taoists do not pray to these deities as they do not believe them to be able to help them overcome their problems. Taoists believe that this can only





(top) A charm symbolizing the philosophy of the yin and yang, which represents the essence of Taoism but which provides no information at all about the reality of life. (Side) A 17th century picture showing young and old working with the superstitious yin-yang symbol.

be done by observation, contact with the spirits, sorcery and meditation. A Taoist has to be thoroughly trained to learn the name, rank and powers of the relevant deities as well as meditation and visualization methods in order to benefit from them.[134]



Taoists superstitiously regard all entities, living or inanimate, as divine, and are far too bewitched to realize the enormous dimension of the error they are committing.

Many Taoists place the icons of their deities in wardrobes in their homes. These deities have a different meaning for each Taoist. Most Taoists worship the imaginary war god Kuan-Ti and the so-called god of commerce, Sai Shin. The polytheism common to pagan religions like Hinduism, Jainism and Shintoism is also deeply rooted in Taoism. We have stated repeatedly in this book that they imagine that worshipping stone or wooden idols and making offerings to them is a fundamental perversion and irrationality. Allah reveals in the Qur'an that these kind

of pagan societies have existed throughout history. Taoists are no different. Allah makes an example of the Israelites in the Qur'an. During the migration of some of the Israelites together with the Prophet Moses (pbuh), and after their rescue from persecution by Pharaoh, they met an idolatrous people on the way and requested of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) that he make them an idol just like theirs. This incidence is revealed in the Qur'an as follows:

> **We conveyed the tribe of Israel across the sea and they came upon some people who were devoting themselves to some idols which they had. They said, "Moses, give us a god just as these people have gods." He said, "You are indeed an ignorant people. What these**



Taoist shamans of the kind shown in the picture claim to be able to cure disease and drive out evil spirits to the accompaniment of various dances.

people are doing is destined for destruction. What they are doing is purposeless." (Surat al-A'raf: 138-139)

Some of the Israelites acted in ignorance and requested a supposed deity they could see with their own eyes, before which they could prostrate themselves or could perform heretical rituals. This situation reveals the level of their ignorance and that they did not appreciate or comprehend Allah's providence. Despite the fact that the Prophet Moses (pbuh) explained the truth to them they acquired an idol as soon as he left them, which was a grave sin. They eventually repented as revealed in the Qur'an:

After he left, Moses's people took the Calf (for worship) made from their ornaments, a form which made a lowing sound. Did they not see that it could not speak to them or guide them to any way? They adopted it and so they were wrongdoers. When they took full stock of what they had done and saw they had been misled, they said, "If our Lord does not have mercy on us and forgive us, we will certainly be among the lost." (Surat al-A'raf: 148-149)

However, Allah responds to those who take the Calf as deities and do not repent:

As for those who adopted the Calf, anger from their Lord will overtake them together with abasement in the life of this world. That is how we repay the purveyors of falsehood. (Surat al-A'raf: 152)

It is revealed in the above verses that Allah can choose to forgive those who ascribe partners to Him as they are in reality falling for a lie. Whereas Allah is clearly the one and only God, they adopted false idols for worship. To prostrate before them is a grave sin. The Taoists' situation is like that of all pagan people throughout history; They are also a people who are numbed with superstitious nonsense and teachings, and unable to see the perversion in which they found themselves. They

cling to the religion of their forethers, as if they had been bewitched. If they were to seriously contemplate on these heretical beliefs, to listen to the voice of reason and conscience, to seek the righteous path and to closely examine their ancient teachings and superstitious traditions with discernment, they would surely realize the existence of Allah, His power and compassion.

THE FUTILE SEARCH FOR IMMORTALITY OF SOME CHINESE PEOPLE

One of the greatest quests of the ancient Shamans was to find ways of achieving immortality in this life by means of sorcery, spells and alchemy. Taoists inherited this dubious idea from Shamans and never ceased to pursue this quest. Martin Palmer explains this perverse belief in his book titled *World Religions, A History of Faith:*

Taoists believe that they can achieve immortality for their bodies by means of rituals and diets. The quest for immortality and supernatural powers has an important place in Chinese mythology. Immortal characters with supernatural powers in Chinese legends and films are representative of this belief. In some beliefs, certain foods and drinks provide immortality, whereas in others, daily meditation delivers this goal.[135]

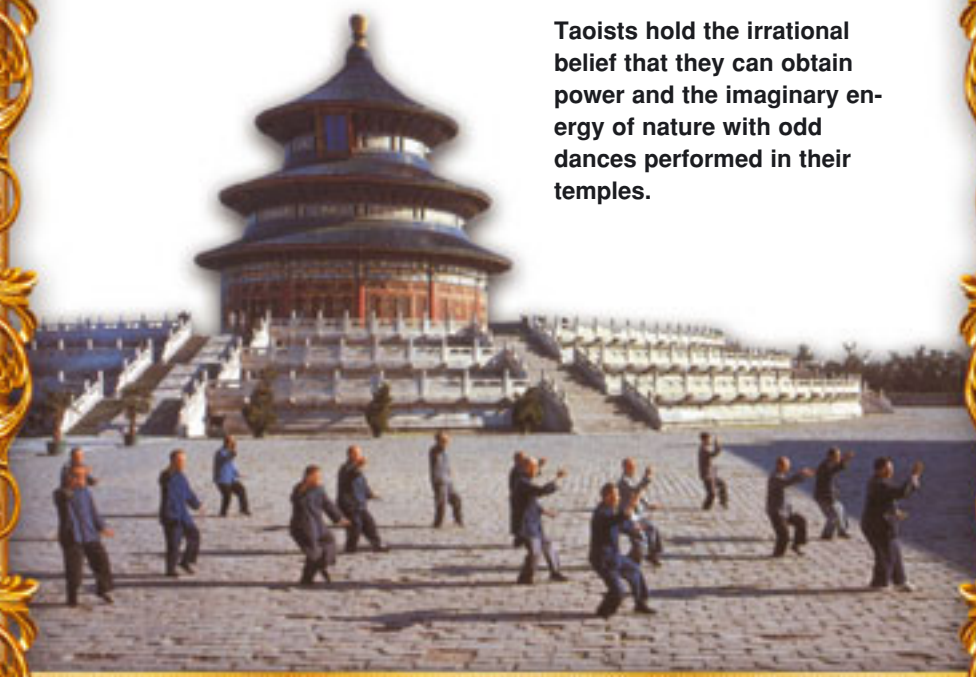
Taoism's central message lies hidden in this labyrinth. They have sought to achieve immortality for many centuries by making potions from certain herbs. All the diets, exercises and massage methods are the result of this quest. This quest may well have led to a certain amount of progress in herbal medicine, but it is doomed to fail in its ultimate objective. It is not possible to achieve anything but good health by these efforts, because Allah has created every human being as mortal. Once man's trial on earth is complete, he will die. Allah says:

We did not give any human being before you immortality. And if you die, will they then be immortal? Every self will taste death. We test you with both good and evil as a trial. And you will be returned to Us. (Surat al-Anbiya': 34-35)

People who have sought immortality or to live for a thousand years are mentioned in the Qur'an. Allah says in one verse:

Rather you will find them the people greediest for life, along with the idolaters. One of them would love to be allowed to live a thousand years. But being allowed to live would not save him from the punishment. Allah sees what they do. (Surat al-Baqara: 96)

There is not one human being who has been able to protect himself against aging and death, and there is no one who will not die, because man is not the proprietor of his body and life. The fact that he has not himself chosen to live is proof for this. Another indicator of this is the fact that he cannot prevent his death. The Owner of all life is the



Taoists hold the irrational belief that they can obtain power and the imaginary energy of nature with odd dances performed in their temples.

One that gives it, and He takes it again when He wants. All the people who have come before, and all who are with us today, and all the people who will come after us have, or will, die. Allah reveals this reality in the following way:

> **Every self will taste death. You will be paid your wages in full on the Day of Resurrection. Anyone who is distanced from the Fire and admitted to the Garden has triumphed. The life of this world is just the enjoyment of delusion. (Surah Al 'Imran: 185)**

This world is a place of learning. Allah has given people various responsibilities and revealed His limits. If man observes these limits, obeys the commandments and refrains from what is forbidden to him, he will spiritually, intellectually and consciously mature. He learns to be patient, never to compromise on Allah's religion, to turn to Him in all matters and to seek only His help. He also learns to respect Him appropriately and to fear, respect and love Him in equal measure. He thus acquires a pure faith and total submission to Him. He comes to appreciate Allah's providence truthfully and thus his gratefulness, love and proximity to Allah is enhanced and finally he becomes a perfect believer of superior mind and character. He becomes a person who is deserving of entrance into Allah's glorious paradise

Man is tried by the many events in his life and according to his success or failure, he either deserves reward or punishment. No one knows when his trial will end. Death is **"at a predetermined time"** (Surah Al 'Imran: 145) as revealed by the Qur'an. Life can be sometimes long and sometime short. Even the longest lives rarely exceed 70 or 80 years.

For this reason, man should realize that he is answerable to Allah, that he will be held accountable for all his actions in life and that he should live by the guidance provided by the Qur'an and our Prophet

(may Allah bless him and grant him peace) instead of scheming for a long life. If he does not prepare for his eternal life, if he misses this one opportunity to enter paradise, he will have met a truly sad end. For this reason, every wasted second is a great loss and a step towards a sorrowful end.

Man should prepare beforehand for all eventualities and death is a certainty. When he encounters death, he will be alone and subsequently face judgment alone**: "You have come to Us all alone just as We created you at first, leaving behind you everything We bestowed on you"** (Surat al-An'am, 94) Those who seek eternal salvation are advised by Allah as follows:

> **You who believe! Have fear of Allah and let each self look to what it has sent forward for Tomorrow. Have fear of Allah. Allah is aware of what you do. Do not be like those who forgot Allah so He made them forget themselves. Such people are the deviators. (Surat al-Hashr: 18-19)**

Confucians on the other hand are quite content with this life on earth as if they are never to die. Allah reveals such people's condition as follows:

> **Say: "Shall I inform you of the greatest losers in their actions? People whose efforts in the life of the world are misguided while they suppose that they are doing good." (Surat al-Kahf: 103-104)**
>
> **Allah expands provision to anyone He wills and restricts it. They rejoice in the life of the world. Yet the life of the world, compared to the hereafter, is only fleeting enjoyment. (Surat ar-Ra'd: 26)**
>
> **Those who are blind in the world will be blind in the hereafter and even further off the Path. (Surat al-Isra': 72)**

FROM THE QUEST FOR IMMORTALITY TO SORCERY

Chinese people since ancient times have practiced fortune telling, astrology, spell casting, healing and sorcery. They developed meditation, breathing and healing techniques in their quest for immortality; this inevitably led them one way or the other into paganism.

Some Taoist movements focused on sorcery, calling on so-called divine spirits, making offerings to the deceased, casting spells for rain and winds, healing and exorcism. The Chinese were more inclined to divert their search for immortality from the field of medicine to sorcery. There were also sects of immortality, and one of the most important leaders of such movements which emerged from the Taoist school was Chang Tao Ling (AD 34) Tao Ling is acknowledged to be the founder of today's Taoism of sorcery and superstition. According to Taoist legends, Ling received from Lao Tse the sword and other tools from the world of spirits and thus came to control this world. Such movements believed that it was possible to achieve immortality by means of meditation, breathing exercises and control, stretching, bathing, diet, use of medicines, and altering the positions of the body; one of the humorous side effects of this quest for immortality was the absurd belief that one could attain invisibility! Tang-Yie-Jie from Peking University describes the irrational and illogical aspects of the search for immortality in his book titled *Confucianism, Buddhism, Daoism, Christianity and Chinese Culture* as follows:

At the end of the Warring States period (that is the third and second centuries B.C.) there existed people who called themselves "immortals" and claimed that by certain practices they could "extend their lives and not die"… How can people keep from dying? The ideal in the Taoist religion is for people to "extend their lives and not die," to "fly

up in this very body" that is, to become an immortal… if you die, everything is finished, so in order to seek to extend life, first, you must get a body that does not decay so that the spirit or soul will have a place to abide… Daoism (Taoism) has various methods to accomplish this purpose. The most basic of these are two sorts? The outer pill and the inner pill. The outer pill consists of using various minerals, especially mercury, in order to concoct a potion. It is hoped that by ingesting various potions one can keep one's body from decaying, and then the soul can continue forever in its midst. They claim that if you put a bronze mud on your feet and soak your feet in water for a very long time, you will not decay. If you can find the so-called golden pill, once you eat it your whole body will be able to live forever without decaying.[136] Almost all religions seek to solve the problem of what will happen to man after his death, but Daoism (Taoism) in China alone chooses belief in Daoism (Taoism) for "living in eternity" and for "the body of flesh to become immortal." Therefore, finding a solution to the question of life and death, seeking deliverance and immortality, and finally reaching the state of "living in eternity" are characteristics of Daoism (Taoism). Daoism advocates realizing immortality in the flesh, man can leave this bitter reality and enter the word of immortality.[137]

In reality all these pagan beliefs are nonsensical. As we have previously stated, it is impossible for any man to acquire immortality in this life unless Allah wills it. Our Lord has created every human being as mortal beings, and every one of us will die when the time has come. No medicine, no healing, no diet or any other method can prevent death. Allah states the following:

> **Wherever you are, death will catch up with you, even if you are in impregnable fortresses. If a good thing happens to them, they say,**

"This has come from Allah." But if a bad thing happens to them, they say, "This has come from you." Say, "Everything comes from Allah." What is the matter with these people that they scarcely understand a single word? (Surat an-Nisa': 78)

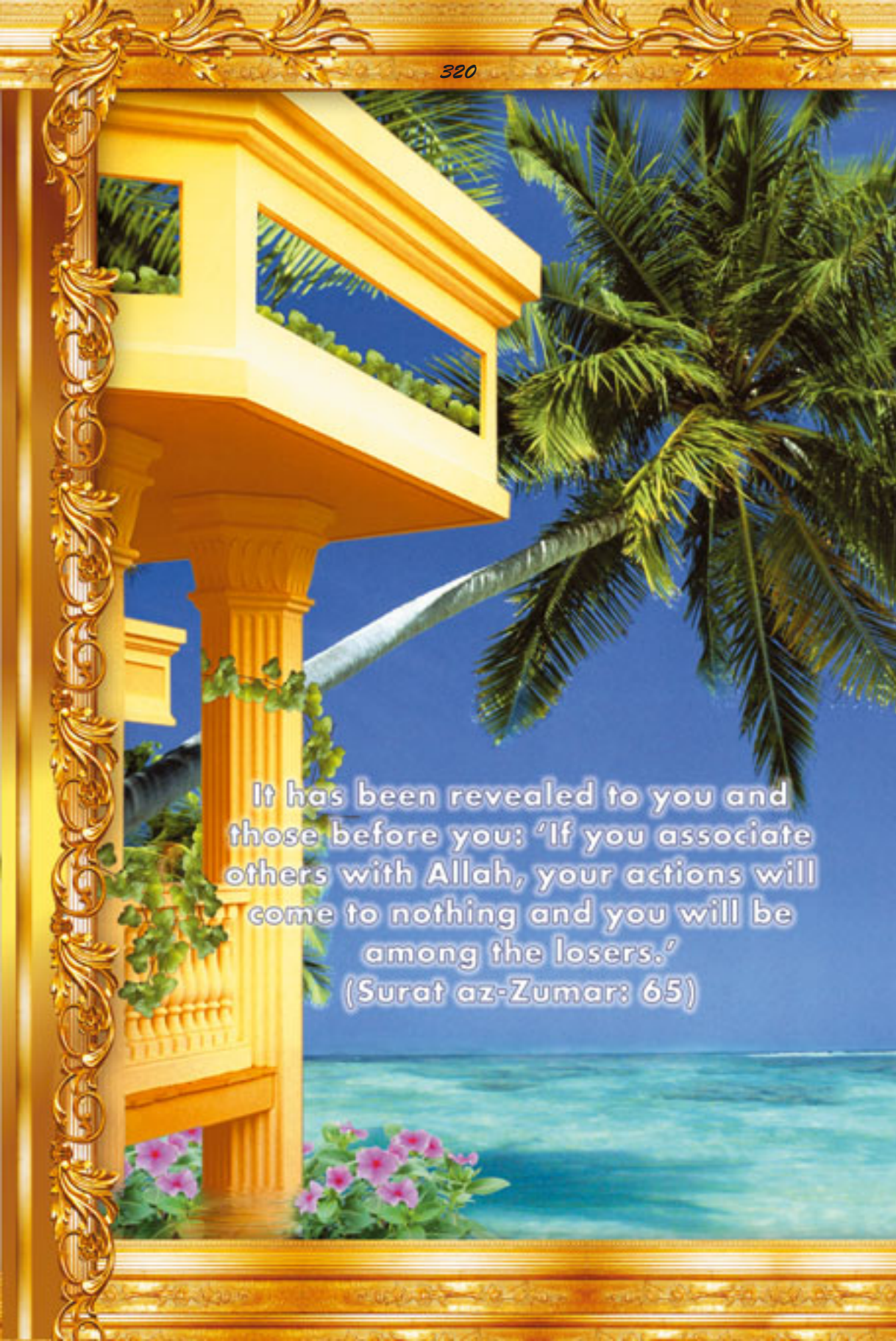
No indeed! We have given these people enjoyment, as We did their fathers, until life seemed long and good to them. Do they not see how We come to the land eroding it from its extremities? Or are they the victors? (Surat al-Anbiya': 44)

THE REVIVAL OF TAOISM

Taoism has had many ups and downs in its long history. As noted earlier, Taoism was a respected belief until the rise of the Han dynasty, but with the emergence of Buddhism in the 6th century it began to decline. It was promoted again in the 8th century by Emperor Hsuan Tsung, but the Manchu emperor declared the Taoist teachings a heresy once more.

With the arrival of communist rule in China, all religions were prohibited. The new regime forced all monks to work in agriculture, closed the temples and confiscated their property. By the year 1960, the number of monks had declined from several million to about 50,000. During the Cultural Revolution, which took place between the years 1966-1976, whatever was left of the Taoist heritage was largely eradicated. During this time all but a few temples were closed, thousands were destroyed, and 95% of all idols and icons were destroyed by fanatical Red Guards, and this almost succeeded in eradicating Taoism.

Following the rise to power of Deng Xiaoping in 1982, Taoism and the other superstitious beliefs began to be revived again. They were organized anew in the 1980s and some temples came to life again. At pre-


It has been revealed to you and
those before you: 'If you associate
others with Allah, your actions will
come to nothing and you will be
among the losers.'
(Surat az-Zumar: 65)



sent the Taoist religion finds its adherents all around the world.[138] Taoism comprises all the mystical far eastern traditions like meditation, yoga and fortune telling and constitutes "a major force in the atheistic heretical religions of the 21st century" which we will examine in greater detail in the coming chapters. The pagan New Age movement, described by the Vatican as "The arch enemy of Christianity of the century", is nothing but an aberration promoted around the globe by certain materialist circles in order to prevent belief in Allah, at least in their own eyes.

"Scenes of Savagery" in Chinese traditions

Throughout the course of this book we have looked at many heretical traditions and superstitions belonging to Far Eastern religions. We have seen, for example, how Hindu tradition encourages the burning of women and the burying of female children while they are still alive. However, Far Eastern religions actually play host to far wider ranging scenes of savagery. One of these is what happens during the "Vegetarian Festival" in the Chinese region of Phuket.

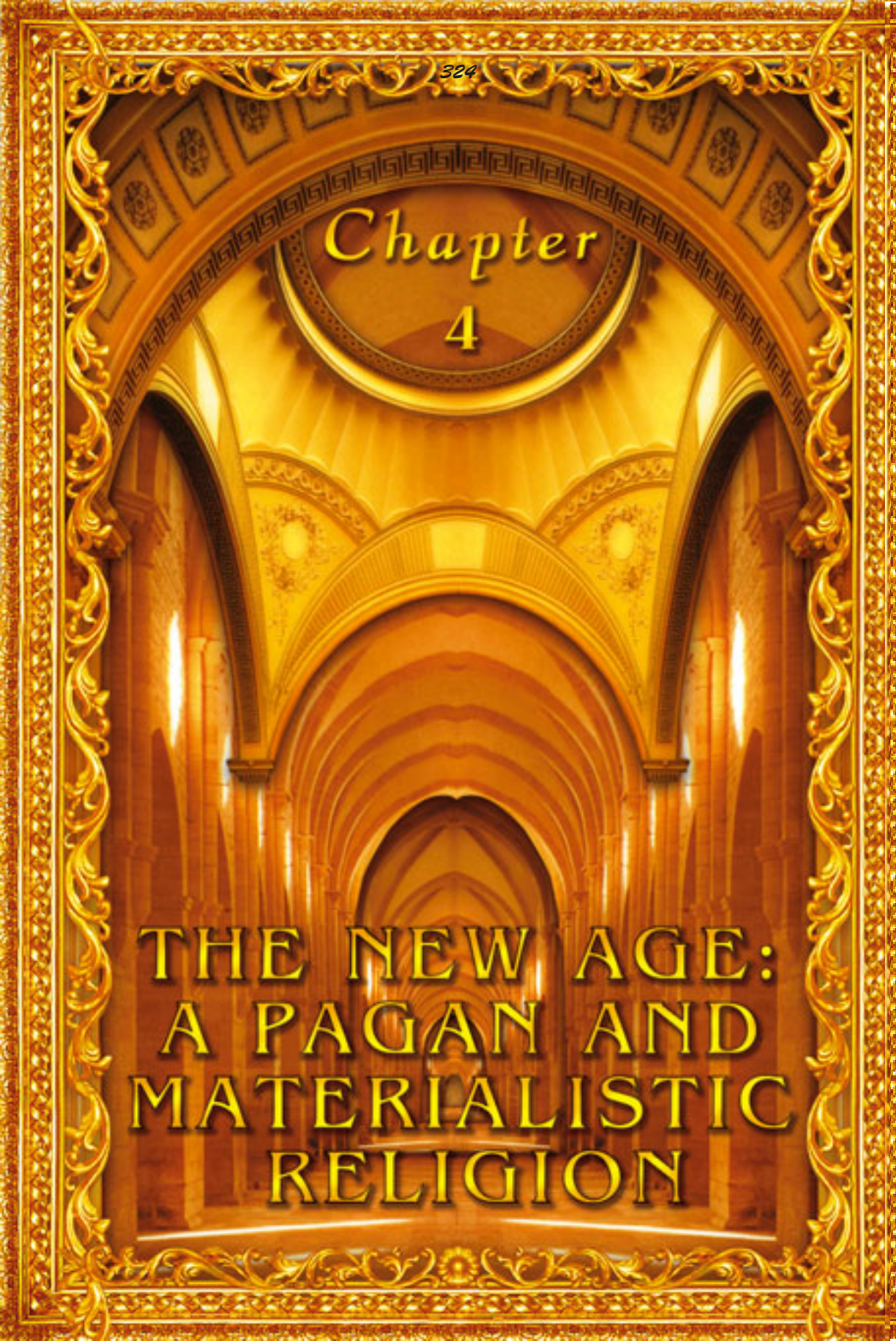


The aim of this peculiar festival, which has taken place on a regular basis every year since the early 19th century, is to pay respects to the supposed Chinese gods. These nonsensical displays of "respect" involve terrible practices that it is difficult even to look at. The reason why the event is called the "Vegetarian Festival" is that people refrain from eating meat and consume only fruit and vegetables during the 9 days it lasts. The Chinese hold the superstitious belief that in this way they can cleanse their souls and bodies of evil.

Throughout the festival, people misled into thinking that imaginary "spirits have entered their bodies" pierce their cheeks, tongues or other parts of their bodies. They then insert knives, sticks, various metal objects, tree branches or other such objects into these holes. Everyone's face is covered in blood. The Chinese public, blindly devoted to their perverted traditions, watch this savage ritual with great amazement. These people wander round the streets, eating what people offer them. According to this ridiculous Chinese belief, anyone touching these individuals will be cured of sickness and receive positive energy. These people, in a state of trance, lose all control of themselves and walk on fire, walk up steps made out of sharpened knives, pour boiling oil over themselves, and generally torture themselves for 9 days. They say that they inflict these tortures for the sake of their supposed gods, and that their souls and bodies are purified by means of them. These people are so devoid of reason and logic as to claim their souls can be cleansed by plunging skewers into their cheeks. The fact is, however, that the human soul can only draw apart from evil and attain a pure conscience through the will bestowed by fear of Allah, proper moral virtues and profound faith. Superstitious beliefs to the contrary, on the other hand, are the natural consequence of the



dark state of the soul of people who do not believe in Allah. Because there is no limit to the depravity of an unbeliever. Since such people imagine they will never have to account for their deeds in this world they regard it as perfectly legitimate to oppress and murder, and inflict violence and savagery on themselves and those around them. As we have seen in the preceding chapters of this book, such people have no conception of sin and crime. They therefore regard every superstition commanded by their perverted traditions as true, and blindly follow them to the letter. However, people caught up in such a superstitious way of life need to know that human beings are not totally free. They are responsible for all their actions, and they will have to account for their every word and deed in the Presence of Allah. As our Lord asks in Surat al-Qiyama: "Does man reckon he will be left to go on unchecked?"


Chapter
4
THE NEW AGE:
A PAGAN AND
MATERIALISTIC
RELIGION

So far in this book, we have concentrated on the pagan Far Eastern religions like Hinduism, Shintoism, Confucianism, Jainism, Shamanism and Taoism and their influence on Asian cultures. However, this influence is not restricted to the Asian continent alone. In time, these superstitious far eastern teachings found followers far from the lands in which they were born. Their influence began to spread owing to the carefully targeted propaganda of certain circles whereby these pagan religions literally became an important part of Western culture.

There are a number of reasons for the interest in superstitious Far Eastern religions. One of these is the depiction of their perverse rituals and rites as full of enigmatic features. The way of life, dress code, pagan beliefs, philosophies and strange sermons of the followers of these religions are wholly different to Western societies. The presentation of these differences in a positive manner creates a sense of curiosity and interest in the Western mind. People who choose to enter or practice these pagan religions do so not because they believe in them or find them rational, but because they are influenced by the so called "mystical" aura surrounding them. However, there is another reason behind the continuing spread of these superstitious religions in Western society besides the excitement and interest: they are pagan, materialistic and atheistic.

NEW AGE: ATHEISTIC RELIGION COMPRISING THE HERETICAL TEACHINGS OF FAR EASTERN RELIGIONS

The introduction of superstitious Far Eastern religions into Western society began in the 19th century. At that time many European "scientists" traveled to the Far East and the west learned about the cultures of the east through their published travel accounts. Translations of scriptures from the superstitious faiths in question further increased

The actions of opponents of the Vietnam War spread across the whole country and soon turned into "opposition to the established order." Christianity and the Church were among the targets of young people influenced by materialist culture.







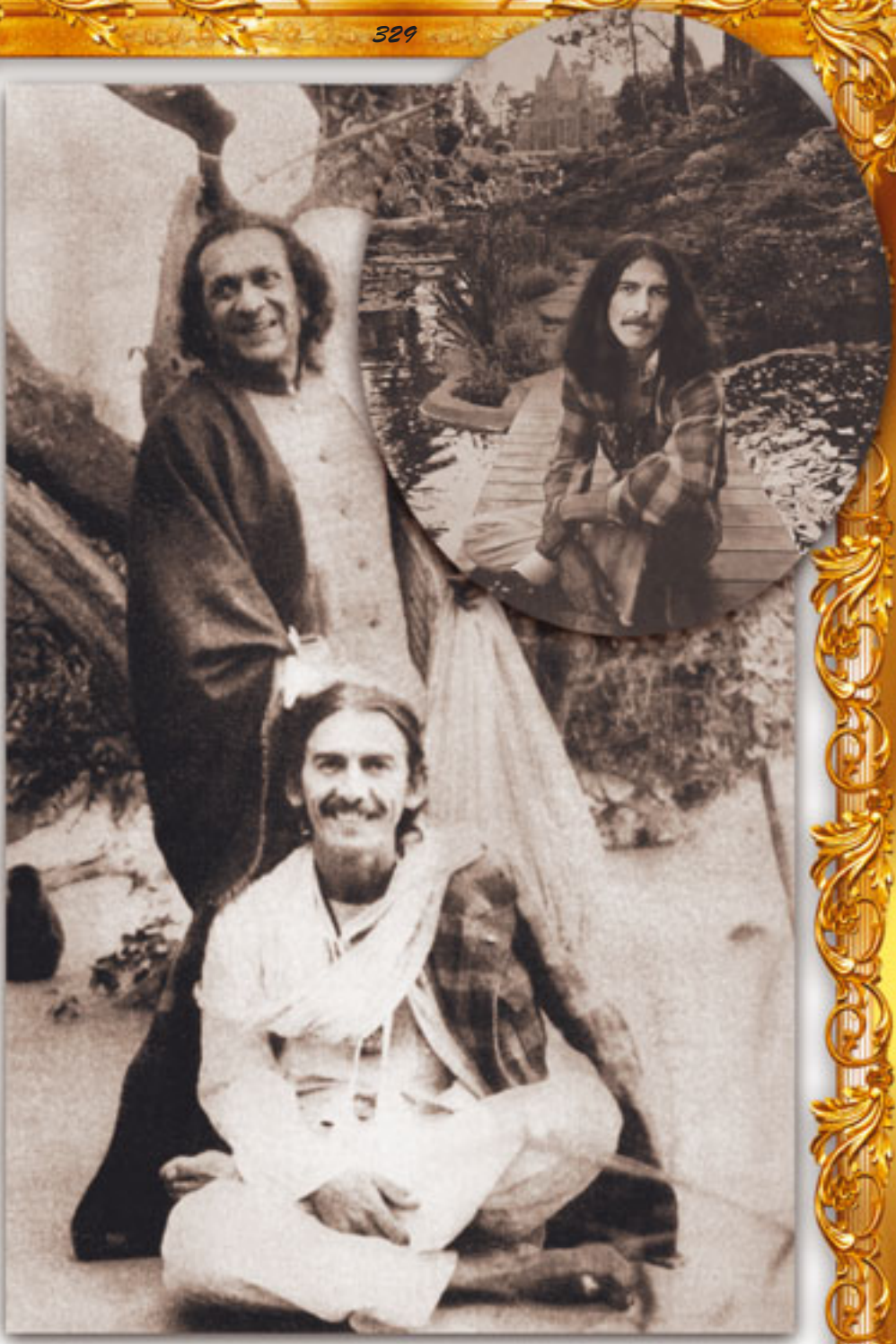


The clothes, dances and musical rhythms of the songs of the '68 hippy generation bore a close resemblance to Far Eastern culture.

the interest in the east. However, the West's current intimate acquaintance with Eastern cultures began in the 1960's.

The sixties were a dark turning point for Western societies. The destructive effects of two world wars, the atom bombs dropped on Japan, the Vietnam War, the hysteria around the justified struggle against communism and successive political scandals like Watergate created a great sense of rebellion in American youth against the establishment. However, this reaction while perhaps understandable, was emotional in nature, and was not based on a rational and reasonable framework, and this was used as a path to turn people away from religious moral values . The situation was no different in Europe. All the institutions of the Christian church were portrayed as a part of the "system" and the hostility towards the various governments of the democratic West was also directed at the church. In this era many young westerners and intellectuals left their traditional Christian beliefs in the search for a different way of life. Some irrationally chose atheism, others chose superstitious Far Eastern religions. The search for new ways of life was partly driven by the sense of "rebellion" as well as "attention seeking".

This trend was intentionally, or unwittingly, manipulated by those who shaped popular culture. The Beatles were one such influence. The news that band member George Harrison had chosen Hinduism created an admiration for this religion among millions of Beatles fans. Not just members of the entertainment industry but also many renowned intellectuals and scientists acquired superstitious far eastern teachings and supported their spread among the youth. However, the motives for their support were different: the compatibility between superstitious Far Eastern culture and the materialist aspects of Western culture. Those who adopted and promoted the super-



George Harrison, who inspired an enormous interest in Hindu culture among Beatles fans, wearing Hindu clothing alongside the Indian musician Ravi Shankar.

stitious Far Eastern culture were usually western materialists. The Judeo-Christian community on the other hand, remained distant to Far Eastern religion and never missed an opportunity to criticize them.

The "hippie" culture of the 1960's and 1970's lost its appeal and disappeared from the public mind, but the Eastern cultures that gripped the West never lost their pull on certain sections of society and developed and grew in power. Far Eastern religions then went one step further by becoming a new heretical syncretic movement with a new name that combined the pagan aspects of all Far Eastern religions, was atheistic, yet revered man instead (Allah forbid). The New Age Movement was driven by the dream of uniting the world under this "one single religion", thereby pronouncing the end of all Divine religions.

The Christian researcher Wilbur Bruinsma examined the development of this movement from the 1960's onwards in an article titled "The New Age Movement and Entertainment". He points out that the youth's rebellion against the system and quest for peace led them to the use of marihuana, LSD and other drugs, and then to seek supposed salvation in Hinduism and Zen Buddhism *(A movement popularized in the West by the Japanese philosopher D. T. Suzuki, who combined Buddhism with various Japanese beliefs. The word Zen means meditation in Chinese, and superstitious practices such as these represent the basis of Zen Buddhism).* He then proceeds to describe the effects of this pagan trend on the present day:

> *In the 1960's, and perhaps even more so in the 1970's, as in no prior time in history, there was a synthesis of Eastern and Western mysticism; the Eastern religions of Hinduism, Zen Buddhism, and Chinese Taoism were blended together with the radical occultism of Western mysticism. Given the well-fertilized seedbed of humanism, the fundamental teachings of mysticism have taken solid root in our country and culture and even throughout the world. This is the New Age Movement.*[139]

As Bruinsma states, the New Age Movement is a continuation of the hippie culture of the 1960's, but its actual origins can be traced back to the 18th century. The Theosophical Society (theosophy is a Greek word meaning *"Divine Mind"*) which was founded in America and then emerged also in Europe, aimed to introduce the pagan religions of the Far East into the lives of westerners and was the first instance of this movement.

THE THEOSOPHICAL SOCIETY

The Theosophical Society was founded in New York in 1875 by Colonel Henry Steel Olcott and Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, both ignorant admirers of superstitious Hinduism and Buddhism. The reason behind its creation was stated to be the research of religions, philosophies and sciences, but in practice it aimed to revive some antiquated teachings. Helena Blavatsky was an explorer who took a great interest in occultism, superstitious practices that claimed to make contact with the spiritual world, sorcery, mysticism and the pagan rituals of the Far Eastern religions. She had traveled many times to countries like India, Tibet, China and Japan in her quest to gain an insight into these teachings. She had written extensively about sorcery, the worship of the snake, contact with spirits and alchemy. Blavatsky was considered to be one of the main influences promoting occultist ideas and she frequently intimated that she had acquired supposedly supernatural powers. She claimed that she had been a student of Buddhism in Tibet and a number of gurus (guru means in Sanskrit "worthy of respect" and in Hinduism stands for a spiritual leader) and that she was a medium who could communicate with the spiritual world.[140] The Indian media was singularly unimpressed and gave her negative publicity and printed articles accusing her of fraud.[141]

Helena Blavatsky's teaching made no reference to a belief in Allah but attributed divinity to man instead (surely Allah is beyond that). According to her erroneous ideas, man was a supernatural being and had to unveil these powers by means of sorcery, meditation, contacting spirits and yoga. Blavatsky's heretical beliefs formed the basis for the Theosophical Society.



Helena Petrovna Blavatsky

Each of her dubious beliefs was irrational and misleading. It is Allah the Lord and Creator of man and the universe. He is eternal and infinite, Almighty and all-powerful. Man on the other hand is a helpless being, wholly dependent on Him and it is our most compassionate Lord Who created man from nothing, gave him life, power, intelligence and all other faculties. Without Allah, man has no power and no will. The situation of those who disregard Allah's wondrous Creation is described in the verses as follows:

> **Does not man see that We created him from a drop yet there he is, an open antagonist! He makes likenesses of Us and forgets his own Creation, saying, "Who will give life to bones when they are decayed?" Say "He Who made them in the first place will bring them back to life. He has total knowledge of each created thing; He Who produces fire for you from green trees so that you use them to light your fires." Does He Who created the heavens and earth not have the power to create the same again? Yes indeed! He is the Creator, the**


Or were they created out of
nothing, or are they the creators?
Or did they create the heavens and
the earth? No, in truth they
have no certainty.
(Surat at-Tur, 35-36)

All-Knowing. His command when He desires a thing is just to say to it, "Be!" and it is. Glory be to Him Who has the Dominion of all things in His Hand. To Him you will be returned. (Surah Ya Sin: 77-83)

Man came to be by Allah's command "Be!" and lives his life according to his destiny as determined by Allah. He will meet the angels of death at the time chosen by Allah and will account for all his actions in his life. It is therefore nonsensical and irrational in equal measures to believe that man, helpless and dependent as he is, could acquire by his own efforts supernatural powers. This fraud that "places man at the center of existence and depicts him as unaccountable to anyone" has been promoted by circles of a materialistic worldview.

In reality, Blavatsky's teachings are nothing but a version of the same atheist worldview and the "theory of evolution" was the other factor that shaped this society's ideology. Professor Rama P. Coosmaraswamy, history professor at the St Thomas Aquinas School of Theology, and known for his papers published on theology and philosophy, describes the Theosophical Society founded by Blavatsky as follows:

"Strongly influenced by the evolutionary thinking of that era, the Theosophists also believed in the existence of "masters" who were either "spirit beings" or men who were supposedly more highly "evolved" than the common heard... Theosophists were from the start against all orthodox forms of Christianity, and above all against the Roman Catholic Church. They attacked it both from without and from within - the latter by forming various organizations such as Esoteric or Hermetic Christianity and later the so-called Liberal Catholic Church."[142]

The Theosophist Society's ideology correlated to the materialistic and evolutionary worldview. They also irrationally rejected the exis-

tence of Allah, explained the universe's creation with coincidences and claimed that man supposedly evolved physically as well as spiritually and still continued to do so. Superstitious karma and reincarnation, the basis of Far Eastern religious beliefs, was claimed to be an expression of this evolutionary process. They believed that man would attain deep insight and a divine status, or even supposed godhood, (Surely Allah is beyond this) as a result of perfection achieved by continued successive new lives. (For more details on the heretic belief of karma and reincarnation see: *Chapter: Erroneous beliefs of death and afterlife in Hinduism*). In reality it was a perverse and fraudulent philosophy that had no rational basis, and this nonsensical belief formed the basis of the Theosophical movement and the other pagan beliefs that succeeded it. Alan Morrison is a Christian researcher and ex- New Age follower of many years who converted later to Christianity. He has written many books and articles on the heretical practices and beliefs of the New Age movement. Morrison explains the deceptive idea of "spiritual evolution" coined by Blavatsky as follows in his article entitled "From old Gnosticism to New Age, A Historical Analysis of the Mystery of Iniquity from the 6th Century to the Present Day":

> *"One of the Theosophical Society's contributions to New Gnosticism is the term 'spiritual evolution' used in the comprehensive works of Blavatsky. Just as man has evolved from lesser forms of life he continues to evolve towards a powerful, cosmic being. Each individual will continue to be subject to reincarnation thousands of times until he reaches a state of perfection. Blavatsky was not alone when defending spiritual evolution. As one author put it, this belief was expressed in various ways after Madame Blavatsky by Teilhard de Chardin, then Bergson and Nietzsche, but towards the end of the 19th century, no one else besides Blavatsky exercised such influence over people. New religious movements moved in to fill the void left by Christianity's decline.*

Blavatsky did not base her spiritual evolution theory on natural selection or coincidental developments. She was speaking of a master plan for the evolving universe, according to which the next step in evolution would bring about the golden age, thus giving people hope."[143]

There is no doubt that these doctrines consist of totally fictitious tales devoid of any rational foundation. In the same way that living things never evolved physically, neither did they ever undergo spiritual evolution. Allah created man with earthly desires and a conscience with which to avoid earthly temptations. Someone who heeds the voice of his conscience is always on the right path that Allah will find pleasing. But everyone who is deaf to the voice of his conscience is suffering a grave loss. Human beings come to Earth only once, as Allah breathes His spirit into them, and they die as the time ordained for them in this world comes to an end. But after death, the life of the hereafter that will last for all eternity begins. It is impossible for anyone who has died to come back to this world.

As Alan Morrison states, the lie of spiritual evolution became the inspiration for sworn Darwinists like Chardin and Bergson and fanatical enemies of religion like Nietzsche. John Carlo Rosales, a Christian researcher, defines this perverse movement's central doctrine in his work entitled "A Closer Look at the New Age Movement" as follows:

"In the modern sense, theosophy is a modern Gnostic movement which attempts a synthesis of religious, philosophical, and scientific insights drawn from many traditions, but primarily from Hindu philosophy and occult sciences. We find Theosophists denying fundamental Christian concepts about the nature of God and the soul… The evolution of the soul is a fundamental doctrine of the Society.

… Evolution, in the theosophic sense, is a process of self-realization or manifestation carried on by the Cosmic Life by means of repeated incarnations.

Its alleged purpose is the perfecting of man and all creatures…In summary, the four key doctrines that are generally accepted among Theosophical societies, not excluding the New Age Movement, are the divine origin of the soul in a pantheistic sense, evolution, reincarnation, and karma."[144]

The belief in spiritual evolution is a great fraud that forms the basis of many erroneous beliefs besides those of the Theosophical Society. There is no evidence provided by these groups in support of this belief they advocate. The only thing they can do is, in their own eyes, to embellish their claims with pretty and philosophical expressions in the hope that people will believe in the reality of their imaginary world.

The only source from which we can learn the truth about the human soul is the Qur'an, and Allah says the following on the soul:

They will ask you about the Spirit. Say: "The Spirit is my Lord's concern. You have only been given a little knowledge." (Surat al-Isra': 85)

As stated in this verse, man has only limited knowledge about the soul and the little he knows is revealed in the Qur'an. We are told in verses that:

When your Lord said to the angels, "I am creating a human being out of dried clay formed from fetid black mud. When I have formed him and breathed My Spirit into him, fall down in prostration in front of him!" (Surat al-Hijr: 28-29)



Annie Wood Besant

Then formed him and breathed His Spirit into him and gave you hearing,

sight and hearts. What little thanks you show! (Surat as-Sajda: 9)
Your Lord said to the angels, "I am going to create a human being out of clay. When I have formed him and breathed My Spirit into him, fall down in prostration to him!" So the angels prostrated, all of them together, (Surah Sâd: 71-73)

Allah Who created the whole universe from nothing gave man a breath of His own soul. Man is the only being with a soul in nature. He has conscience, has willpower, can think, speak, imagine, decide, compare, love, enjoy and be happy. All these are the features of his "soul" and not his body which is a mass of flesh and bone. On death, the soul leaves the dimension in which man lives, transcending to another dimension leaving his body behind. Whilst the dead body decays and disintegrates, the soul begins a new existence. Therefore the soul does not evolve or attain another "sacred status" as people of heretical beliefs claim. (Surely Allah is beyond that)

When Blavatsky died in 1891, another admirer of Hinduism became the leader of the Theosophical society who was also keenly interested in sorcery, the occult sciences and psychic experimentation. Annie Besant was well known for her atheist identity and her speeches on the subject.[145] She was on the one hand working on the theosophical sciences and writing "fantastic" books and on the other, she led the society to focus on the lie of spiritual evolution and metaphysical disciplines.[146] Even today, her works are some of the most widely read books by those who follow these heretical beliefs and adopt a way of life dedicated to sorcery and other nonsensical activities.

Besant fervently defended Hinduism, an irrational and idolatrous religion that can be easily recognized as such by anyone capable of rational thought. She participated in the Indian independence movement by founding the Central Hindu College and in 1916 the Indian Home

Rule League. In 1917, she was elected chairman of the Indian National Congress. Besant's influence over the Theosophical Society and India was noted in great detail in an article published in the *Hinduism Today* newspaper, which also revealed that she had had a direct influence over Mahatma Gandhi, Jawaharlal Nehru, Sarojini Naidu, C.P. Ramaswami Aiyer and many other Hindu leaders.[147]

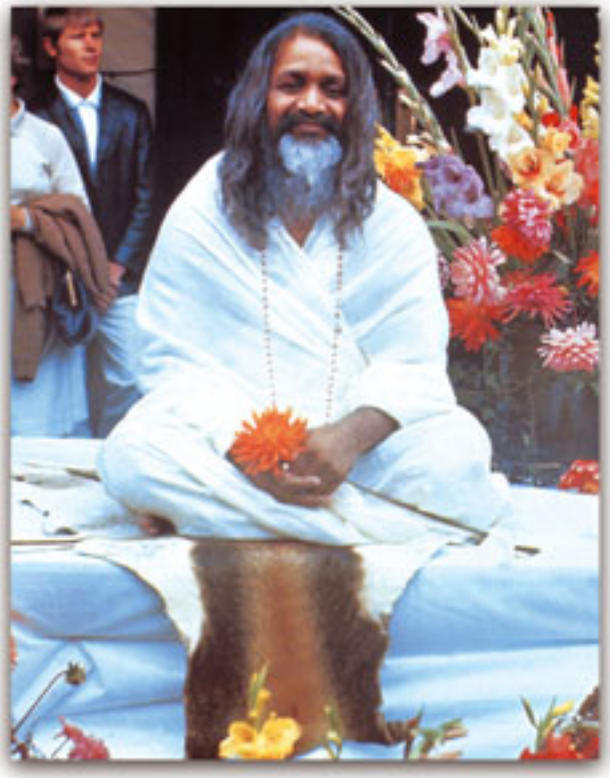
The Theosophical Society played an important role in introducing Far Eastern religion to Judeo-Christian Western with a detrimental effect. The New Age movement began with Alice A. Bailey, an ex-member of the Theosophical Society. Bailey was an atheist admirer of Far Eastern religions of heretical beliefs much like the founders of the Theosophical Society. She claimed to be medium receiving inspirational messages from a Tibetan leader by the name of Djwal Khul. Between 1919 and 1949 she wrote 24 books containing these imaginary messages. These books were works of propaganda of occult sciences, esoteric teachings, sorcery and perverted beliefs. She revealed the perverse foundations of her new movement in the two volumes of her work entitled "Discipleship in the New Age". The New Age movement adopted all the heretical beliefs of the Theosophical Society and contained also many perverted beliefs of pagan religions like Hinduism, Buddhism, Shamanism and Taoism as well as occult sciences.

After Bailey, the New Age movement grew rapidly and became a major influence within Western culture in some communities. This teaching is however incompatible with reason, logic and common sense, contains much nonsense, promotes pagan practices like sorcery and fortune telling prohibited by Divine religions and on the whole leads people away from the reality revealed by Allah and into an imaginary and superstitious world.

THE NEW AGE MOVEMENT: A PAGAN RELIGION CONSISTING OF HERETICAL BELIEFS

Initially the contact between superstitious Far Eastern religions and Western culture was confined to the Theosophical Society and materialists. However in a very short period of time this atheistic movement became a pagan religion itself. This superstitious religion was New Age and it was marketed as the "so-called religion of the 21st century" by materialist circles who wanted to curb the growing influence of the true religion, at least in their own eyes.

The New Age movement is unique in the sense that it rejects the certain existence of Allah is not based on Divine revelation, has no scripture, no central authority, no membership or leadership structure and cannot be pinned down in its beliefs or practices with certainty.



The Maharishi Mehash Yogi, who introduced the superstitious tradition known as Transcendental Meditation to the West, makes a deceptive worldly promise to those wishing to attract attention to themselves.







Meditation, depicted as a means of attaining inner peace, calm and happiness, is in fact a deception. Because the essence of meditation is "concentrating on emptiness." This neither relaxes nor bestows peace on anyone. Quite the contrary, it leads to unease and a proud and troubled state of mind. The brain, which regulates all the functions of the body, is a highly efficient and important organ. Emptying the mind and concentrating on nothingness is therefore equivalent to "paralysis of the brain." In addition, such practices result in a reduction in brain functions. This is like the deletion and elimination of all the programs in a powerful computer.

Only someone who believes in the existence of an absolute Creator, Who created the entire universe from nothing and rewards the good and punishes the wicked with infinite justice can ever find inner peace. As our Lord tells us in verse 28 of Surat ar-Ra'd: "Only in the remembrance of Allah can the heart find peace."

Harun Yahya (Adnan Oktar)



Some people, caught up in trends such as the New Age movement, spread lies to the effect that they possess spiritual powers or the gift of prophecy. Fortune-telling or the Taro cards are other ways of deceiving people. The fact is, however, that nobody can obtain knowledge of hidden things through his own efforts or trying to contact the spirit world. Allah only imparts such knowledge of His servants He so chooses, and to the extent of His choosing.

You can add to this false belief or remove some aspects thereof at will. The New Age teachings are founded on Hinduism, Buddhism, Taoism, Shamanism, Shintoism, Gnostic traditions, Spiritualism and Wicca (sorcery). Alan Morrison expresses the common ground of this religion as follows: "The core of the Blavatsky theosophical teaching is rooted in a syncretism which pulls together strains from Hinduism, Buddhism, Zoroastrianism and gnostic Christianity — all of which deny the Transcendent Creator God and use practices to bring about the [so-called] "divinisation" of the individual."[148]

Especially in recent years, groups which promote atheistic and materialistic worldviews have accelerated the propaganda efforts of the New Age culture, for which they are making use of the mass media. Their primary objective is to curb the increasing influence of Divine religions, in particular Islam, in western societies by which they hope to assist the cause of pagan religions. They are trying to impose these pagan religions by means of well-designed advertising campaigns and messages aiming at the sub-consciousness of people rather than presenting them as for what they are. They are promoting idolatrous religions and erroneous philosophies led by fraudulent spiritual leaders called gurus. Famous people well-recognized in society play an important role in this propaganda effort. For instance, Shirley McLaine, once a well-known actress, is one of the foremost advocates of the New Age movement with her books and TV shows and appearances.

The New Age superstitious belief, kept in the public mind by atheist and materialist groups by various means of propaganda, aim to divert people to erroneous practices from belief in Allah, and the goodness which derives from religious morality. For example yoga, meditation, healing, bio-energy and transcendental meditation occupy an important place in the New Age philosophy and astrology, tarot, fortune

telling and mediums are part of that culture. Beliefs of karma, reincarnation, reiki, feng shui, astral body projection, clairvoyance and exorcism by means of magic spells are yet other symbols of the New Age movement. Today, these terms are widely recognizable because of the propaganda activities carried out by materialists. Some of these erroneous beliefs can be listed as follows:

Sorcery and magic are important in the New Age movement. All the magic rituals of the superstitious Far Eastern religions, sorcery based pagan beliefs like Shamanism, and every kind of twisted occultism have been revived by this idolatrous movement. Fortune telling and sorcery are evil and immoral acts forbidden by Allah Who says in the Surat al-Ma'ida: **"You who believe! Wine and gambling, stone altars and divining arrows are filth from the handiwork of satan. Avoid them completely so that hopefully you will be successful."** (Surat al-Ma'ida: 90) It is related in verses that the Prophet Moses's (pbuh) encounter with magicians is as follows: **"… Magicians are not successful."** (Surah Yunus: 77) **"… Magicians do not prosper wherever they go."** (Surah Ta Ha: 69) In other words, those who believe that sorcery will bring them happiness, prosperity, salvation or success are wrong, because unless Allah wills it it is impossible for any man benefit or harm anyone else. Allah reveals the following in the Surat al-Baqara:

> **… People learned from them how to separate a man and his wife but they cannot harm anyone by it, except with Allah's permission. They have learned what will harm them and will not benefit them. They know that any who deal in it will have no share in the hereafter. What an evil thing they have sold themselves for if they only knew! (Surat al-Baqara: 102)**

Fortune telling, consulting the tarot and contacting spirits are a fraud; outlandish claims of being able to foresee the future by means of

mediums are part and parcel of the New Age culture. Gurus resort to deceiving their unwitting followers through lies such as claiming they have the ability to prognosticate the future or speak directly with the spirit world. In reality it is only Allah Who knows and sees the unknown. Allah reveals in the Surat an-Naml as:

> **… No one in the heavens and the earth knows the Unseen except Allah. (Surat an-Naml: 65)**

And Allah reveals in the Surat al-Jinn that:

> **He is the Knower of the Unseen, and does not divulge His Unseen to anyone–except a Messenger with whom He is well pleased, and then He posts sentinels before him and behind him. (Surat al-Jinn: 26-27)**

As these verses make clear, Allah can choose to reveal the unknown to His beloved messengers, but no one else can acquire the knowledge of the unknown by his own efforts, or by trying to make contact with spirits. Within the perverse New Age movement there are people who try to draw attention to themselves by claiming to be mediums or fortune tellers. They are hoping to win the respect and admiration of people, but more importantly, they have material gain in mind.

Unless Allah decrees otherwise, it is not possible to tell the future by looking at some pieces of paper or gazing into a crystal:

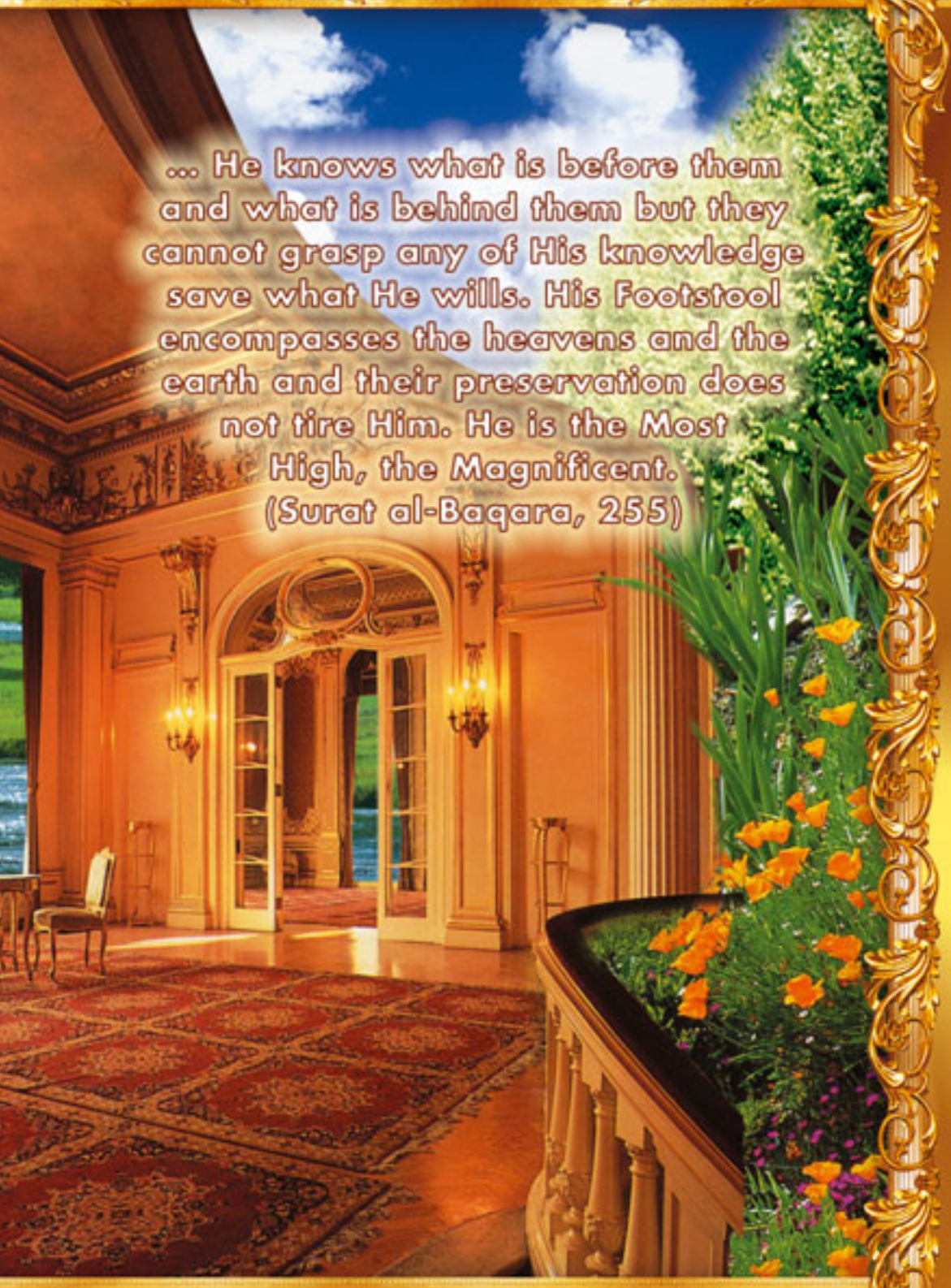
> **The keys of the Unseen are in His possession. No one knows them but Him. He knows everything in the land and sea. No leaf falls without His knowing it. There is no seed in the darkness of the earth, and nothing moist or dry which is not in a Clear Book. (Surat al-An'am: 59)**

At present, certain groups are trying to make the New Age movement fashionable. Well-known celebrities are used to present a thinly disguised propaganda on behalf of these perverted practices, and use

their public recognizability in order to create followers. Such heretical beliefs, which are of no benefit to people, are advertised on TV and through printed media and people, influenced by the suggestive power of such means, begins to practice the suggested beliefs without really knowing what they are getting into. The "Reiki" fad, well documented recently in the public mind, is the product of the same fraud. Attention seekers and others who like to be seen as "unique" in some way are influenced by this propaganda. In reality Reiki is yet another fraudulent practice like all the other Far Eastern beliefs.

The idolatrous Japanese belief is that Reiki is one of the cosmic energies thought of as a "universal life and healing energy". It is claimed that certain people have control over this energy and can either use it to heal or pass it on to others.[149] The person falsely claiming to have Reiki energy opens his palms towards the heavens and allegedly transfers this energy to other people or animals by touching them. In reality, Reiki is no different to the practice of ritual healing or the exorcising of evil spirits in




... He knows what is before them
and what is behind them but they
cannot grasp any of His knowledge
save what He wills. His Footstool
encompasses the heavens and the
earth and their preservation does
not tire Him. He is the Most
High, the Magnificent.
(Surat al-Baqara, 255)

the sorcery-based religion of Shamanism. Shamans also claim falsely that they can heal people with their powers being derived from magic and the incantation of spells. These are nonsensical beliefs that anyone invested with even a small modicum of common sense can easily discern as nothing but a gigantic fraud, because it is not possible for anyone to heal anyone else unless Allah wills it. It is only Allah Who is "The Intercessor". He has the attribute of healing by which He does away with illness. Unless Allah wills it, no doctor on earth, no technological innovation and not even the latest wonder drugs, combined with all the false beliefs of Far Eastern religions, can heal the sick person. The Prophet Abraham's (pbuh) wholehearted prayer is revealed in the Qur'an:

And when I am ill, it is He Who heals me; (Surat ash-Shu'ara', 80)

The heretical practices of the New Age movement are too numerous to be recounted in full. The belief in the healing powers of stones and minerals are some of these. Followers of this erroneous belief believe that quartz crystals are very effective in magic and healing. It is also believed that hematite can give the power of correct decision making, that diamonds cleanse the body from negative energy, and that corals prevent the evil eye. Many other kinds of stones and minerals are accredited with such imaginary powers; in truth, all these beliefs are false and nonsensical. It is most certainly impossible that a stone or any other object can protect someone, empower them in any way, or destroy negative influences. No man can prevent harm irrespective of how hard he tries, or no matter what method he employs unless it is the will of Allah. The only Protector is the most compassionate Allah. In the Qur'an He reveals:

Say: "Who rescues you from the darkness of the land and sea? You call on Him humbly and secretly: 'If you rescue us from this, we

will truly be among the thankful.'" Say: "Allah rescues you from it, and from every plight. Then you associate others with Him." (Surat al-An'am: 63-64)

Obviously if man encounters problems, he needs to solve them. For instance a sick person should consult a doctor, follow his advice and use the prescribed drugs. However, it must be known that these measures by alone have no power in and of themselves, but Allah can make them trigger the healing process. Certainly it would amount to ascribing partners to Allah to believe that other beings, idols of stone or wood, stones or minerals could protect, destroy, harm or bring benefit. As we have stated often, ascribing partners to Allah is an unforgivable sin. Those who ig-



No stone or mineral can prevent any evil, misery or disease outside the will of Allah. This is nothing but a heretical and superstitious belief.

A New Fashion from Chinese Pagan Beliefs: Feng Shui

Another superstitious teaching among New Age beliefs is Feng Shui. This, an extension of pagan shamanist beliefs, is a superstition that has lately become fashionable as a result of widespread propaganda. Relevant web sites describe this teaching as "directing the powers and energy of nature." People learn a superstitious Chinese tradition at the Feng Shui courses they pay large sums of money to attend. This tradition is described as "arranging the décor of one's environment in such a way as to increase positive energy by eliminating negative energies." Such courses teach which talisman should be hung where, and which charms and stones will allegedly be beneficial. For example, it is believed that a mirror known as the Pa-kua, hung on doors, will protect the door and the building. A small statue known as the frog of plenty will allegedly bring material wealth. Many other superstitious beliefs involving talismans are to be found in Feng Shui.[150]

The fact is, though, that these superstitious beliefs are all deceptions. It is impossible for any stone or charm to protect anyone or anything outside of Allah's choosing. Human beings' sole protector, their friend and guardian, is Almighty Allah, Lord of the Worlds.



Feng Shui is a deception that teaches that the strange objects below are capable of bestowing protection

nore the fact that there are no other protectors or helpers besides Allah, and who insist on disregarding His gifts will experience devastating regret. Allah reveals the situation of such people in the Qur'an:

> **Say: "Can any of your partner-gods bring Creation out of nothing and then regenerate it?" Say: "Allah brings Creation out of nothing and then regenerates it. So how have you been perverted?" Say: "Can any of your partner-gods guide to the truth?" Say: "Allah guides to the truth. Who has more right to be followed – He Who guides to the truth, or he who cannot guide unless he is guided? What is the matter with you? How do you reach your judgment?" (Surah Yunus: 34-35)**

One of the reasons for people to practice irrational and illogical techniques such as yoga, meditation and reiki, is that they seek contentment and peace in the wrong place and imagine that by these means they can escape the stress and sufferings of their everyday lives. Advertisements for such pagan practices make frequent use of terms like "inner peace, spiritual balance and inner happiness". People are all too easily misled to believe that these erroneous practices can deliver them from the selfish, competitive, conflicting, loveless and cruel way of life of the materialistic society in which they live. In reality however, these false practices cannot deliver inner peace and spiritual fulfillment. To the contrary, by practicing these superstitious Far Eastern religions they become people who have lost the ability to reason and act rationally, who expect help from stone and wooden idols, and hope to find solutions in sorcery and heretical rituals. Societies in which the superstitious Far Eastern philosophies are influential reveals the existence of many people who display the signs of psychological damage, apathy and a schizophrenic state of mind removed from the reality of life.

It is a clear fact that the only way to find true contentment and happiness and deliverance from every kind of evil, cruelty, hopeless-

ness and despair, is to submit to our Creator Allah and to lead a life He approves of. Allah says:

> **… All those who follow My guidance will not go astray and will not be miserable. But if anyone turns away from My reminder, his life will be a dark and narrow one and on the Day of Resurrection We will gather him blind. (Surah Ta Ha, 123-124)**

The governor of the heavens and earth, our Lord, reveals that salvation can only be found by following the guidance of the Qur'an. Allah says the following in the Surah Ibrahim:

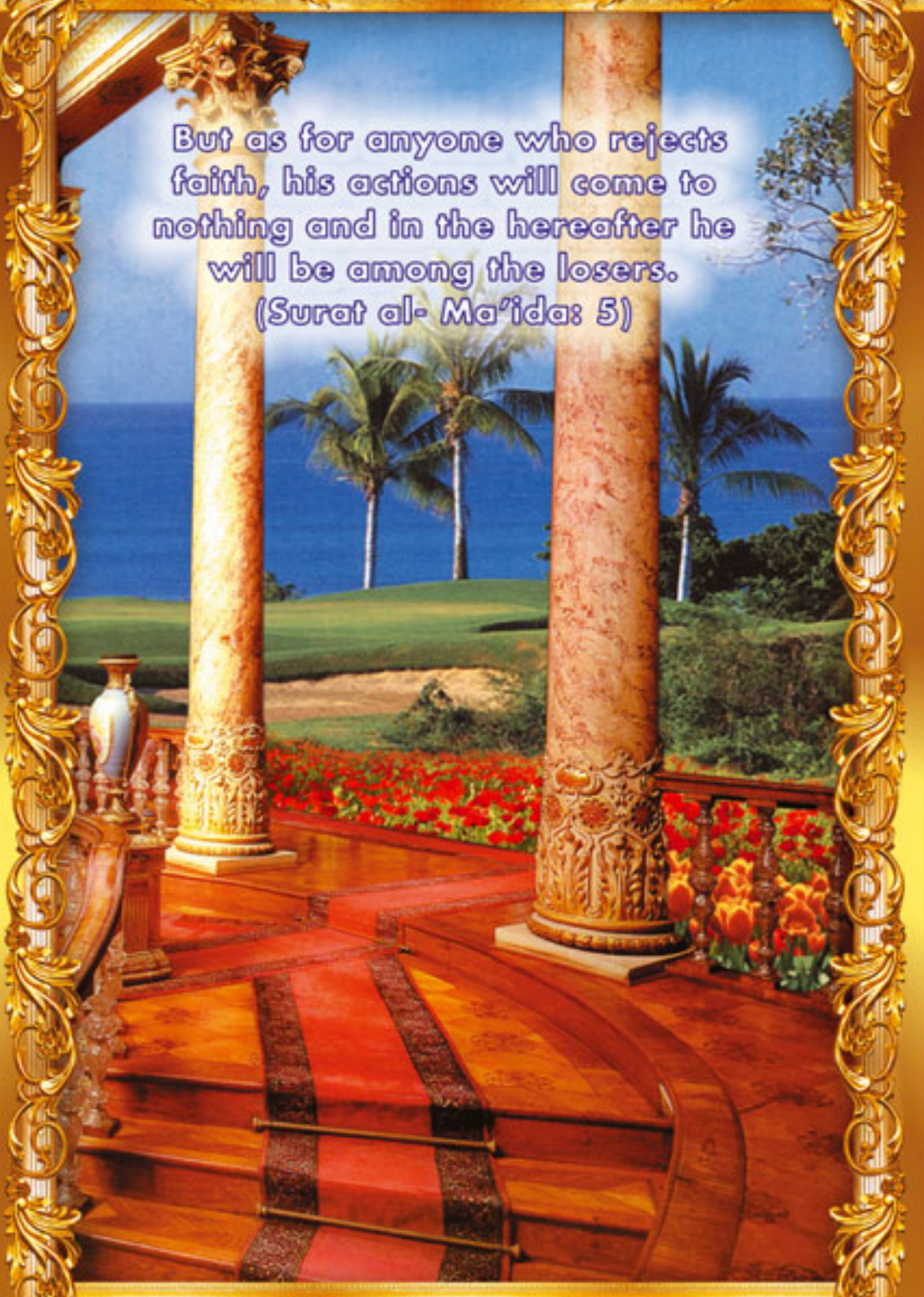
> **... This is a Book We have sent down to you so that you can bring mankind from the darkness to the light, by the permission of their Lord, to the Path of the Almighty, the Praiseworthy. (Surah Ibrahim: 1)**

All those who totally and foolishly deny or disregard the existence of Allah and follow the path of evil will suffer a great loss in this life as well as the hereafter. They will receive their fair return for wasting their lives by following false practices which were of no benefit to them. Whilst they engage in false practices in the belief of doing right, they will come to realize that they lived in error. Allah reveals the situation of such people in one of the verses of the Qur'an as follows:

> **The metaphor of those who take protectors besides Allah is that of a spider which builds itself a house; but no house is flimsier than a spider's house, if they only knew. (Surat al-'Ankabut: 41)**

As made clear in the verse, those who chose the path of denial yet believe themselves to be right have in reality gone far astray. All their efforts will come to naught, and they will witness on the Day of Judgment that all their partners, and all the spells and sorcery they hoped would protect them cannot help them. Allah reveals:

> **On the Day they see the angels, there will be no good news that Day for the evildoers. They will say, "There is an absolute ban." We will**


But as for anyone who rejects faith, his actions will come to nothing and in the hereafter he will be among the losers.
(Surat al- Ma'ida: 5)

advance on the actions they have done and make them scattered specks of dust. The Companions of the Garden on that Day will have better lodging and a better resting-place, (Surat al-Furqan: 22-24)

Say: "Shall I inform you of the greatest losers in their actions? People whose efforts in the life of the this world are misguided while they suppose that they are doing good." Those are the people who reject their Lord's Signs and the meeting with Him. Their actions will come to nothing and, on the Day of Resurrection, We will not assign them any weight. (Surat al-Kahf: 103-105)

NEW AGE, DARWINISM AND ATHEISM

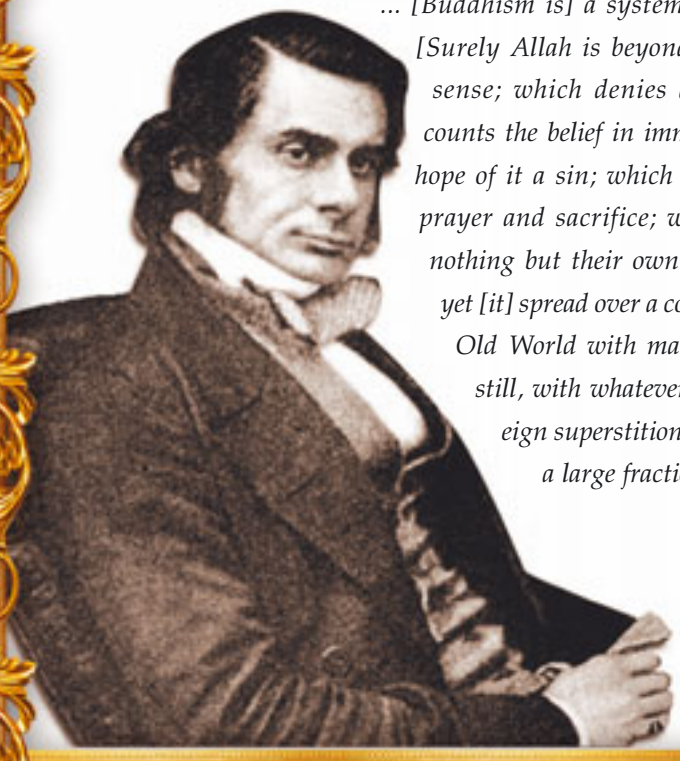
As stated before, one of the reasons behind western societies' great interest in pagan religions like New Age is the atheist, idolatrous and materialistic context of superstitious Far Easter religions. The materialistic entities, distanced from the West's Judeo-Christian culture, approve, support and promote all the superstitious beliefs of Far Eastern origins.

Materialistic Western culture believes in the lie of the coincidental Creation of the universe, and answers questions as to how man and life came to be in terms of Darwin's evolution theory. This unscientific view rejects the existence of the human soul and maintains the lie that man is nothing more than a highly evolved animal species. It utterly and foolishly rejects the notion of a life in the hereafter or the belief in hell and paradise. This view is of course erroneous, yet it is compatible with superstitious Far Eastern religions. A great majority of these religions, especially Buddhism and Hinduism, reject the manifest existence of Allah and mendaciously attribute the sources of life to nature itself. These perverse beliefs reject the existence of hell and paradise, which is one of the reasons for the great support they get from the materialistic culture of the West.

The foremost evolutionists have supported Far Eastern religions since the 19th century, with Thomas H. Huxley being the most prominent name of those responsible for rallying support behind Darwin. His arguments with scientists and men of religion who advocated the belief in creation, and his fervent speeches and articles in support of Darwinism, made him the most famous Darwinist of the 19th century. Huxley's interest in superstitious Far Eastern religions, in particular Buddhism, is less well known.

Huxley fiercely opposed the representatives of Divine religions like Judaism and Christianity and regarded Buddhism as a suitable religion for secular western civilization, at least in his own opinion. This subject is examined by the article titled "Huxley's Buddhism in Evolution and Ethics", published in the magazine Philosophy East and West. The article printed the following excerpt from Huxley's book *Evolution and Ethics*:

"... [Buddhism is] a system which knows no God [Surely Allah is beyond that] in the Western sense; which denies a soul to man; which counts the belief in immortality a blunder and hope of it a sin; which refuses any efficacy to prayer and sacrifice; which bids men look to nothing but their own efforts for salvation ... yet [it] spread over a considerable moiety of the Old World with marvelous rapidity and is still, with whatever base admixture of foreign superstitions, the dominant creed of a large fraction of mankind".[151]



Thomas H. Huxley, one of the leading proponents of Darwinism in the 19th century.

There is no doubt that the above extract shows what a great error and perversion Buddhism actually is. Huxley was an admirer of Buddhism because of these perverse aspects. According to the author of the article entitled "Buddhism in Huxley's Evolution and Ethics" Vijitha Rajapakse,from the University of Hawaii, Huxley's admiration for Buddhism was partly due to the similarities he identified between Buddhism and the ancient, pagan and atheist Greek philosophy:

"Huxley's evident tendency to link Buddhist thought with Western ideas, which comes to the fore strikingly in his comments on the concept of substance, was further exemplified at other levels of his discussion as well. He found the nontheistic stance taken by the early Buddhists to be analogous to the outlook of Heracleitus and referred, in addition, to "many parallelisms of Stoicism and Buddhism."[152]



The 18the century atheist and hostile-to-religion philosopher David Hume

Rajapakse notes not only Huxley's, but also some other 19th century atheists' great admiration for Buddhism. One of the parallels drawn at that time between Buddhism and Western philosophy involves the thought of David Hume's. The 18th century Scottish thinker, Hume, was an

atheist and anti-religious philosopher. Rajapakse says that interestingly, even the first western commentators on Buddhism recognized correctly the similarities between Buddhism and Hume's philosophy, and then proceeds as follows:

> *Mrs. Rhys Davids [an early pioneer translator of Buddhist texts from Paali into English], for example, remarked that "with regard to the belief in an indwelling spirit or ego, permanent, unchanging, unsuffering, Buddhism took the standpoint two thousand, four hundred years ago of our own Hume of two centuries ago.*[153]

As Rajapakse states, in Victorian England many other philosophers had taken a keen interest in Buddhism as it was compatible with atheism and Darwinism, the popular philosophies of that era.

Friedrich Nietzsche was another atheist who warmed to Buddhism for similar motives. He was deeply hostile towards Christianity, but conciliatory towards idolatrous culture and morality. His views became the ideological basis for fascism and Nazism. His hatred for Divine religions was not just driven by these religions' morality but also, and more significantly, by his fanatical atheist views. His foolish hostility toward religion was limited to Divine religions whereas pagan religions escaped unscathed. He held pagan religion in high esteem and praised it lavishly, especially Buddhism. Jason DeBoer, editor of the "Eighteenth-Century Studies" says: "...Nietzsche, although one of the fiercest atheists in history, was in fact not entirely anti-religious . . . [He] respected and admired many of the aspects of other religions, including paganism and even Buddhism."[154]

On the same subject, English academic David R. Loy, states the following in one of his articles:

> *"Comparing Nietzsche with Buddhism has become something of a cottage industry, and for good reason: there seems to be a deep resonance between them.*

Morrison points out that they share many common features: both emphasise the centrality of humans in a godless cosmos and neither looks to any external being or power for their respective solutions to the problem of existence. For Nietzsche the problem is overcoming nihilism, for Buddhism it is the unsatisfactory nature of our lives. Both understand human being as an ever-changing flux of multiple psychophysical forces, and within this flux there is no autonomous or unchanging subject ("ego", "soul"). Both emphasize the hierarchy that exists, or can exist, not only among individuals but among the plurality of these forces that compose us."[155]

No doubt, these concepts shared by Nietzsche with Buddhism are erroneous. The cause for this error lies in man's arrogance and ignorance. Every person who studies nature and the universe with reason and conscience will see the clear evidence for Allah's existence. This fact is supported by scientific discoveries of our present time. Nietzsche's and other atheists' beliefs have been disproved by scientific discoveries like the Big Bang and the Anthropic Principle theories. Science has delivered clear proofs of the fact that Allah has created the universe and maintains it in a perfect order. (For details on the collapse of atheism see: The Rise of Islam, Harun Yahya, 2003, published by A. S. NOORDEEN). Evidence for Darwinism's invalidity both supports and proves that Creation is an indisputable reality. The thoughts of 19th century thinkers like Freud, Marx and Durkheim have either been disproven by scientific discoveries or social developments one by one.



Friedrich Nietzsche, one of the atheist ideologues of 20th century fascism.

The architects of atheist and materialist Western culture are witnessing the collapse of their theories and are desperately trying to find another solution in promoting pagan beliefs in order to curb the rising interest in Divine religions, ay least in their own eyes. The New Age movement, created for this purpose, is a false "spiritualism" injected into materialism.

But why does western culture perceive this need? The English writers Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh and Henry Lincoln have researched the ideological development (and degeneration) of the Western world of the past 2000 years. They state that the Western world has been plagued by an "identity crisis" in the 20th century. In other words, the materialistic philosophy and way of life imposed on western societies, has distanced people from Allah and their worship of Him, thus rendering their lives meaningless. According to Baigent, Leigh and Lincoln, "Life became increasingly bereft of meaning, devoid of significance - a wholly random phenomenon, lived for no particular purpose."[156]

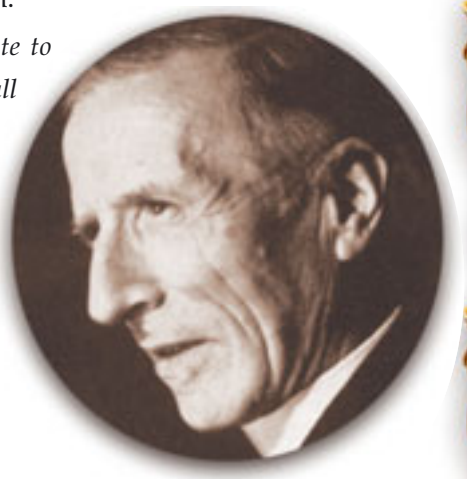
The materialistic theories' destruction on the scientific level, combined with this cultural identity crisis has reignited peoples' interest in Divine religions, which is why religion is on the rise in all Christian, Jewish and Islamic societies. The proportion of people who believe in and practice religion is constantly increasing and religious practices and values play a greater role in society. (Especially the Islamic faith, which is growing with unprecedented rapidity in the western world).

The pagan New Age movement is being promoted to divert people who are struggling with the "identity crisis" to this false path of salvation. These are only erroneous and futile teachings followed by people who seek some form of "spiritualism", but cannot or will not free themselves from the atheist and materialistic dogma. A little thought,

coupled with some reason, is sufficient to recognize the futility of such teachings. In the face of the threat posed by these false beliefs people of faith have an important role to play here: they must teach Allah's certain existence and the morality of religion. In order to curb the influence of the New Age propaganda, the message of Allah's infinite power and might must be delivered to all people and they must be invited to faith. If Islamic morality is explained well, and all the goodness derived from a life dedicated to the cause of our Lord is demonstrated, people will not heed the call of false spiritualism.

The evolution theory has played a significant role in the development of the New Age movement. Most of the followers of the New Age movement acknowledge Theilard de Chardin as their spiritual leader. Theilard was a paleontologist who played a major role in the history of the evolution theory. He was also one of the key figures in one of the greatest ever "science" fraud scandals recorded by history: the Piltdown man.[157] The following words are sufficient to explain the degree of his allegiance to Darwinism:

> *"(Evolution) is a general postulate to which all theories, all hypotheses, all systems must henceforward bow and which they must satisfy in order to be thinkable and true. Evolution is a light which illuminates all facts, a trajectory which all lines of thought must follow."*[158]



The Darwinist paleontologist de Chardin, one of the founders of the New Age movement

His own words bear testimony to the fact that Theillard de Chardin was one of the most dog-

matic advocates of the evolution theory ever. He swallowed and perpetuated the lie that man has not only a physical evolution, but a spiritual evolution as well. He imagined that once man has supposedly evolved enough socially, he will attain a state of spiritual perfection. This state he called the "omega point".

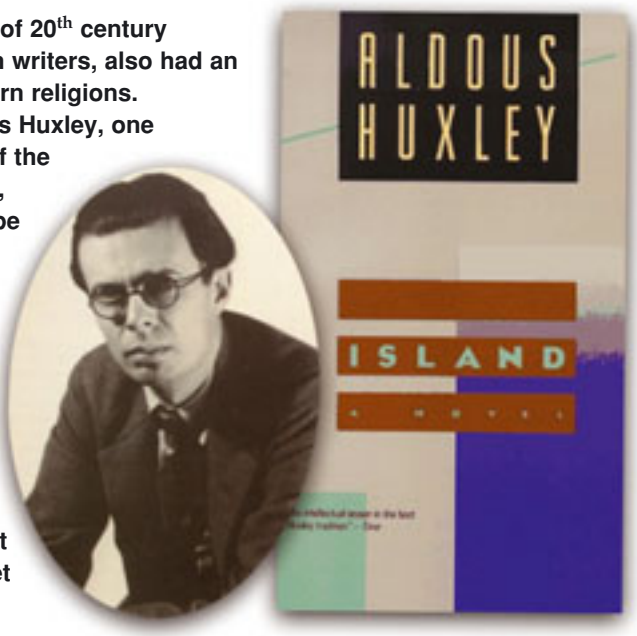
Besides Theillard, many other evolutionists like Julian Huxley and Theodosius Dobzhansky are counted among New Age ideologues. Dobzhansky's erroneous idea that "whilst the evolution process gave rise to man, it became the first only time its own consciousness in the history of the universe" this a frequently used expression by New Age advocates. The geneticist, Francisco Ayala said the following after Dobzhansky:



Theodosius Dobzhansky, one of the proponents of the deception of psychological evolution

> *"Dobzhansky was a religious man, although he apparently rejected fundamental beliefs of traditional religion, such as the existence of a personal God .... Dobzhansky held that in man, biological evolution has transcended itself into the realm of self-awareness and culture. He believed that mankind would eventually evolve into higher levels of harmony and creativity."*[159]

Countless scientific findings have proved that this irrational belief of Dobzhansky's is untrue. We have seen that the New Age movement focuses on the life on earth and places man at the center of everything.



Aldous Huxley, one of 20th century Britain's best known writers, also had an interest in Far Eastern religions. Grandson of Thomas Huxley, one of the forerunners of the New Age movement, Aldous Huxley can be seen to have been strongly influenced by the false Far Eastern religions in his books, such as *Brave New World*, Eyeless in Gaza and Island. Known as a materialist and atheist, Huxley's last book, Island, was set in a utopia on a Buddhist island.

Whilst foolishly rejecting belief in Allah, it ignorantly ascribes divinity to man himself (Surely Allah is beyond that) and gives him the attributes of Allah. One of the foremost advocates of this perverse movement, Shirley McLaine, a famous singer and actress at one time, wrote: "You must never worship anyone or anything other than self. For you are God."[160] (Surely Allah is beyond that), thereby revealing the perverted beliefs of the New Age movement.

According to the ideologues of the New Age movement, whose primary objective is to create an atheist society by guiding people away from the belief in Allah, man is his own guide and judge. This perverted belief suggests that man will attain perfection by means of meditation, yoga, reiki, contacting spirits and the help of crystals; this perversion leads people to an even worse aberration. It ultimately causes people to believe that man is a divinity and is beyond right and wrong, sin or goodness. In other words, according to the New Age belief, every-

Perverted New Age beliefs seek to justify all the injustice, killing and torture in the world. This wicked idea, which would inflict total disorder on the whole world, is a terrible deception. Human beings are responsible to Allah, to whom they will have to account for their every action, their every word, their every decision and their every sin.



thing that man does, is right. Prof. H. Wayne House, from the theology department of Michigan University, points out in one of his papers that according to the perverted beliefs of the New Age movement, man as a divinity cannot judge or be judged by another, and that rights and wrongs do not exist.[161]

It follows that all murders, torture, robberies, plunder, atrocities and injustices taking place on earth must be considered as beyond judgment. This is a clear mistake as man is not hold unaccountable. There is a Creator who sees everything he does, knows all he thinks and Who will judge, and either reward or punish him after his death. Our Creator Allah, has created man with a soul, reason, willpower and the faculties of comparison and judgment. Even if man has instincts that drive him, he has been created with these faculties with which he can choose that which is right instead of evil. Someone who is easily agitated and of little or no restraint, can consider himself and his opponent as animals, and injure him without thought and can be similarly cruel even if he is facing a defenseless child. In contrast, someone aware of the soul within given to him by Allah, will be rational and self-conscious at all times and exercise self-control when he feels anger building up inside. His judgment and conscience will be clear and he will refrain from even the smallest bad deed that he will be held to account for in the Presence of Allah. Those who act differently will have committed a crime. They chose to do wrong and commit a sin because they do not believe in Allah, do not believe that they will be answerable to Him, and therefore do not exercise restraint. Allah reveals in one verse that He has given man the ability to do right as well as wrong (Surat ash-Shams: 7-10). Therefore he knows right from wrong and only does wrong when he does not follow the voice of his conscience. Every person has a soul given to them by Allah and is ultimately answerable to his Creator. In one verse we are told:


Does man reckon he will be left
to go on unchecked?
(Surat al-Qiyama: 36)

He Who has created all things in the best possible way. He commenced the creation of man from clay; then produced his seed from an extract of base fluid. Then (He) formed him and breathed His Spirit into him and gave you hearing, sight and hearts. What little thanks you show! (Surat as-Sajda: 7-9)

Allah reminds people who think of themselves as unaccountable of their Creation and their resurrection following their death:

Does man reckon he will be left to go on unchecked? Was he not a drop of ejaculated sperm, then a blood-clot which He created and shaped, making from it both sexes, male and female? Is He Who does this not able to bring the dead to life? (Surat al-Qiyama: 36-40)

The erroneous belief that puts man at the center of the universe is central to the perverse New Age religion and also forms the basis for one of the Darwinists main arguments. Julian Huxley was one of Darwin's main advocates, and his "evolutionary humanism" idea represented a strikingly similar perversion that aimed "to aid the evolution process to achieve its maximum". This was not contained to the survival of the fittest and their reproduction, but also foresaw man as able **"to attain the highest forms of his abilities"**. In other words, efforts would be made to enable man to attain higher levels of physical and mental development. "Humanism" was defined by Huxley as follows:

I use the word "Humanist" to mean someone who believes that man is just as much a natural phenomenon as an animal or a plant, that his body, his mind, and his soul were not supernaturally created but are all products of evolution, and that the is not under the control or guidance of any supernatural Being or beings, but has to rely on himself and his own powers.[162]

Huxley lists the principles of evolutionary humanism as follows:

"The beliefs of this religion of evolutionary humanism are not based on revelation in the supernatural sense, but on the revelations that science and learning have given us about man and the universe. A humanist believes

with full assurance that man is not alien to nature, but a part of nature. His true destiny is to guide the future course of evolution on earth towards greater fulfillment".[163]

In reality Huxley's movement was a baseless and grave error, because Allah, the Lord of the Universe, is the force behind the perfect Creation seen on earth. Man, so ignorantly exalted by Darwinists, has been created from nothing by Allah and he is a helpless being dependent on him. Allah reveals that life on earth is one of his miracles:

As for the earth, We stretched it out and cast firmly embedded mountains in it and made everything grow in due proportion on it. And We put livelihoods in it both for you and for those you do not provide for. There is nothing that does not have its stores with Us and We only send it down in a known measure. We send forth the pollinating winds and send down water from the sky and give it to you to drink. And it is not you who keep its stores. It is We who give life and cause to die and We are the Inheritor. (Surat al-Hijr: 19-23)



The American materialist philosopher John Dewey

Huxley's irrational ideas suggested that the so-called "sacred" purpose of mankind was to quicken his own evolution and these ideas deeply influenced the American philosopher and education reformer John Dewey.

Dewey developed this idea further, and founded in 1933 a new movement by the name of "religious humanism". He was one of the thirty-four signatories of the famous Humanist Manifesto. The main principle proclaimed in this manifesto was the lie



that the time had come to replace Divine religions with scientific progress and social solidarity.

The deaths of over 60 million people in the Second World War was a "scientific progress" (!) that shook the optimism of the Humanist Manifesto. Following further blows to the system, Dewey's followers were forced to revise the manifesto which resulted in the proclamation of the second Humanist Manifesto in 1973, in which it was acknowledged that science could occasionally be harmful, but the Manifesto's core philosophy remained nevertheless unchanged. According to this unscientific and nonsensical assertion, man was now competent to guide his own imaginary evolution, and science was to be the guiding principle. It said:

> *"Using technology wisely, we can control our environment, conquer poverty, markedly reduce disease, extend our life-span, significantly modify our behavior, alter the course of human evolution and cultural development, unlock vast new powers, and provide humankind with unparalleled opportunity for achieving an abundant and meaningful life."*[164]

Every evolutionist aspires to these errors that reveal the core perversions of the false "evolution religion" knowingly or unwittingly. First they dream up an imaginary evolutionary process and assumes that this process is the basis of

The religious humanism movement launched by the materialist philosopher Dewey was in any case manifestly a deception. However, the 50 million people who lost their lives in the Second World War are further confirmation of that fact.



all "creation", that it will lead to man's salvation and finally that his so-called "sacred" purpose is to serve this process. In short, the supposed evolutionary process is considered to be the supposed creator, as well as a sacred purpose; or in other words, a deity to be worshiped in an utterly foolish manner. (Surely Allah is beyond that.) However, the developments of the 20th century's scientific world exposed Darwinist claims as a fraud. Developments in the recent past in microbiology, biochemistry, paleontology, genetics and anatomy have largely invalidated the evolutionary theory and revealed that life is the product of a sublime mind, in other words, Almighty Allah. The claim that scientific developments would accelerate human evolution thus rendering Divine religions unnecessary was exposed as fraudulent, as science tend to confirm rather than disprove creation. Allah's existence was therefore revealed with clear evidence.

John Newport, honorary professor at the Theological Faculty of the Southwestern Baptist University in Fort Worth, Texas, wrote in his book titled *The Worldview Crisis and the New Age Movement* that the thought that man could attain a supernatural spiritual status by his own efforts was a fundamental lie of the New Age error. Newport says:

> *"It is all based on the same idea that we can become divine- We do not need a Savior, we do not need the basic thing that is present in Christianity,"*[165]

This idea is of course an illogical one with no rational foundation. Human beings are created weak and are in need of Allah. Man's only salvation lies in sincerely submitting to Allah and leading a life of which He will approve.

Another commentary on the subject is put forth by the renowned evolutionist Jeremy Rifkin, a fervent advocate of the New Age movement. Rifkin sets out his illogical ideas in his book entitled "Algeny – A New World":

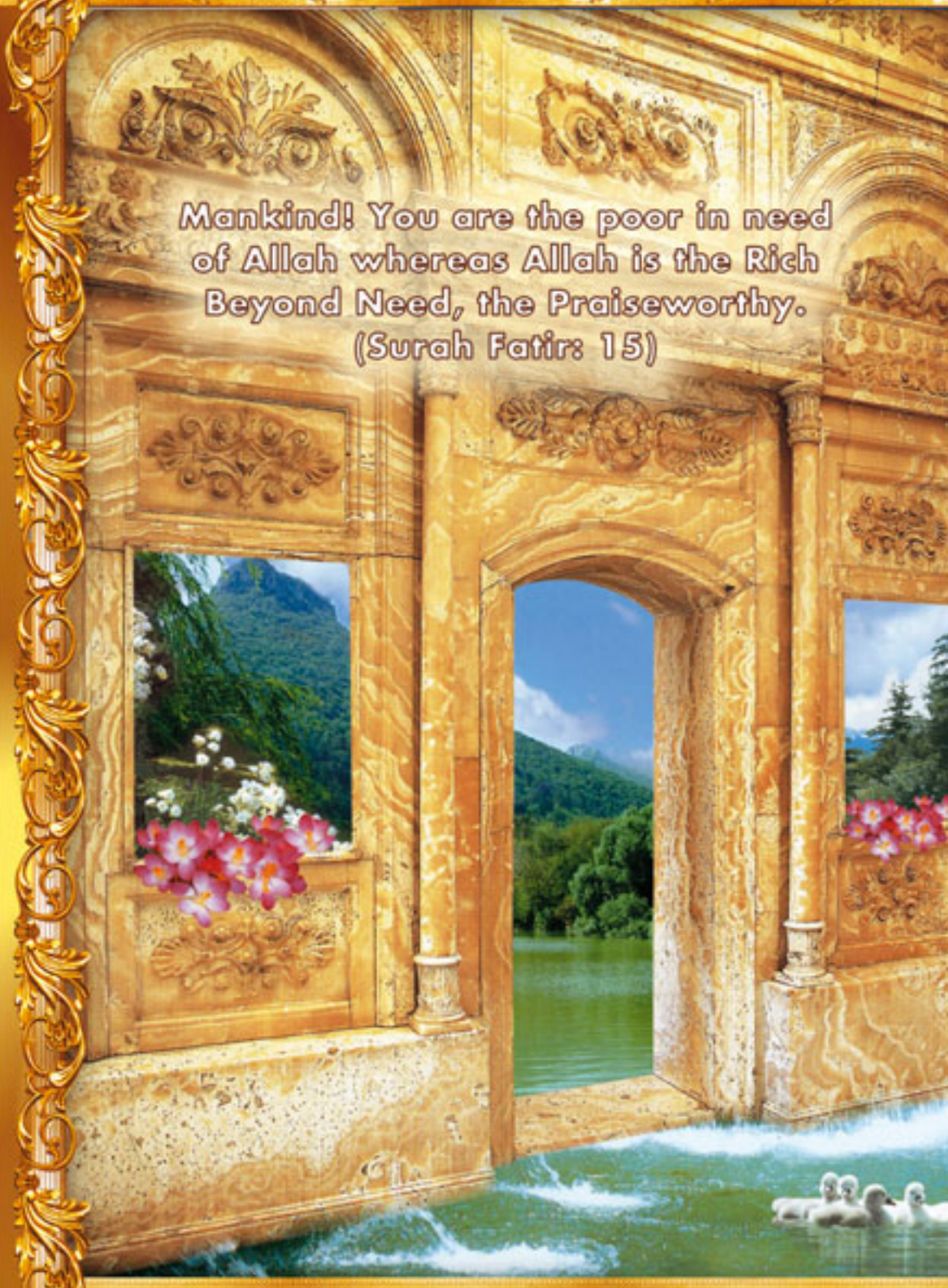
"Evolution is no longer viewed as a mindless affair, quite the opposite . ... one eventually winds up with the idea of the universe as a mind that oversees, orchestrates, and gives order and structure to all things. We no longer feel ourselves to be guests in someone else's home and therefore obliged to make our behavior conform with a set of preexisting cosmic rules. It is our creation now. We make the rules. We establish the parameters of reality. We create the world. And because we do, we no longer feel beholden to outside forces. We no longer have to justify our behavior, for we are the architects of the universe. We are responsible for nothing outside ourselves, for we are the kingdom, the power, and the glory forever."[166]

Rifkin's statement reveals why Darwinists feel so close to the New Age movement. The perverse materialistic worldview has for centuries rejected Allah's certain existence and credited coincidental developments with the creation of the universe. They represent the same view that puts man at the center of existence like the New Age movement. As we have mentioned before, in reality man is a helpless being created from nothing by Allah and wholly dependent on our Lord, Who has created the whole universe and the world so perfect for our needs, with all the beings it contains created to unequalled standards of perfection. Each being exists in its ideal environment with a bodily order perfectly adapted to it. It is possible to see our Lord supreme creation in everything that exists in the universe. Allah reveals the perfection of his system in the Surat al-Mulk:

He Who created the seven heavens in layers. You will not find any flaw in the Creation of the All-Merciful. Look again – do you see any gaps? Then look again and again. Your sight will return to you dazzled and exhausted! (Surat al-Mulk: 3-4)

The following are other verses on the subject:

Say: "Am I to take anyone other than Allah as my protector, the Bringer into Being of the heavens and the earth, He Who feeds and


Mankind! You are the poor in need
of Allah whereas Allah is the Rich
Beyond Need, the Praiseworthy.
(Surah Fatir: 15)



is not fed?" Say: "I am commanded to be the first of the Muslims," and, "Do not be among the idolaters." (Surat al-An'am: 14)

Their Messengers said, "Is there any doubt about Allah, the Bringer into Being of the heavens and the earth? He summons you to forgive you for your wrong actions and to defer you until a specified time." They said, "You are nothing but human beings like ourselves who want to debar us from what our fathers worshipped; so bring us a clear authority." (Surah Ibrahim: 10)

People who ignorantly ascribe divinity to man and regard him as a being of power and might are simply ignoring their incapacity. It is a great irrational perversion for someone who is helpless against an invisibly small virus, who cannot intervene in the faultlessly functioning system of his body and who can not delay the appointed moment of his death by Allah by even one second to claim a divine status, in his own eyes. Every human being came into existence by Allah's command of "Be!" In this life on earth, our Lord is trying each human and will hold him accountable for his every action.

It is revealed in the Qur'an that the Prophet Eber's (pbuh) people were idolaters who persisted in rejecting Allah but remained loyal to the worship of their fictitious idols. The Prophet Eber's (pbuh) reminder to them is related in the verses:

I have put my trust in Allah, my Lord and your Lord. There is no creature He does not hold by the forelock. My Lord is on a Straight Path. (Surah Hud: 56)

Conclusion

WHAT SHOULD BE THE ATTITUDE OF MUSLIMS TOWARDS THE FAR EASTERN RELIGIONS?

Throughout this book we have examined superstitious Far Eastern religions from various perspectives and demonstrated that expecting salvation from idols as they suggest, or seeking to solve problems through heretical rituals is a grave error with examples from the Qur'an. That being said, there is an important fact that needs to be pointed out alongside with the criticisms we have offered; it is stated in the Qur'an that "compulsion is not acceptable in religion" (Surat al-Baqara, 256) and that everyone has freedom of choice. According to Islam, every individual is free to choose his religion and belief. No doubt, followers of these superstitious religions have the right to believe as they choose, and Islamic societies must respect this right.

However, Islam requires of all Muslims that they point out their errors to people who are on the wrong path and invite them to righteousness. Superstitious Eastern religions have been criticized in this book in light of this religious obligation, and the followers of these superstitious religions have been invited sincerely to question their perverse beliefs and to reflect on "what the truth" actually is. Our purpose is to approach such people amicably, to show them the heretical aspects of their religions, and thus enable them to see the reality of the true religion called Islam and, Allah willing, to help them find salvation.

"UPHOLDING THE GOOD AND PREVENTING EVIL" IS A DUTY ON ALL MUSLIMS

Muslims learn true good and evil from the Qur'an revealed by Allah as a book that "separates good from evil". The Qur'an explains by examples everyone can understand the concepts of right and wrong, good and evil. A Muslim always tries his best to apply the morality of the Qur'an in all spheres of his life. He also has another important responsibility: to invite people to find truth, to refrain from evil and to live by the morality of the Qur'an. For this reason, Muslims explain to others the differences between good and evil throughout their lives. Allah reveals this responsibility with the following verse:

> **Let there be a community among you who call to the good, and enjoin the right, and forbid the wrong. They are the ones who have success. (Surah al 'Imran: 104)**

Genuine Muslims are aware of the importance of this duty revealed by the verse: "Let there be a community among you who call to the good, and enjoin the right, and forbid the wrong. They are the ones who have success." (Surah Al 'Imran: 104), which is why they invite everyone in their environment, their relatives, families and anyone they can reach, to believe in Allah, to fear and respect Him and to abide by the good morality he prescribes. Allah's commandment of upholding the good and preventing evil is the reason for the reminders made to the millions of people who know only the Far Eastern religions or who are People of the Book who converted to them.

The Qur'an also reports that people who abide by Allah's following commandment are the benefactors of humanity:

> **You are the best nation ever to be produced before mankind. You enjoin the right, forbid the wrong and have faith in Allah. If the People of the Book were to have faith, it would be better for them.**

Some of them are believers but most of them are deviators. (Surah Al 'Imran: 110)

The following verses reveal the nature of this call:

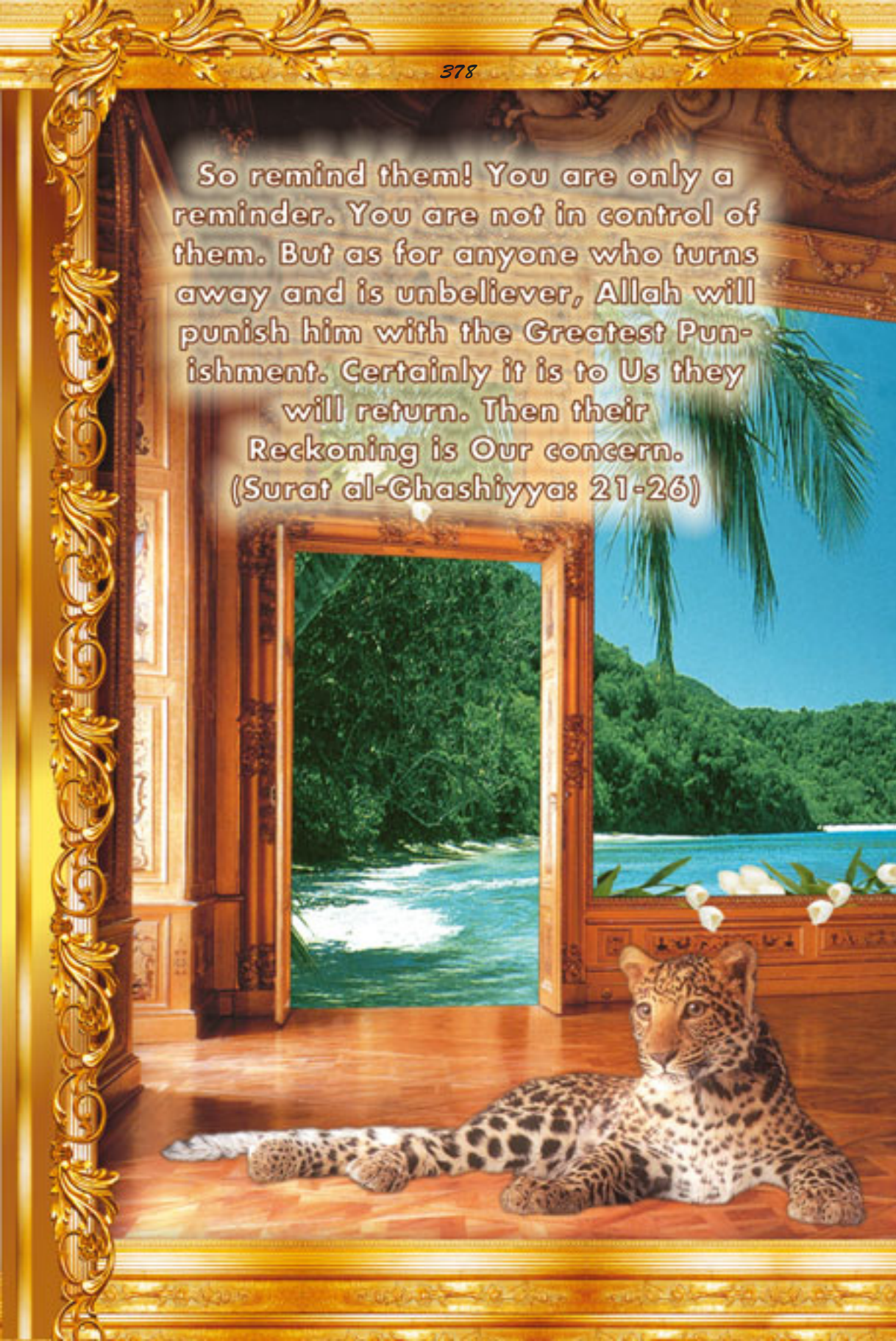
Call to the way of your Lord with wisdom and fair admonition, and argue with them in the kindest way. Your Lord knows best who is misguided from His way. And He knows best who are guided. (Surat an-Nahl: 125)

A Muslim is compelled to answer this call with compassion, goodwill and friendliness. "Say to My servants that they should only say the best." (Surat al-Isra: 53) Allah also reveals that our Prophet's (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) character was friendly, gentle and well-meaning and of impeccable morality, leading by example. Allah reveals his pleasant manner as follows:

It is a mercy from Allah that you were gentle with them. If you had been rough or hard of heart, they would have scattered from around you. So pardon them and ask forgiveness for them, and consult with them about the matter. Then when you have reached a firm decision, put your trust in Allah. Allah loves those who put their trust in Him. (Surah Al 'Imran: 159)

It is revealed in the verses that our Prophet's (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) pleasant moral values had a highly positive influence on people that made them more closely attached to Him. Allah's messengers treated people as Allah directed them, and they never compromised on virtue. For instance, Allah said to the Prophet Moses (pbuh) the following when he was on his way to meet the most tyrannical leader among his contemporaries:

Go, you and your brother, with My Signs and do not slacken in remembering Me. Go to Pharaoh; he has overstepped the bounds. But speak to him with gentle words so that hopefully he will pay heed or show some fear. (Surah Ta Ha: 42-44)


So remind them! You are only a reminder. You are not in control of them. But as for anyone who turns away and is unbeliever, Allah will punish him with the Greatest Punishment. Certainly it is to Us they will return. Then their Reckoning is Our concern.
(Surat al-Ghashiyya: 21-26)

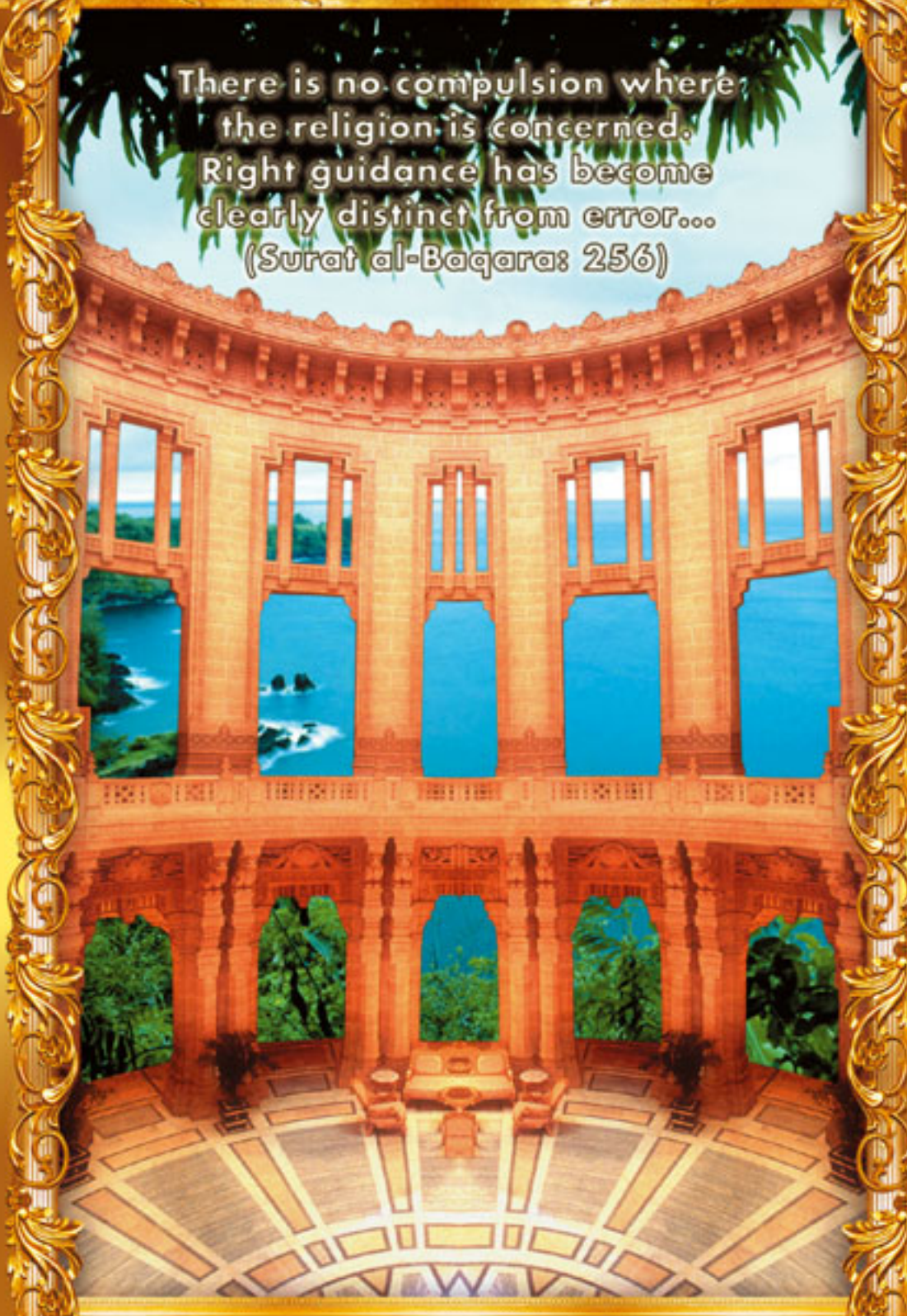


The above verses contain important reminders to believers. A Muslim must never use unkind words when inviting people to believe in Allah and to live by the morality of the Qur'an. He must be agreeable and favor love and affection. Such is the morality revealed in the Qur'an.

MAN IS FREE TO CHOOSE HIS RELIGION

Allah states in the Qur'an that compulsion is forbidden in religion. This is as valid today as it was back at the time when the Qur'an was first revealed and it is one of the core principles of Islam. Verses are clear on this.

> **There is no compulsion where the religion is concerned. Right guidance has become clearly distinct from error. Anyone who rejects false gods and has faith in Allah has grasped the Firmest Handhold, which will never give way. Allah is All-Hearing, All-Knowing. (Surat al-Baqara: 256)**


There is no compulsion where
the religion is concerned.
Right guidance has become
clearly distinct from error...
(Surat al-Baqara: 256)

According to Islamic morality, no one can force, coerce or threaten another in terms of faith. A Muslim's duty is to explain to people the beauty of Islam's morality, Allah's existence that the Qur'an is His Divine revelation, that the Prophet Muhammad (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) was His messenger, and that Judgment Day and the hereafter exist. His responsibility ends with the call to religion and Allah reveals that our Prophet's (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) duty was to convey the message:

But if they turn away, We have not sent you to be their guardian. You are only responsible for transmission. When We let a man taste mercy from Us he exults in it. But if something bad strikes him for what he has done he is ungrateful. (Surat ash-Shura: 48)

Call to the way of your Lord with wisdom and fair admonition, and argue with them in the kindest way. Your Lord knows best who is misguided from His way. And He knows best who are guided. (Surat an-Nahl: 125)

In another verse we are told: **Say: "It is the truth from your Lord; so let whoever wishes have faith and whoever wishes be unbeliever." (Surat al-Kahf: 29)**

When the Islamic faith, which is sent forth by Allah as a guide to wisdom, is explained to someone, he can choose to believe in it or not without force or pressure. Man is free to choose between right and wrong. If he chooses the wrong, he will receive its return. In many verses Allah reveals orders and reminders on this subject:

If your Lord had willed, all the people on the earth would have believed. Do you think you can force people to be believers? (Surah Yunus: 99)

For instance, whereas one person may believe straightaway on hearing Islam explained to him by a Muslim, another may well reject the call and respond aggressively. Whilst one chooses to use his con-

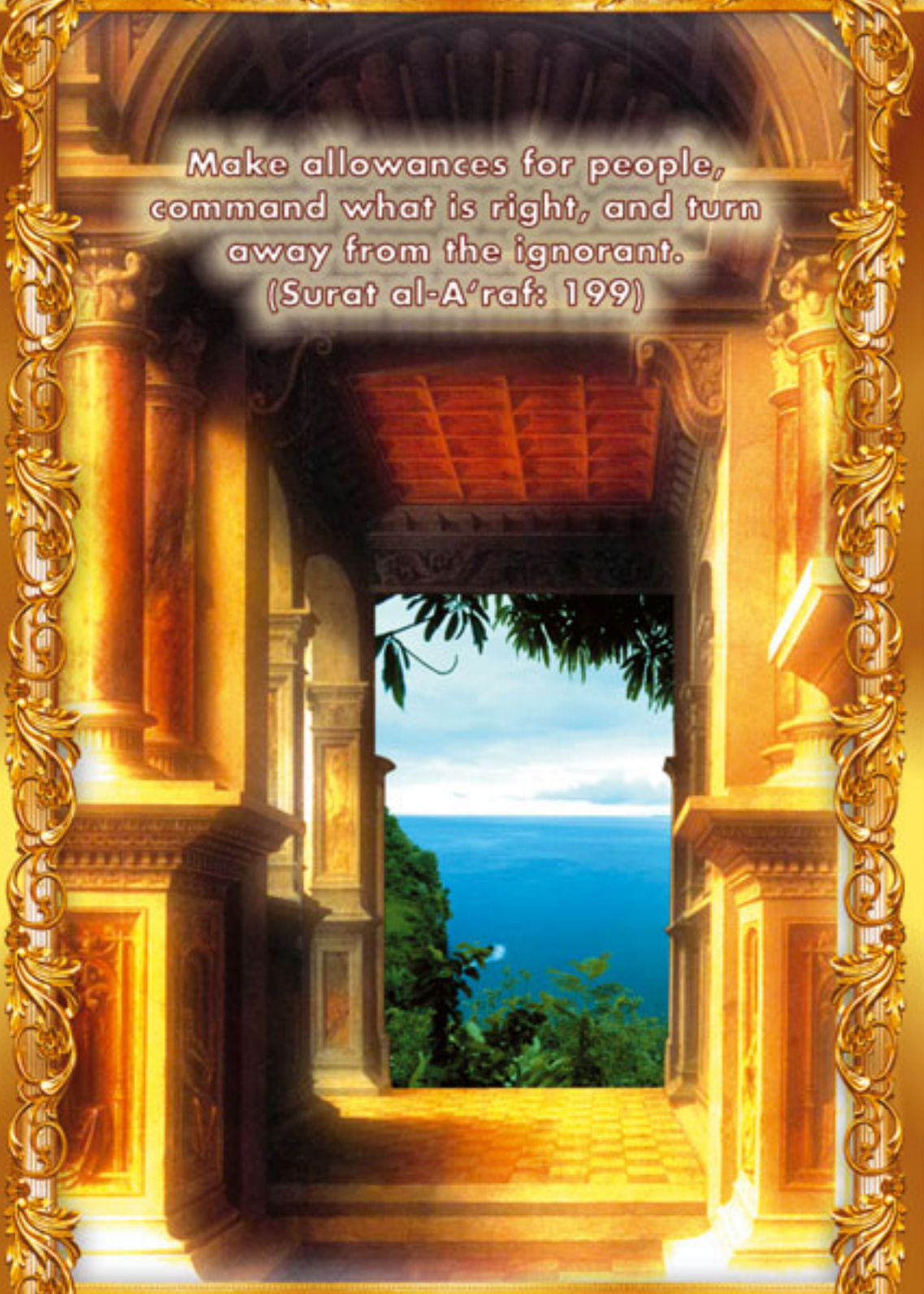
science and decides to lead a life pleasing to Allah, the other can be a denier who reacts badly to such an invitation. However this denial should not cause hopelessness or sorrow in the person calling to faith. Allah says the following in the Surah Yusuf:

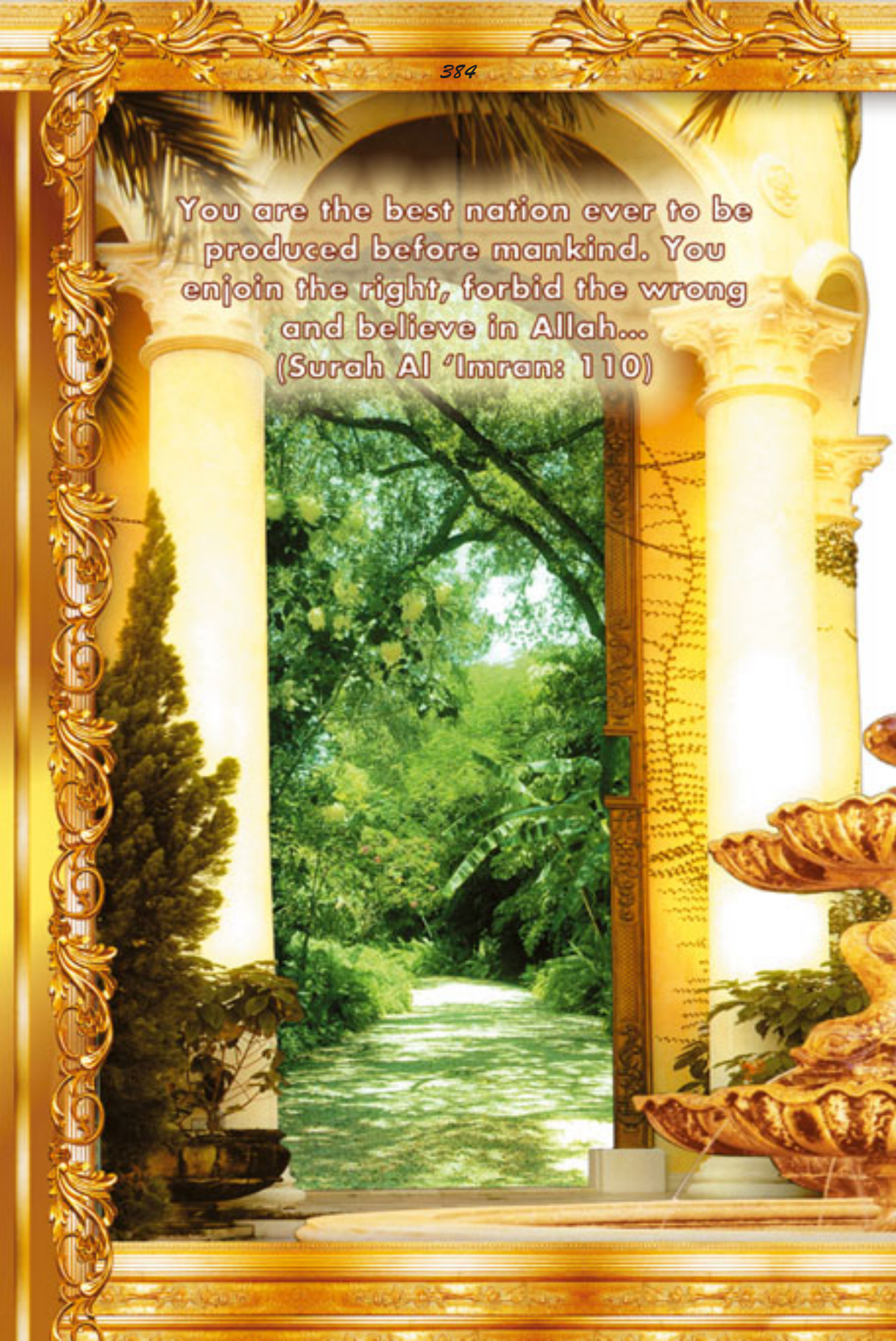
> **But most people, for all your eagerness, are not believers. You do not ask them for any wage for it. It is only a reminder to all beings. (Surah Yusuf: 103-104)**

The important thing to bear in mind here is that the person who invites others to follow the guidance of the Qur'an must remain true to Allah's recommended morality, does not compromise on this and has faith in Allah, regardless of the reaction he gets. Allah has given man reason and a conscience. He has shown the true path His messengers and the Divine message revealed to them. Everyone is ultimately responsible for their own decisions. True Islamic morality can only be practiced by sincere committal, genuine submission to Allah, and following at all times the voice of conscience. Forcing someone to worship is wholly incompatible with Islamic morality, because what matters is that a person wholeheartedly submits to Allah and genuinely believes in Him. If a system were to force people into a religion and compel them to worship, people would only appear to be religious because of their fear of the system. From a religious perspective only religiosity lived for Allah and based on free and conscious choice is acceptable. Allah says the following to our Prophet in the Surat al-Ghashiyya:

> **So remind them! You are only a reminder. You are not in control of them. But as for anyone who turns away and is unbeliever. Allah will punish him with the Greatest Punishment. Certainly it is to Us they will return. Then their Reckoning is Our concern. (Surat al-Ghashiyya: 21-26)**

The Islamic religion leaves people free to choose their faith and commands them to respect other people's religious choice. Even if


Make allowances for people,
command what is right, and turn
away from the ignorant.
(Surat al-A'raf: 199)


You are the best nation ever to be produced before mankind. You enjoin the right, forbid the wrong and believe in Allah...
(Surah Al 'Imran: 110)

someone chose to believe in a religion described as heretical in the Qur'an, he has the right to a peaceful and safe life on Islamic soil where he can freely practice his belief. Allah commanded the Prophet (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) as follows:

> **"I do not worship what you worship and you do not worship what I worship. Nor will I worship what you worship nor will you worship what I worship. You have your religion and I have my religion." (Surat al-Kafirun: 2-6)**

If we examine Islamic history we see a social model in which everyone freely practiced their religion. The Qur'an speaks of the monasteries, churches and synagogues of the People of the Book as places of worship protected by Allah:

> **… If Allah had not driven some people back by means of others, monasteries, churches, synagogues and mosques, where Allah's name is mentioned much, would have been pulled down and destroyed. Allah will certainly help those who help Him – Allah is All-Strong, Almighty, (Surat al-Hajj: 40)**

Our Prophet's (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) life is full of examples for us to go by. Our Prophet (may Allah bless him and grant him peace) even opened up his own place of worship for the Christians' use who visited to speak with him.[167] This affectionate attitude continued during the reign of successive Caliphs. When Damascus was sacked, a church converted into a mosque was divided into two sections, one for Muslim worship, and the other for Christian.[168] As we have seen in the previous chapters of the book, Muslim nations ruled Indian lands and delivered justice, peace, security and prosperity. The countless historic buildings, mosques and palaces across India bear testimony to the glory of Islamic civilization.

CONCLUSION

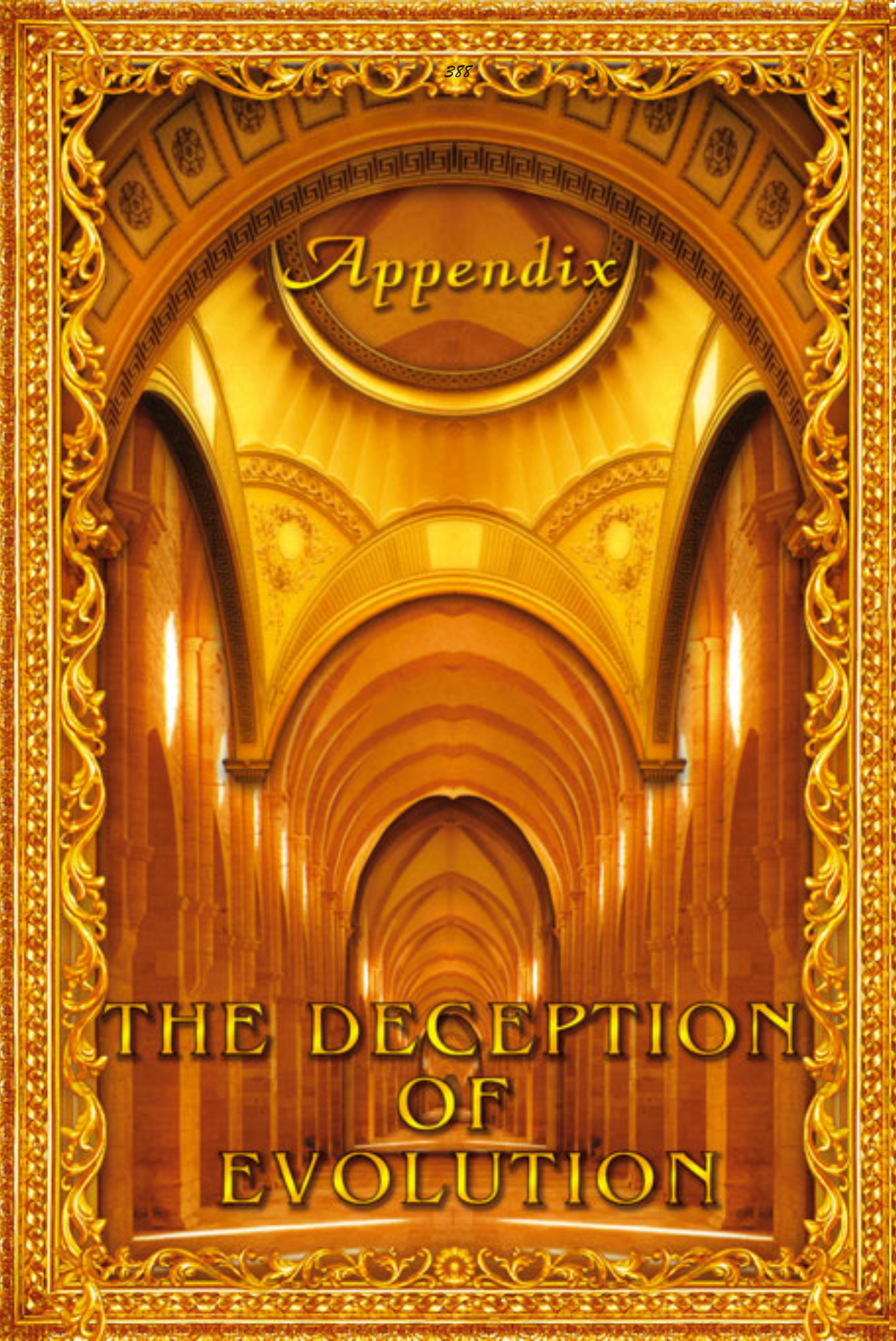
Throughout this book we have abided by Allah's commandment revealed in the Qur'an to explain faith and reminded followers of superstitious Far Eastern religions to "refrain from evil" and the hazardous end to which their religion might lead them. We have also explained Allah's verses and Islamic morality for the benefit of people. All followers of Hinduism, Buddhism, Jainism, Shamanism, Confucianism, Taoism, Shintoism, Sikhism and other practitioners of superstitious Far Eastern religions are invited to abandon their erroneous beliefs, to believe in the one and only Allah and to submit to the will of our Almighty Lord.

They should reflect with common sense on this rewarding invitation, and reevaluate sincerely their habitual pagan traditions and rituals free from prejudice. If they follow the voice of their conscience and reflect on the reminders noted in this book, no doubt they too will unite under the one truth which is "La Ilaha Illa Allah" (There is no god but Allah). All people who choose to abandon their idols and false gods acquired besides Allah and decide to worship only Him, feeling remorse for the evils they have committed before, should act on their decision without losing any more time. They must leave all their false beliefs and ways of life behind and surrender to Allah from the bottom of their hearts. If they do, they **"will find Allah most certainly forgiving and compassionate"** (Surat an-Nisa': 110) and they will find contentment and happiness. The actions of the Israelites under similar circumstances provide a good example for them. The Prophet Moses (pbuh) reminded them of their error, and called them to repent and turn to Allah. Allah reveals in the Surat al-Baqara that He forgave them:

> **And when Moses said to his people, "My people, You wronged yourselves by taking the Calf (for worship) so turn towards your Maker and kill yourselves. That is the best thing for you in your Maker's Sight." And He turned towards you. He is the Ever-Returning, the Most Merciful. (Surat al-Baqara: 54)**



Appendix



Darwinism, in other words the theory of evolution, was put forward with the aim of denying the fact of Creation, but is in truth nothing but failed, unscientific nonsense. **This theory, which claims that life emerged by chance from inanimate matter, was invalidated by the scientific evidence of miraculous order in the universe and in living things, as well as by the discovery of more than 300 million fossils revealing that evolution never happened. In this way, science confirmed the fact that Allah created the universe and the living things in it. The propaganda carried out today in order to keep the theory of evolution alive is based solely on the distortion of the scientific facts, biased interpretation, and lies and falsehoods disguised as science.**

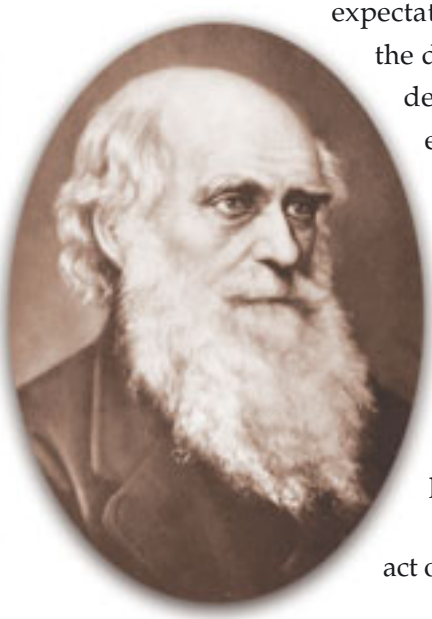
Yet this propaganda cannot conceal the truth. The fact that **the theory of evolution is the greatest deception in the history of science** has been expressed more and more in the scientific world over the last 20-30 years. Research carried out after the 1980s in particular has revealed that the claims of Darwinism are totally unfounded, something that has been stated by a large number of scientists. In the United States in particular, many scientists from such different fields as biology, biochemistry and paleontology recognize the invalidity of Darwinism and employ the fact of Creation to account for the origin of life.

We have examined the collapse of the theory of evolution and the proofs of Creation in great scientific detail in many of our works, and are still continuing to do so. Given the enormous importance of this subject, it will be of great benefit to summarize it here.

The Scientific Collapse of Darwinism

As **a pagan doctrine** going back as far as ancient Greece, the theory of evolution was advanced extensively in the nineteenth century. The most important development that made it the top topic of the world of science was Charles Darwin's *The Origin of Species*, published in 1859. In this book, he opposed, in his own eyes, the fact that Allah created different living species on Earth separately, for he erroneously claimed that all living beings had a common ancestor and had diversified over time through small changes. **Darwin's theory was not based on any concrete scientific finding; as he also accepted, it was just an "assumption."** Moreover, as Darwin confessed in the long chapter of his book titled **"Difficulties on Theory," the theory failed in the face of many critical questions.**

Darwin invested all of his hopes in new scientific discoveries, which he expected to solve these difficulties. However, contrary to his expectations, scientific findings expanded the dimensions of these difficulties. The defeat of Darwinism in the face of science can be reviewed under three basic topics:



Charles Darwin

1) The theory cannot explain how life originated on Earth.

2) No scientific finding shows that the "evolutionary mechanisms" proposed by the theory have any evolutionary power at all.

3) The fossil record proves the exact opposite of what the theory suggests.

In this section, we will examine these three basic points in general outlines:

The First Insurmountable Step: The Origin of Life

The theory of evolution posits that all living species evolved from a single living cell that emerged on Earth 3.8 billion years ago, supposed to have happened as a result of coincidences. How a single cell could generate millions of complex living species and, if such an evolution really occurred, why traces of it cannot be observed in the fossil record are some of the questions that the theory cannot answer. However, first and foremost, we need to ask: **How did this "first cell" originate?**

Since the theory of evolution ignorantly denies Creation, it maintains that the "first cell" originated as a product of blind coincidences within the laws of nature, without any plan or arrangement. According to the theory, inanimate matter must have produced a living cell as a result of coincidences. Such a claim, however, is inconsistent with the most unassailable rules of biology.

"Life Comes From Life"

In his book, Darwin never referred to the origin of life. The primitive understanding of science in his time rested on the assumption that living beings had a very simple structure. Since medieval times, spontaneous generation, which asserts that non-living materials came together to form living organisms, had been widely accepted. It was commonly believed that insects came into being from food leftovers, and mice from wheat. Interesting experiments were conducted to prove this theory. Some wheat was placed on a dirty piece of cloth, and it was believed that mice would originate from it after a while.

Similarly, maggots developing in rotting meat was assumed to be evidence of spontaneous generation. However, **it was later understood that worms did not appear on meat spontaneously, but were carried there by flies in the form of larvae, invisible to the naked eye.**

Even when Darwin wrote *The Origin of Species*, the belief that bacteria could come into existence from non-living matter was widely accepted in the world of science.

However, **five years after the publication of Darwin's book, Louis Pasteur announced his results after long studies and experiments, that disproved spontaneous generation, a cornerstone of Darwin's theory.** In his triumphal lecture at the Sorbonne in 1864, **Pasteur said: "Never will the doctrine of spontaneous generation recover from the mortal blow struck by this simple experiment."**[169]

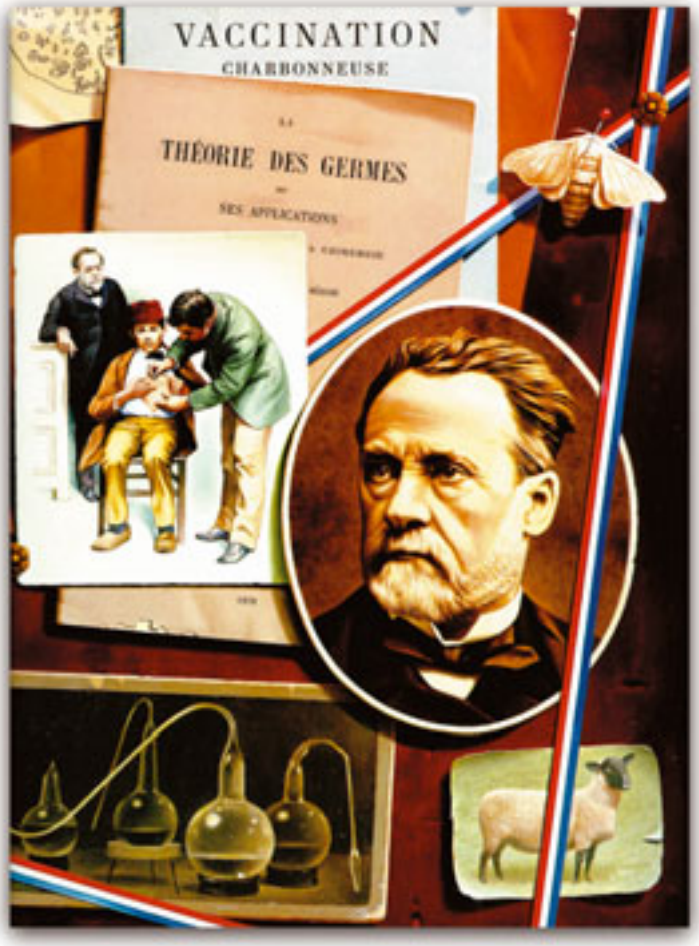
For a long time, advocates of the theory of evolution resisted these findings. However, as the development of science unraveled the complex structure of the cell of a living being, the idea that life could come into being coincidentally faced an even greater impasse.

Inconclusive Efforts of the Twentieth Century

The first evolutionist who took up the subject of the origin of life in the twentieth century was the renowned Russian biologist Alexander Oparin. With various theses he advanced in the 1930s, he tried to prove that a living cell could originate by coincidence. These studies, however, were doomed to failure, and Oparin had to make the following confession:

> *Unfortunately, however, the problem of the origin of the cell is perhaps the most obscure point in the whole study of the evolution of organisms.*[170]

Evolutionist followers of Oparin tried to carry out experiments to solve this problem. The best known experiment was carried out by the American chemist Stanley Miller in 1953. Combining the gases he al-



Louis Pasteur

leged to have existed in the primordial Earth's atmosphere in an experiment set-up, and adding energy to the mixture, Miller synthesized several organic molecules (amino acids) present in the structure of proteins.

Barely a few years had passed before it was revealed that **this experiment, which was then presented as an important step in the name of evolution, was invalid, for the atmosphere used in the experiment was very different from the real Earth conditions.**[171]

After a long silence, **Miller confessed that the atmosphere medium he used was unrealistic.**[172]

All the evolutionists' efforts throughout the twentieth century to explain the origin of life ended in failure. The geochemist Jeffrey Bada, from the San Diego Scripps Institute accepts this fact in an article published in *Earth* magazine in 1998:

> *Today as we leave the twentieth century, we still face the biggest unsolved problem that we had when we entered the twentieth century: How did life originate on Earth?*[173]

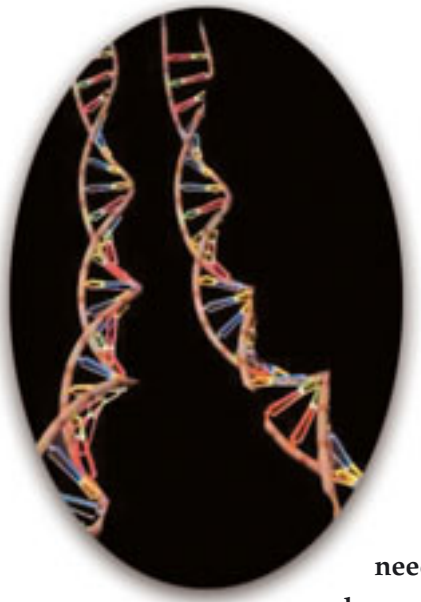
The Complex Structure of Life

The primary reason why evolutionists ended up in such a great impasse regarding the origin of life is that even those living organisms Darwinists deemed to be the simplest have outstandingly complex features. The cell of a living thing is more complex than all of our man-made technological products. **Today, even in the most developed laboratories of the world, no single protein of the cell, let alone a living cell itself, can be produced by bringing organic chemicals together.**

The conditions required for the formation of a cell are too great in quantity to be explained away by coincidences. However, there is no need to explain the situation with these details. Evolutionists are at a dead-end even before reaching the stage of the cell. That is because the probability of just a single protein, an essential building block of the cell, coming into being by chance is mathematically **"0."**

The main reason for this is the need for other proteins to be present if one protein is to form, and this completely eradicates the possibility of chance formation. This fact by itself is sufficient to eliminate the evolutionist claim of chance right from the outset. To summarize,

1. Protein cannot be synthesized without enzymes, and enzymes are all proteins.



All information about living beings is stored in the DNA molecule. This incredibly efficient information storage method alone is a clear evidence that life did not come into being by chance, but has been marvelously created.

2. Around 100 proteins need to be present in order for a single protein to be synthesized. There therefore need to be proteins for proteins to exist.

3. DNA manufactures the protein-synthesizing enzymes. Protein cannot be synthesized without DNA. DNA is therefore also needed in order for proteins to form.

4. All the organelles in the cell have important tasks in protein synthesis. In other words, in order for proteins to form a perfect and fully functioning cell needs to exist together with all its organelles.

The DNA molecule, which is located in the nucleus of a cell and which stores genetic information, is a magnificent databank. If the information coded in DNA were written down, it would make a giant library consisting of an estimated 900 volumes of encyclopedias consisting of 500 pages each.

A very interesting dilemma emerges at this point: DNA can replicate itself only with the help of some specialized proteins (enzymes). However, the synthesis of these enzymes can be realized only by the information coded in DNA. As they both depend on each other, they have to exist at the same time for replication. This brings the scenario

that life originated by itself to a deadlock. Prof. Leslie Orgel, an evolutionist of repute from the University of San Diego, California, confesses this fact in the September 1994 issue of the *Scientific American* magazine:

> ***It is extremely improbable that proteins and nucleic acids, both of which are structurally complex, arose spontaneously in the same place at the same time.*** *Yet it also seems impossible to have one without the other. And so, at first glance, one might have to conclude that life could never, in fact, have originated by chemical means.*[174]

No doubt, if it is impossible for life to have originated spontaneously as a result of blind coincidences, then it has to be accepted that life was "**created**." This fact explicitly invalidates the theory of evolution, whose main purpose is to deny Creation.

Imaginary Mechanism of Evolution

The second important point that negates Darwin's theory is that both concepts put forward by the theory as "evolutionary mechanisms" were understood to have, in reality, no evolutionary power.

Darwin based his evolution allegation entirely on the mechanism of "natural selection." The importance he placed on this mechanism was evident in the name of his book: *The Origin of Species*, By Means of Natural Selection…

Natural selection holds that those living things that are stronger and more suited to the natural conditions of their habitats will survive in the struggle for life. For example, in a deer herd under the threat of attack by wild animals, those that can run faster will survive. Therefore, the deer herd will be comprised of faster and stronger individuals. However, unquestionably, this mechanism will not cause deer to evolve and transform themselves into another living species, for instance, horses.



According to natural selection, the fittest living things and those best able to adapt to their environment survive, while the others die out. Evolutionists, however, maintain that natural selection evolves living things and gives rise to new species. The fact is, however, that no such consequences result from natural selection, and not a single piece of evidence supports that claim.

Therefore, **the mechanism of natural selection has no evolutionary power. Darwin was also aware of this fact** and had to state this in his book *The Origin of Species*:

> *Natural selection can do nothing until favourable individual differences or variations occur.*[175]

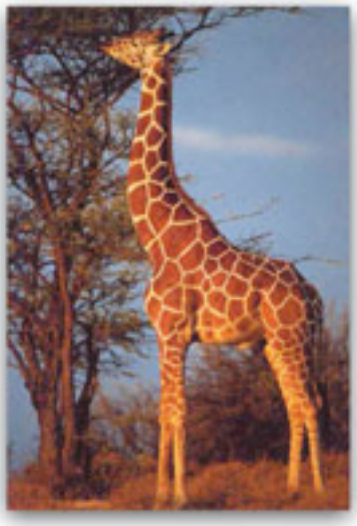
Lamarck's Impact

So, how could these "favorable variations" occur? Darwin tried to answer this question from the standpoint of the primitive understanding of science at that time. According to the French biologist Chevalier de Lamarck (1744-1829), who lived before Darwin, living creatures

passed on the traits they acquired during their lifetime to the next generation. He asserted that these traits, which accumulated from one generation to another, caused new species to be formed. For instance, he claimed that giraffes evolved from antelopes; as they struggled to eat the leaves of high trees, their necks were extended from generation to generation.

Darwin also gave similar examples. In his book *The Origin of Species*, for instance, he said that some bears going into water to find food transformed themselves into whales over time.[176]

However, the laws of inheritance discovered by Gregor Mendel (1822-84) and verified by the science of genetics, which flourished in the twentieth century, utterly demolished the legend that acquired traits were passed on to subsequent generations. Thus, natural selection fell out of favor as an evolutionary mechanism.



Lamarck believed that giraffes evolved from animals resembling antelopes. In his view, these creatures' necks grew as they stretched up to eat the leaves on trees, and they gradually turned into giraffes. The laws of inheritance discovered by Mendel in 1865 proved that it was impossible for characteristics acquired during the course of life to be handed on to later generations. Thus Lamarck's just-so story was consigned to the wastebasket of history.

Neo-Darwinism and Mutations

In order to find a solution, Darwinists advanced the "Modern Synthetic Theory," or as it is more commonly known, Neo-Darwinism, at the end of the 1930s. Neo-Darwinism added mutations, which are distortions formed in the genes of living beings due to such external factors as radiation or replication errors, as the "cause of favorable variations" in addition to natural mutation.

Today, the model that Darwinists espouse, despite their own awareness of its scientific invalidity, is neo-Darwinism. The theory maintains that millions of living beings formed as a result of a process whereby numerous complex organs of these organisms (e.g., ears, eyes, lungs, and wings) underwent "mutations," that is, genetic disorders. Yet, there is an outright scientific fact that totally undermines this theory: **Mutations do not cause living beings to develop; on the contrary, they are always harmful.**



Accidental mutations develop into defects in humans as well as other living beings. The Chernobyl disaster is an eye-opener for the effects of mutations.

The reason for this is very simple: **DNA has a very complex structure, and random effects can only harm it.** The American geneticist B. G. Ranganathan explains this as follows:

> First, genuine mutations are very rare in nature. Secondly, most mutations are harmful since they are random, rather than orderly changes in the structure of genes; any random change in a highly ordered system will be for the worse, not for the better. For example, **if an earthquake were to shake a highly ordered structure**



The 150-200-million-year-old fossil dragonfly (Jurassic-Recent age) is no different from specimens living today.

such as a building, there would be a random change in the framework of the building which, in all probability, would not be an improvement.[177]

Not surprisingly, no mutation example, which is useful, that is, which is observed to develop the genetic code, has been observed so far. All mutations have proved to be harmful. It was understood that mutation, which is presented as an "evolutionary mechanism," is actually a genetic occurrence that harms living things, and leaves them disabled. (The most common effect of mutation on human beings is cancer.) Of course, a destructive mechanism cannot be an "evolutionary mechanism." Natural selection, on the other hand, "can do nothing by itself," as Darwin also accepted. This fact shows us that **there is no "evolutionary mechanism" in nature.** Since no evolutionary mechanism exists, no such imaginary process called "evolution" could have taken place.

The Fossil Record: No Sign of Intermediate Forms

The clearest evidence that the scenario suggested by the theory of evolution did not take place is the fossil record.

According to the unscientific supposition of this theory, every living species has sprung from a predecessor. A previously existing species turned into something else over time and all species have come into being in this way. In other words, this transformation proceeds gradually over millions of years.

Had this been the case, numerous intermediary species should have existed and lived within this long transformation period.

For instance, some half-fish/half-reptiles should have lived in the past which had acquired some reptilian traits in addition to the fish traits they already had. Or there should have existed some reptile-

LIVING FOSSILS REFUTE EVOLUTION

Fossils are evidence that evolution never happened. As revealed by the fossil record, living organisms were created complete with all their characteristics, and have never changed since they first appeared and for as long as they existed. Fish have always been fish, insects have always been insects and reptiles have always been reptiles. There are no scientific grounds for the claim that species gradually develop. All beings are created by Almighty God.





A 54-to-37-million-year-old fossil sunfish



Crane Fly
Period: Eocene
Age: 48 to 37 million years old



A 295-million-year-old fossil sea urchin



Starfish
Period: Ordovician
Age: 500 to 440 million years old





Birch Leaf
Period: Eocene
Age: 50 million years old

A 125-million-year-old fossil cicada







A 50-million-year-old fossil sequoia leaf



birds, which acquired some bird traits in addition to the reptilian traits they already had. Since these would be in a transitional phase, they should be disabled, defective, crippled living beings. Evolutionists refer to these imaginary creatures, which they believe to have lived in the past, as "transitional forms."

If such animals ever really existed, there should be millions and even billions of them in number and variety. More importantly, the remains of these strange creatures should be present in the fossil record. In *The Origin of Species*, Darwin explained:

> *If my theory be true, numberless intermediate varieties, linking most closely all of the species of the same group together must assuredly have existed... Consequently, evidence of their former existence could be found only amongst fossil remains.*[178]

However, **Darwin was well aware that no fossils of these intermediate forms had yet been found.** He regarded this as a major difficulty for his theory. In one chapter of his book titled "Difficulties on Theory," he wrote:

> ***Why**, if species have descended from other species by insensibly fine gradations, **do we not everywhere see innumerable transitional forms? Why is not all nature in confusion instead of the species being, as we see them, well defined?... But, as by this theory innumerable transitional forms must have existed, why do we not find them embedded in countless numbers in the crust of the earth?... Why then is not every geological formation and every stratum full of such intermediate links?*** [179]

Darwin's Hopes Shattered

However, although evolutionists have been making strenuous efforts to find fossils since the middle of the nineteenth century all over the world, **no transitional forms have yet been uncovered.** All of the



Imaginary representations of 'primitive' human beings are frequently employed in stories carried by pro-evolution newspapers and magazines. The only source for these stories, based on these imaginary representations, are the imaginations of their authors. Yet evolution has suffered such a defeat in the face of the scientific facts that fewer reports concerning evolution now appear in scientific magazines.

fossils, contrary to the evolutionists' expectations, show that **life appeared on Earth all of a sudden and fully-formed.**

One famous British paleontologist, Derek V. Ager, admits this fact, even though he is an evolutionist:

> The point emerges that if we examine the fossil record in detail, whether at the level of orders or of species, **we find – over and over again – not gradual evolution, but the sudden explosion of one group at the expense of another.**[180]

This means that in **the fossil record, all living species suddenly emerge as fully formed, without any intermediate forms in between.** This is just the opposite of Darwin's assumptions. Also, this is very strong evidence that **all living things are created.** The only explanation of a living species emerging suddenly and complete in every detail with-

out any evolutionary ancestor is that it was created. This fact is admitted also by the widely known evolutionist biologist Douglas Futuyma:

> *Creation and evolution, between them, exhaust the possible explanations for the origin of living things. Organisms either appeared on the earth fully developed or they did not. If they did not, they must have developed from pre-existing species by some process of modification. If they did appear in a fully developed state, they must indeed have been created by some omnipotent intelligence.*[181]

Fossils show that living beings emerged fully developed and in a perfect state on the Earth. That means that "the origin of species," contrary to Darwin's supposition, is not evolution, but **Creation**.

The Tale of Human Evolution

The subject most often brought up by advocates of the theory of evolution is the subject of the origin of man. The Darwinist claim holds that man evolved from so-called ape-like creatures. During this alleged evolutionary process, which is supposed to have started 4-5 million years ago, some "transitional forms" between man and his imaginary ancestors are supposed to have existed. According to this completely imaginary scenario, four basic "categories" are listed:

1. *Australopithecus*
2. *Homo habilis*
3. *Homo erectus*
4. *Homo sapiens*

Evolutionists call man's so-called first ape-like ancestors Australopithecus, which means "South African ape." These living beings are actually nothing but an old ape species that has become extinct. Extensive research done on various Australopithecus specimens by two world famous anatomists from England and the USA, namely, Lord Solly Zuckerman and Prof. Charles Oxnard, shows that these apes

belonged to an ordinary ape species that became extinct and bore no resemblance to humans.[182]

Evolutionists classify the next stage of human evolution as "homo," that is "man." According to their claim, the living beings in the Homo series are more developed than *Australopithecus*. Evolutionists devise a fanciful evolution scheme by arranging different fossils of these creatures in a particular order. This scheme is imaginary because it has never been proved that there is an evolutionary relation between these different classes. Ernst Mayr, one of the twentieth century's most important evolutionists, contends in his book One Long Argument that "particularly historical [puzzles] such as the origin of life or of *Homo sapiens*, are extremely difficult and may even resist a final, satisfying explanation."[183]

By outlining the link chain as *Australopithecus* > *Homo habilis* > *Homo erectus* > *Homo sapiens*, evolutionists imply that each of these species is one another's ancestor. However, recent findings of paleoanthropologists have revealed that *Australopithecus*, *Homo habilis*, and *Homo erectus* lived at different parts of the world at the same time.[184]

Moreover, a certain segment of humans classified as Homo erectus have lived up until very modern times. **Homo sapiens neandarthalensis and Homo sapiens sapiens (man) co-existed in the same region.**[185]

This situation apparently indicates the invalidity of the claim that they are ancestors of one another. The late Stephen Jay Gould explained this deadlock of the theory of evolution although he was himself one of the leading advocates of evolution in the twentieth century:

> *What has become of our ladder if there are three coexisting lineages of hominids (A. africanus, the robust australopithecines, and H. habilis), none clearly derived from another? Moreover, none of the three display any evolutionary trends during their tenure on earth.*[186]

Put briefly, the scenario of human evolution, which is "upheld" with the help of various drawings of some "half ape, half human" creatures appearing in the media and course books, that is, frankly, by means of propaganda, is nothing but **a tale with no scientific foundation.**

Lord Solly Zuckerman, one of the most famous and respected scientists in the U.K., who carried out research on this subject for years and studied Australopithecus fossils for 15 years, finally concluded, despite being an evolutionist himself, **that there is, in fact, no such family tree branching out from ape-like creatures to man.**

Zuckerman also made an interesting "spectrum of science" ranging from those he considered scientific to those he considered unscientific. According to Zuckerman's spectrum, the most "scientific"—that is, depending on concrete data—fields of science are chemistry and physics. After them come the biological sciences and then the social sciences. At the far end of the spectrum, which is the part considered to be most "unscientific," are "extra-sensory perception"—concepts such as telepathy and sixth sense—and finally "human evolution." Zuckerman explains his reasoning:

> *We then move right off the register of objective truth into those fields of presumed biological science, like extrasensory perception or the interpretation of man's fossil history, where to the faithful [evolutionist] anything is possible – and where the ardent believer [in evolution] is sometimes able to believe several contradictory things at the same time.*[187]

The tale of human evolution boils down to nothing but the prejudiced interpretations of some fossils unearthed by certain people, who blindly adhere to their theory.

Darwinian Formula!

Besides all the technical evidence we have dealt with so far, let us now for once, examine what kind of a superstition the evolutionists have with an example so simple as to be understood even by children:

The theory of evolution asserts that life is formed by chance. According to this irrational claim, lifeless and unconscious atoms came together to form the cell and then they somehow formed other living things, including man. Let us think about that. When we bring together the elements that are the building-blocks of life such as carbon, phosphorus, nitrogen and potassium, only a heap is formed. No matter what treatments it undergoes, this atomic heap cannot form even a single living being. If you like, let us formulate an "experiment" on this subject and let us examine on the behalf of evolutionists what they really claim without pronouncing loudly under the name "**Darwinian formula**":

Let evolutionists put plenty of materials present in the composition of living things such as phosphorus, nitrogen, carbon, oxygen, iron, and magnesium into big barrels. Moreover, let them add in these barrels any material that does not exist under normal conditions, but they think as necessary. Let them add in this mixture as many amino acids and as many proteins—a single one of which can by no means form by chance— as they like. Let them expose these mixtures to as much heat and moisture as they like. Let them stir these with whatever technologically developed device they like. Let them put the foremost scientists beside these barrels. Let these experts wait in turn beside these barrels for billions, and even trillions of years. Let them be free to use all kinds of conditions they believe to be necessary for a human's formation. **No matter what they do, they cannot produce from these barrels a human, say a professor that examines his cell structure under the elec-**



tron microscope. They cannot produce giraffes, lions, bees, canaries, horses, dolphins, roses, orchids, lilies, carnations, bananas, oranges, apples, dates, tomatoes, melons, watermelons, figs, olives, grapes, peaches, peafowls, pheasants, multicoloured butterflies, or millions of other living beings such as these. Indeed, they could not obtain even a single cell of any one of them.

Briefly, **unconscious atoms cannot form the cell** by coming together. They cannot take a new decision and divide this cell into two, then take other decisions and create the professors who first invent the electron microscope and then examine their own cell structure under that microscope. **Matter is an unconscious, lifeless heap, and it comes to life with Allah's superior creation.**

The theory of evolution, which claims the opposite, is a total fallacy completely contrary to reason. Thinking even a little bit on the claims of evolutionists discloses this reality, just as in the above example.

Technology in the Eye and the Ear

Another subject that remains unanswered by evolutionary theory is the excellent quality of perception in the eye and the ear.

Before passing on to the subject of the eye, let us briefly answer the question of how we see. Light rays coming from an object fall oppositely on the eye's retina. Here, these light rays are transmitted into electric signals by cells and reach a tiny spot at the back of the brain, the "center of vision." These electric signals are perceived in this center as an image after a series of processes. With this technical background, let us do some thinking.

The brain is insulated from light. That means that its inside is completely dark, and that no light reaches the place where it is located. Thus, the "center of vision" is never touched by light and may even be

the darkest place you have ever known. However, you observe a luminous, bright world in this pitch darkness.

The image formed in the eye is so sharp and distinct that even the technology of the twentieth century has not been able to attain it. For instance, look at the book you are reading, your hands with which you are holding it, and then lift your head and look around you. Have you ever seen such a sharp and distinct image as this one at any other place? Even the most developed television screen produced by the greatest television producer in the world cannot provide such a sharp image for you. This is a three-dimensional, colored, and extremely sharp image. For more than 100 years, thousands of engineers have been trying to achieve this sharpness. Factories, huge premises were established, much research has been done, plans and designs have been made for this purpose. Again, look at a TV screen and the book you hold in your hands. You will see that there is a big difference in sharp-

Compared to cameras and sound recording machines, the eye and ear are much more complex, much more successful and possess far superior features to these products of high technology.



ness and distinction. Moreover, the TV screen shows you a two-dimensional image, whereas with your eyes, you watch a three-dimensional perspective with depth.

For many years, tens of thousands of engineers have tried to make a three-dimensional TV and achieve the vision quality of the eye. Yes, they have made a three-dimensional television system, but it is not possible to watch it without putting on special 3-D glasses; moreover, it is only an artificial three-dimension. The background is more blurred, the foreground appears like a paper setting. Never has it been possible to produce a sharp and distinct vision like that of the eye. In both the camera and the television, there is a loss of image quality.

Evolutionists claim that the mechanism producing this sharp and distinct image has been formed by chance. Now, if somebody told you that the television in your room was formed as a result of chance, that all of its atoms just happened to come together and make up this device that produces an image, what would you think? How can atoms do what thousands of people cannot?

If a device producing a more primitive image than **the eye could not have been formed by chance,** then it is very evident that the eye and the image seen by the eye could not have been formed by chance. The same situation applies to the ear. The outer ear picks up the available sounds by the auricle and directs them to the middle ear, the middle ear transmits the sound vibrations by intensifying them, and the inner ear sends these vibrations to the brain by translating them into electric signals. Just as with the eye, the act of hearing finalizes in the center of hearing in the brain.

The situation in the eye is also true for the ear. That is, **the brain is insulated from sound** just as it is from light. It does not let any sound in. Therefore, no matter how noisy is the outside, the inside of the brain is completely silent. Nevertheless, the sharpest sounds are perceived in

the brain. **In your completely silent brain, you listen to symphonies, and hear all of the noises in a crowded place.** However, were the sound level in your brain measured by a precise device at that moment, complete silence would be found to be prevailing there.

As is the case with imagery, decades of effort have been spent in trying to generate and reproduce sound that is faithful to the original. The results of these efforts are sound recorders, high-fidelity systems, and systems for sensing sound. Despite all of this technology and the thousands of engineers and experts who have been working on this en-



deavor, no sound has yet been obtained that has the same sharpness and clarity as the sound perceived by the ear. Think of the highest-quality hi-fi systems produced by the largest company in the music industry. Even in these devices, when sound is recorded some of it is lost; or when you turn on a hi-fi you always hear a hissing sound before the music starts. However, the sounds that are the products of the human body's technology are extremely sharp and clear. A human ear never perceives a sound accompanied by a hissing sound or with atmospherics as does a hi-fi; rather, it perceives sound exactly as it is, sharp and clear. This is the way it has been since **the creation of man**.



So far, no man-made visual or recording apparatus has been as sensitive and successful in perceiving sensory data as are the eye and the ear. However, as far as seeing and hearing are concerned, a far greater truth lies beyond all this.

To Whom Does the Consciousness that Sees and Hears within the Brain Belong?

Who watches an alluring world in the brain, listens to symphonies and the twittering of birds, and smells the rose?

The stimulations coming from a person's eyes, ears, and nose travel to the brain as electro-chemical nerve impulses. In biology, physiology, and biochemistry books, you can find many details about how this image forms in the brain. However, you will never come across the most important fact: Who perceives these electro-chemical nerve impulses as images, sounds, odors, and sensory events in the brain? **There is a consciousness in the brain that perceives all this without feeling any need for an eye, an ear, and a nose.** To whom does this consciousness belong? Of course it does not belong to the nerves, the fat layer, and neurons comprising the brain. This is why Darwinist-materialists, who believe that everything is comprised of matter, cannot answer these questions.

For **this consciousness is the spirit created by Allah,** which needs neither the eye to watch the images nor the ear to hear the sounds. Furthermore, it does not need the brain to think.

Everyone who reads this explicit and scientific fact should ponder on Almighty Allah, and fear and seek refuge in Him, for He squeezes the entire universe in a pitch-dark place of a few cubic centimeters in a three-dimensional, colored, shadowy, and luminous form.

A Materialist Faith

The information we have presented so far shows us that **the theory of evolution is incompatible with scientific findings.** The theory's claim regarding the origin of life is inconsistent with science, the evolutionary mechanisms it proposes have no evolutionary power, and fossils demonstrate that **the required intermediate forms have never existed.** So, it certainly follows that the theory of evolution should be pushed aside as an unscientific idea. This is how many ideas, such as the Earth-centered universe model, have been taken out of the agenda of science throughout history.

However, the theory of evolution is kept on the agenda of science. Some people even try to represent criticisms directed against it as an "attack on science." Why?

The reason is that this theory is an indispensable dogmatic belief for some circles. These circles are **blindly devoted** to materialist philosophy and adopt Darwinism because it is the only materialist explanation that can be put forward to explain the workings of nature.

Interestingly enough, they also confess this fact from time to time. A well-known geneticist and an outspoken evolutionist, Richard C. Lewontin from Harvard University, confesses that he is "first and foremost a materialist and then a scientist":

> *It is not that the methods and institutions of science somehow compel us accept a material explanation of the phenomenal world, but, on the contrary, that we are forced by our a priori adherence to material causes to create an apparatus of investigation and a set of concepts that produce material explanations, no matter how counter-intuitive, no matter how mystifying to the uninitiated. Moreover, that materialism is absolute, so we cannot allow a Divine [intervention]...*[188]

These are explicit statements that **Darwinism is a dogma** kept alive just for the sake of adherence to materialism. This dogma maintains that there is no being save matter. Therefore, it argues that inanimate, unconscious matter brought life into being. It insists that millions of different living species (e.g., birds, fish, giraffes, tigers, insects, trees, flowers, whales, and human beings) originated as a result of the interactions between matter such as pouring rain, lightning flashes, and so on, out of inanimate matter. This is a precept contrary both to reason and science. Yet Darwinists continue to ignorantly defend it just so as not to acknowledge, in their own eyes, the evident existence of Allah.

Anyone who does not look at the origin of living beings with a materialist prejudice sees this evident truth: **All living beings are works of a Creator,** Who is All-Powerful, All-Wise, and All-Knowing. **This Creator is Allah,** Who created the whole universe from non-existence, in the most perfect form, and fashioned all living beings.

The Theory of Evolution: The Most Potent Spell in the World

Anyone free of prejudice and the influence of any particular ideology, who uses only his or her reason and logic, will clearly understand that belief in the theory of evolution, which brings to mind the superstitions of societies with no knowledge of science or civilization, is quite impossible.

As explained above, those who believe in the theory of evolution think that a few atoms and molecules thrown into a huge vat could produce thinking, reasoning professors and university students; such scientists as Einstein and Galileo; such artists as Humphrey Bogart, Frank Sinatra and Luciano Pavarotti; as well as antelopes, lemon trees, and carnations. Moreover, as the scientists and professors who believe in this nonsense are educated people, it is quite justifiable to speak of this

theory as "the most potent spell in history." Never before has any other belief or idea so taken away peoples' powers of reason, refused to allow them to think intelligently and logically, and hidden the truth from them as if they had been blindfolded. This is an even worse and unbelievable blindness than the totem worship in some parts of Africa, the people of Saba worshipping the Sun, the tribe of the Prophet Abraham (pbuh) worshipping idols they had made with their own hands, or some among the people of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) worshipping the Golden Calf.

In fact, Allah has pointed to this lack of reason in the Qur'an. In many verses, He reveals that some peoples' minds will be closed and that they will be powerless to see the truth. Some of these verses are as follows:

As for those who do not believe, it makes no difference to them whether you warn them or do not warn them, they will not believe. Allah has sealed up their hearts and hearing and over their eyes is a blindfold. They will have a terrible punishment. (Surat al-Baqara: 6-7)

… They have hearts with which they do not understand. They have eyes with which they do not see. They have ears with which they do not hear. Such people are like cattle. No, they are even further astray! They are the unaware. (Surat al-A'raf: 179)

Even if We opened up to them a door into heaven, and they spent the day ascending through it, they would only say: "Our eyesight is befuddled! Or rather we have been put under a spell!" (Surat al-Hijr: 14-15)

Words cannot express just how astonishing it is that this spell should hold such a wide community in thrall, keep people from the truth, and not be broken for 150 years. It is understandable that one or a few people might believe in impossible scenarios and claims full of

stupidity and illogicality. However, "magic" is the only possible explanation for people from all over the world believing that unconscious and lifeless atoms suddenly decided to come together and form a universe that functions with a flawless system of organization, discipline, reason, and consciousness; a planet named Earth with all of its features so perfectly suited to life; and living things full of countless complex systems.

In fact, in the Qur'an Allah relates the incident of the Prophet Moses (pbuh) and Pharaoh to show that some people who support atheistic philosophies actually influence others by magic. When Pharaoh was told about the true religion, he told the Prophet Moses (pbuh) to meet with his own magicians. When the Prophet Moses (pbuh) did so, he told them to demonstrate their abilities first. The verses continue:

> **He said: "You throw." And when they threw, they cast a spell on the people's eyes and caused them to feel great fear of them. They produced an extremely powerful magic. (Surat al-A'raf: 116)**

As we have seen, Pharaoh's magicians were able to deceive everyone, apart from the Prophet Moses (pbuh) and those who believed in him. However, his evidence broke the spell, or "swallowed up what they had forged," as revealed in the verse:

> **We revealed to Moses: "Throw down your staff." And it immediately swallowed up what they had forged. So the Truth took place and what they did was shown to be false. (Surat al-A'raf: 117-118)**

As we can see, when people realized that a spell had been cast upon them and that what they saw was just an illusion, Pharaoh's magicians lost all credibility. In the present day too, unless those who, under the influence of a similar spell, believe in these ridiculous claims under their scientific disguise and spend their lives defending them, abandon their superstitious beliefs, they also will be humiliated when the full truth emerges and the spell is broken. In fact, world-renowned

British writer and philosopher Malcolm Muggeridge, who was an atheist defending evolution for some 60 years, but who subsequently realized the truth, reveals the position in which the theory of evolution would find itself in the near future in these terms:

> *I myself am convinced that* ***the theory of evolution****, especially the extent to which it's been applied,* ***will be one of the great jokes in the history books in the future.*** *Posterity will marvel that so very flimsy and dubious an hypothesis could be accepted with the incredible credulity that it has.*[189]

That future is not far off: On the contrary, people will soon see that "chance" is not a deity, and will look back on **the theory of evolution as the worst deceit and the most terrible spell in the world.** That spell is already rapidly beginning to be lifted from the shoulders of people all over the world. Many people who see its true face are wondering with amazement how they could ever have been taken in by it.

They said 'Glory be to You!
We have no knowledge except what You have
taught us. You are the All-Knowing, the All-Wise.'
(Surat al-Baqara: 32)

Notes

1. "Major Religions Of The World Ranked By Number Of Adherents", Http://Www.Adherents.Com/Religions_By_Adherents.Html
2 "Jesus Christ: The Bearer Of The Water Of Life, A Christian Reflection On The New Age", Pontifical Council For Interreligious Dialogue, Http://Www.Vatican.Va/Roman_Curia/Pontifical_Councils/Interelg/Documents/Rc_Pc_Interelg_Doc_20030203_New-Age_En.Html
3 Swami Dharma Theertha, History Of Hindu Imperialism, Madras, 1992, P. 178.
4 Jawaharlal Nehru, The Discovery Of India, New Delhi, 1983, P. 75. Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Athens/Agora/4229/In15.Html
5 Korhan Kaya, Hinduism, Dost Publishing, February 2001, Ankara, P. 48
6 Ibid, 68
7 Khushwant Singh, India An Introduction, New Delhi, 1990, P. 44. Murtahin Billah Fazlie, Hinduism And Islam, A Comparative Study, Islamic Book Service, New Delhi, P. 76
8 "Lynching 5 Dalits In Police Presence Exposes India's Inhuman Caste System", Http://Www.Islamonline.Net/English/News/2002-10/17/Article54.Shtml
9 Korhan Kaya, Hinduism, P. 62
10 Ibid, P. 23
11 Sahih Muslim, Vol 1, P. 138, No: 141 Http://Www.Yeniklasor.Com/Forums.Php?M=Posts&Q=7260
12 Ibn Majah, 1. Vol, P. 119, No: 70 Http://Www.Darulkitap.Com/Hadis/Ibnimace/Index.Htm
13 "Çesitli Inanislara Göre Reenkarnasyon" (Reancarnation According To Various Beliefs) Http://Ufonet.150m.Com/Konular/Reenkarnasyon.Htm
14 Dr. Ali Ihsan Yitik, "Hint Kökenli Dinlerde Karma Inancinin Tenasüh Inanciyla Iliskisi" (The Relation Between Metempsychosis And Belief In Karma In Religions Of Indian Origin), Ruh Ve Madde Publishing, P. 111 Http://Www.Kucukyakali.De/Html.Php/Modul/Forum/Op/Print_Thread/Tid/691
15 Time, 24 March 1997, P 28-29
16 Firuz Al Lughat (Lahore) P. 615. Lughat Saidi, (Kanpur) P. 633. Murtahin Billah Fazlie, Hinduism And Islam, A Comparative Study, Islamic Book Service, New Delhi, P.17 Http://Indiaculture.Net/Talk/Messages/65/1002.Html?1087322754
17 Korhan Kaya, Hinduism, P. 50
18 Ibid., P. 51
19 Ibid., 63
20"Hinduism",Http://Dunyadinleri.Kolayweb.Com/Hinduizm.Html
21 William Joseph Wilkins, Modern Hinduism, London 1975, P. 376
22 Korhan Kaya, Hinduism, P. 64
23 Swami Dharma Theertha, History Of Hindu Imperialism, Madras, 1992, P.164. Http://Www.Dalitstan.Org/Journal/Brahman/Bra000/Bra_Hate.Html
24 Jagjeet S. Sidhu, "An Examination Of The Communal Violence Surrounding The Partitioning Of India", 1999; Http://Www.Nyu.Edu/Classes/Keefer/Joke/Sidhu1.Html
25 "The Reality And Unveiling Of Hinduism",Http://Www.Geocities.Com/~Abdulwahid/Hinduism/Hinduism_Unveiled.Html#Plight%20of%20low%20case%20hindus
26 Dr. B. R. Ambedkar, "What Congress And Gandhi Have Done To Untouchables?", Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Athens/Agora/4229/In15.Html
27 "Lynching 5 Dalits In Police Presence Exposes India's Inhuman Caste System", Http://Www.Islamonline.Net/English/News/2002-10/17/Article54.Shtml

28The Times Of India, November, 18, 1984.
29 The Times Of India, November 18, 1984.
30 Deccan Herald, February 5, 1988
31 Zaman, September, 26, 2000
32 "Buddhism's Appeal For Low-Caste Hindus", BBC News, 5 November 2001, Http://News.Bbc.Co.Uk/1/Hi/World/South_Asia/1639245.Stm
33 Eric Margolis, "India's `Hidden Apartheid'", 26 August 2001, Http://Www.Bigeye.Com/082601.Htm
34 "Low Caste Hindus 'Prefer Islam'", BBC World Service, 20 October 2002, Http://News.Bbc.Co.Uk/1/Hi/World/South_Asia/2344445.Stm
35 Ibn Majah, Menasik, P. 84
Prophet Muhammad's (Pbuh) Farewell Address,Http://Www.Netpaylasim.Net/Showthread.Php?T=3511
36
"Sikhism",Http://Www.Bbc.Co.Uk/Religion/Religions/Sikhism/Sikh_History4.Shtm
37 "The Small Hands Of Slavery: Bonded Child Labor In India", Human Rights Watch, New York, 1996
38 "Çocukların Kölelikteki Özel Durumu, Turizm, Çocuk Seks Ticareti Ve Köleligi", (The Special Position Of Children In Slavery, Tourism, The Child Sex Trade And Slavery), Irfan Erdogan, Ankara University, Http://Media.Ankara.Edu.Tr/~Erdogan/Cocukkole.Htm
39 "The Small Hands Of Slavery: India's Bonded Child Laborers And The World Bank." Multinational Monitor, January/February, 1997.
40 Sahih Bukhari And Its Translation, Translated By: Mehmed Sofuoglu, Ötüken Press, Istanbul 1987, P. 204
41 On The World And The Woman Problem, Http://Www.Atilim.Org/Sinif/Sp5/Dinler.Htm
42 Ibid
43 "Women In Indoaryan Societies",Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Athens/Ithaca/1335/Soc/W_Ary.Html
44 The Hindu, 16 February 1995
45 Hinduizmin ABC'si, (ABC Of Hinduism) Kim Knott, Kabalcı Publishing, September 2000, P. 127
46Taittiryasamhitavi.5.10.3,Http://Hnn.Us/Comments/80254.Html
47 Atharva Veda: 6.2.3. Http://Www.Dalitstan.Org/Books/Gowh/Gowh1.Html
48 "Women In Indo-Aryan Societies", Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Athens/Ithaca/1335/Soc/W_Ary.Html
49
Http://Www.Dalitstan.Org/Books/Gowh/Gowh5.Html.
Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Athens/Ithaca/1335/Soc/W_Ary.Html
50 Sita Agarwal, Genocide Of Women In Hinduism, Sudrastan Books, Jabalpur, 1999.
51 Rig Veda X.18.7., Kane 199-200. Http://Www.Barossa-Region.Org/Australia/Genocide-Of-Women-In-Hinduism-4800.Html
52 Daksa Smrti IV.18-19) (Sm.Samu S.30) (1200, S. 65) Http://Www.Barossa-Region.Org/Australia/Genocide-Of-Women-In-Hinduism-4800.Html
53 Brahma Purana.80.75. Http://Www.Barossa-Region.Org/Australia/Genocide-Of-Women-In-Hinduism-4800.Html
54 Kim Knott, Hinduizmin ABC'si, P. 107
55 Jean-Baptiste Tavernier, Travels In India, Atlantic Publishers, New Delhi, 1989, Vol. II, P. 164-165.
Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Realitywithbite/Hindu.Htm
56 Ibid.
57 "Suttee", Encyclopedia Britannica 2002, Expanded Edition DVD
58 Deccan Herald, "VHP Reviving 'Sati'", 8 February 1999.

Http://Ceras.Alternatives.Ca/15/Altnews.Htm
Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Realitywithbite/Hindu.Htm
59 Sita Agarwal, Genocide Of Women, Sudrastan Books, Jabalpur, 1999, Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Realitywithbite/Hindu.Htm
60 John Campbell Oman, The Brahmans, Theists And Muslims Of India, Delhi 1973, P. 27. Hinduism And Islam, A Comparative Study, Murtahin Billah Fazlie, Islamic Book Service, New Delhi, P. 120
61 Swami Dharma Theertha, History Of Hindu Imperialism, Madras 1992, P. Vii.
62 Murtahin Billah Fazlie, Hinduism And Islam, A Comparative Study, Islamic Book Service, New Delhi, P. 121
63 "Child Prostitution In India," Jubilee Action, Http://Www.Jubileeaction.Co.Uk.
64 "Trafficking Of The Girl Child In India: Human Trading For Economic Gains", Upala Devi Banerjee, Office Of Women In International Development, University Of Illinois,Http://Server.Ips.Uiuc.Edu/Ips/Wid/Index.Html.
65 Robert Todd Carroll, The Skeptic's Dictionary,Http://Skepdic.Com/Devadasi.Html
66 Bernard Lewis, The Middle East, Weidenfeld & Nicolson, London, 1995, P. 210
67 Karen Armstrong, Muhammad: A Biography Of The Prophet, Harper Collins Publisher, USA, 1992, P. 191
68 Ibid, P. 199
69 Murtahin Billah Fazlie, Hinduism And Islam, A Comparative Study, Islamic Book Service, New Delhi, P. 87
70 Ibid., P. 81.
71 Marzia Casolari, "Hindutva's Foreign Tie-Up In The 1930's - Archival Evidence", Economic And Political Weekly, 22 January 2000,Http://Www.Ffcl.Org/History/Pages/Crpage06.Htm
72 "An Inquiry Into The Carnage In Gujarat, Preparation For Violence, Training", Concerned Citizens Tribunal - Gujarat 2002, Ttp://Www.Sabrang.Com/Tribunal/Vol2/Prepvio.Html
73 M. S. Golwalkar, We Or Our Nationhood Defined, Bharat Prakashan, 1938, Nagpur. Http://Www.Foil.Org/Politics/Hindutva/Partha.Html#4
74 Partha Banerjee, "RSS - The "Sangh": What Is It, And What Is It Not?", Http://Www.Mnet.Fr/Aiindex/Onrss.Html M. S. Golwalkar. 1938. "We Or Our Nationhood Defined". Bharat Prakashan, Nagpur.Http://Www.Foil.Org/Politics/Hindutva/Partha.Html#4
75Amin Maalouf, Ölümcül Kimlikler,(Les Identitées Meurtrières) Çtranslation: Aysel Bora, Yapı Kredi Publishing, İstanbul, 1999, Pp. 50-51
76 "Aryan", Encyclopædia Britannica 2002, Expanded Edition DVD
77 Sydney J. Jones, Hitler In Vienna, 1907-1913, New York, Stein And Day, 1983, P. 123
78 "India's Swastika God", Http://Www.Swastika.Com/India.Html
79 Shrabani Basu, "The Spy Who Loved Hitler", Rediff On The Net, Http://Www.Rediff.Com/News/1999/Mar/27hitler.Htm
80 Marzia Casolari, Hindutva's Foreign Tie-Up In The 1930s: Hindutva's Foreign Tie-Up In The 1930s: Archival Evidence, Http://Www.Ffcl.Org/History/Pages/Crpage06.Htm
81 Arundhati Roy, "Fascism's Firm Footprint In India", The Nation Magazine, 30 September 2002, Http://Www.Ratical.Org/Co-Globalize/AR093002.Html
82 Partha Banerjee, "RSS - The "Sangh": What Is It, And What Is It Not?", Http://Www.Mnet.Fr/Aiindex/Onrss.Html

83 "Hindutva, An Anti-Indian Nationalist Ideology",Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Indianfascism/Fascism/History_Indian_Fascism.Htm
84 "Hindu Extremism On The Rise In India", Maranatha Christian Journal, 14 February 2000,Http://Www.Mcjonline.Com/News/00/20000214d.Htm
85 Partha Banerjee, "In The Belly Of The Beast: The Hindu Supremacist RSS And BJP Of India—An Insider's Story", Http://Www.Ercwilcom.Net/~Indowindow/Sad/Godown/Secular/Rssinsid.Htm
86 Shri Atal Behari Vajpayee, "The Sang Is My Soul", Organiser, "RSS: Vision And Action Special", 7 May 1995
87 "Vajpayee Reveals His True Colors", CNN.Com,Http://Www.Cnn.Com/2002/WORLD/Asiapcf/South/04/18/India.Vajpayee/Index.Html
88 "PM Defends Gujarat Govt. Order On RSS", The Hindu, 6 February 2000, Http://Www.Hinduonnet.Com/2000/02/06/Stories/01060001.Htm
89 Praful Bidwai, "Hindu Supremacists Reign Supreme", Asia Times, 17 Şubat 2000, Http://Www.Tni.Org/Archives/Bidwai/Supreme.Htm
90 L. Stanislus, "Hindutva And Marginalized, Christian Response", Http://Www.Missionstudies.Org/IACM/Papers/Hinduvata%20and%20Marginalised.Htm
91 Achin Vanaik, "Soldiers Of Hindutva", New Indian Left, May-June 2001,
92 Douglas Spitz, "The RSS And Hindu Militancy In The 1980's", Http://Department.Monm.Edu/Classics/Speel_Festschrift/Spitz.Htm., Monmouth College
93 Brian K. Smith, "Re-Envisioning Hinduism And Evaluating The Hindutva Movement", The Academic Press Limited, 1996.
94 "The Political Abuse Of History: Babri Masjid – Rama Janmabhumi Dispute", Centre For Historical Studies. "Re-Envisioning Hinduism And Evaluating The Hindutva Movement", Brian K. Smith, The Academic Press Limited, 1996
95 "India: Human Rights Developments", Human Rights Watch, Http://Www.Hrw.Org/Reports/1994/WR94/Asia-05.Htm#P235_88637
96 "Hindu Terörizmi", (Hindu Terrorism), Http://Www.Geocities.Com/Muslim_Tr/Hindu_Terorizmi.Htm
97 Human Rights Watch. For The Reports See:Http://Www.Hrw.Org/Reports/World/India-Pubs.Php
98 "Doubts Over Gujarat Train Attack", BBC News, 3 July 2002,Http://News.Bbc.Co.Uk/2/Hi/World/South_Asia/2087709.Stm
99 "Massacre Under Police Surveillance", Evrensel, 2 Marc 2002
100 "How Has The Gujarat Massacre Affected Minority Women - The Survivors Speak",Citizen's Initiative,Http://Www.Mnet.Fr/Aiindex/Women_S_Reportgujrat02.Html
101 Asia Watch And Physicians For Human Rights, May 09, 1993, Cited In "Examples Of Indian Atrocities In Kashmir", Http://Hellinparadise.150m.Com/Examples.Htm
102 Hilal Ed-Dawli, May 1992 (Harun Yahya, Yeni Masonik Düzen, Vural Yayıncılık, Şubat 1996, P. 615)
103 The Independent, 18 September 1990
104 The Toronto Star, 25 January 1991
105 "Keşmir", Sefer Turan, Kanal 7
106 New York Times, January, 22 1990
107 "Jainism", Catholic Encyclopedia, Http://Www.Newadvent.Org/Cathen/08269b.Htm
108 "Jainism", Catholic Encyclopedia, Http://Www.Newadvent.Org/Cathen/08269b.Htm

109 "Jainism", Encyclopedia Britannica 2002, Expanded Edition DVD-ROM
110 "Jainism", Encyclopedia Britannica 2002, Expanded Edition DVD-ROM
111 "Antiquity Of Jainism, Jainism And Other Religions", Http://Www.Jainworld.Com/Jainbooks/Antiquity/Jainorel.Htm
112 "Doğu Tanrıları", Http://Historicalsense.Com/Archive/Fener23_3.Htm
113 "Inside Japan", Sally Fallon, Mary G. Enig, The Weston A. Price Foundation, Http://Www.Westonaprice.Org/Traditional_Diets/Japan.Html
114 "History Textbook Project: Japan", Http://Www.Manipuronline.Com/Opinions/December%202002/Prideandprejudice20_1.Htm.Http://Wais.Stanford.Edu/History_1textbookprojectjapan43002.Html
115 "Japan Combats Suicide Rate", BBC News,Http://News.Bbc.Co.Uk/1/Hi/World/Asia-Pacific/1524782.Stm
116 "State Shinto", Encyclopedia Britannica 2002, Expanded Edition DVD-ROM
117 "The Invention Of A New Religion", B. H. Chamberlain, Imperial University Of Tokyo, Japan, Waats And Co, 1912http://Hoary.Org/Scand/Invent.Html
118 Ibid.
119 Ibid.
120 Ibid.
121"History Of Religious Statism And Buddhism In Japan", Http://Www.Nichiren.Com/History/A/A_Frame.Html
122 Michael Jordan, Eastern Wisdom, Carlton Books Limited, 1997, P. 202
123 Paulson, Ivar Zur Phänomenologie Der Schamanismus, 1964, P. 131
Http://Www.Folklore.Ee/Folklore/Vol4/Hoppal.Htm
124 N. A. Alekseev, The Early Forms Of Religion Of The Turkic-Speaking Nations Of Siberia, 1980, P. 63
Http://Www.Folklore.Ee/Folklore/Vol4/Hoppal.Htm
125 N. A. Alekseev, The Early Forms Of Religion Of The Turkic-Speaking Nations Of Siberia, 1980, Pp. 72-73
Http://Www.Folklore.Ee/Folklore/Vol4/Hoppal.Htm
126 S. M. Malinovskaya, Selkup Animistic Ideas, 1990
Http://Www.Folklore.Ee/Folklore/Vol4/Hoppal.Htm
127 Lehtisalo, Ajurakszamojed Mitologia Vazlata, 1924, P. 103
Http://Www.Folklore.Ee/Folklore/Vol4/Hoppal.Htm
128 Kenin-Lopsan, Magic Of Tuvian Shamans. 1993, P. 31
Http://Www.Folklore.Ee/Folklore/Vol4/Hoppal.Htm
129 A. Gogolev, The Mythic World Of The Yakuts, 1994, P. 19
Http://Www.Folklore.Ee/Folklore/Vol4/Hoppal.Htm
130 Barmich, Nenets Customs, Connected With Animistic Conceptions, 1990, S. 1-2
Http://Www.Folklore.Ee/Folklore/Vol4/Hoppal.Htm
131 His Family Name Wa K'ung, His First Name C'iu And His Second Name Cung-Ni. He Is Therefore Known By The Name Of "The Great Teacher Kung" Or K'ung Fu Chu, And Thus Confucius. He Became A Judge At The Age Of 50 And, In All Probability, Minister Of Justice In The Same Year. He Traveled For 13 Years In Order To Influence The Rulers Of Various Countries, But Failed. He Taught Throughout The Course Of His Life. Accounts Say That He Had 3,000 Students.
132 "Confucianism", Catholic Encyclopedia, Http://Www.Newadvent.Org/Cathen/04223b.Htm
133 Ibid.

134 Julian Pas, Historical Dictionary Of Taoism, Pp. 184-185.
Http://Religiousmovements.Lib.Virginia.Edu/Nrms/Taoism.Html
135 Martin Palmer, The Times, World Religions, A History Of Faith, Times Books, London, 2002. P. 199
136 Tang Yie-Jie, Confucianism, Buddhism, Daoism, Christianity And Chinese Culture, Pekin Üniversitesi, 1991, Pp. 81-83
137 Ibid., P.167
138 Martin Palmer, The Times, World Religions, A History Of Faith, Pp. 196-203
139 Wilbur Bruinsma, "The New Age Movement And Entertainment", Http://Www.Rsglh.Org/New_Age_Movement.Htm
140 C. C Martindale S. J., "Theosophy: Origin Of The New Age", Http://Www.Ewtn.Com/Library/NEWAGE/THEOSOP1.TXT
141 "Helena Blavatsky", Encyclopedia Britannica 2002, Expanded Edition DVD-ROM
142 Rama P. Coomaraswamy MD, "Are Traditional Catholics A Cult?" Http://Www.Holyromancatholicchurch.Org/Rama/Cults.Html
143 Alan Morrison, "From Old Gnosticism To New Age, A Historical Analysis Of The Mystery Of Iniquity From The 6th Century To The Present" www.Diakrisis.Org/Oldtonewgnosticism.Htm
144 John Carlo Rosales, "A Closer Look At The New Age Movement", Http://Www.Ewtn.Com/Library/NEWAGE/CLOLOOK.TXT
145 "Quotes On Hinduism", Http://Www.Atributetohinduism.Com/Quotes1_20.Htm#Q13
146 "Annie Besant", Encyclopedia Britannica 2002, Expanded Edition DVD-ROM
147 "Theosophy, Woven From And Into The Fabric Of Sanatanadharma", Hinduism Today, June 1995, Http://Www.Hinduismtoday.Com/Archives/1995/6/1995-6-03.Shtml
148 Alan Morrison, "From Old Gnosticism To New Age, A Historical Analysis Of The Mystery Of Iniquity From The 6th Century To The Present", Http://Www.Voxdeibaptist.Org/Gnosticism_To_New_Age.Htm
149 "Reiki: Enerjiyle Iyilestirme Teknigi Nedir?", (Reiki: What Is The Technic Of Healing With Energy?) Http://Www.Beyazyildiz.Com/Reiki/Reiki.Htm
150 "Dogaltaşlar Ve Mineraller, Taşların Dili", (Natural Tastes And Minerals, The Language Of Tastes). Http://Www.Beyazyildiz.Com/Taslar/Taslar.Htm
151 Thomas H. Huxley, Evolution And Ethics, S. 74; Vijitha Rajapakse "Buddhism In Huxley's Evolution And Ethics: A Note On A Victorian Evaluation And Its Comparativist Dimension", Philosophy East And West, Vol. 35, No. 3 (July 1985), P. 298
152 Ibid., P. 301
153 Ibid., P. 299
154 Jason Deboer, "Sublime Hatred: Nietzsche's Anti-Christianity", Http://Www.Absinthe-Literary-Review.Com/Archives/Fierce6.Htm
155 Robert G. Morrison, "Nietzsche And Buddhism: A Study In Nihilism And Ironic Affinities", Reviewed By David R. Loy. Http://Ccbs.Ntu.Edu.Tw//FULLTEXT/JR-EPT/Loy.Htm
156 Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh, Henry Lincoln, Messianic Legacy, London: Corgi Books, 1991, P. 184
157 In 1912, A Well-Known Doctor And Amateur Paleoanthropologist Named Charles Dawson Came Out With The Assertion That He Had Found A Jawbone And A Cranial Fragment In A Pit In

Piltdown, England. Even Though The Jawbone Was More Ape-Like, The Teeth And The Skull Were Like A Man's. These Specimens Were Labeled The "Piltdown Man". Alleged To Be 500,000 Years Old, They Were Displayed As An Absolute Proof Of Human Evolution In Several Museums. For More Than 40 Years, Many Scientific Articles Were Written On "Piltdown Man", Many Interpretations And Drawings Were Made, And The Fossil Was Presented As Important Evidence For Human Evolution. No Fewer Than 500 Doctoral Theses Were Written On The Subject. While Visiting The British Museum In 1921, Leading American Paleoanthropologist Henry Fairfield Osborn Said "We Have To Be Reminded Over And Over Again That Nature Is Full Of Paradoxes" And Proclaimed Piltdown "A Discovery Of Transcendent Importance To The Prehistory Of Man. In 1949, Kenneth Oakley From The British Museum's Paleontology Department, Attempted To Use "Fluorine Testing", A New Test Used For Determining The Date Of Fossils. A Trial Was Made On The Fossil Of The Piltdown Man. The Result Was Astonishing. During The Test, It Was Realized That The Jawbone Of Piltdown Man Did Not Contain Any Fluorine. This Indicated That It Had Remained Buried No More Than A Few Years. The Skull, Which Contained Only A Small Amount Of Fluorine, Showed That It Was Not Older Than A Few Thousand Years Old. It Was Determined That The Teeth In The Jawbone Belonging To An Orangutan, Had Been Worn Down Artificially And That The "Primitive" Tools Discovered With The Fossils Were Simple Imitations That Had Been Sharpened With Steel Implements. In The Detailed Analysis Completed By Joseph Weiner, This Forgery Was Revealed To The Public In 1953. The Skull Belonged To A 500-Year-Old Man, And The Jaw Bone Belonged To A Recently Deceased Ape! The Teeth Had Been Specially Arranged In A Particular Way And Added To The Jaw, And The Molar Surfaces Were Filed In Order To Resemble Those Of A Man. Then All These Pieces Were Stained With Potassium Dichromate To Give Them An Old Appearance. These Stains Began To Disappear When Dipped In Acid. Sir Wilfred Le Gros Clark, Who Was In The Team That Uncovered The Forgery, Could Not Hide His Astonishment At This Situation And Said: "The Evidences Of Artificial Abrasion Immediately Sprang To The Eye. Indeed So Obvious Did They Seem It May Well Be Asked-How Was It That They Had Escaped Notice Before?" In The Wake Of All This, "Piltdown Man" Was Hurriedly Removed From The British Museum Where It Had Been Displayed For More Than 40 Years. Theillard De Chardin Was One Of The Three People Behind The Hoax. Until 1980 It Was Believed That Charles Dowson Had Acted Alone. But In That Year Stephen Jay Gould Revealed That De Chardin Was Also Behind It. Chardin Had Had A Powerful Impact On Such Evolutionists As Theodosius Dobzhansky, George Gaylord Simpson And Sir Julian Huxley. His Books Had Been Banned By The Catholic Church Of The Time. Theilhard De Chardin Was Strongly Devoted To Evolution As “A General Condition That All Systems Had To Submit To.”

158 Francisco Ayala, "Nothing In Biology Makes Sense Except In The Light Of Evolution: Theodosius Dobzhansky, 1900-1975", Journal Of Heredity, (V. 68, No. 3, 1977), P. 3.

159 Theodosius Dobzhansky, Changing Man, Science, Vol 155, 27 January 1967, P. 409

160 Shirley Maclaine, Dancing In The Light, (New York, Bantam, 1983, P. 358

161 Wilbur Bruinsma, "The New Age Movement And Entertainment, James Dotson, "Challenge Of New Age Teachings Faced Early Church, Speaker Asserts", Cilt

XI, No. 5, May 1998
Http://Www.Thebaptistbanner.Com/Archive/9805%20Challenge%20of%20New%20Age.Htm
162 Huxley, J. As Cited In The Best Of Humanism, Ed. Roger E. Greeley. Buffalo, NY: Prometheus, 1988. Pp. 194-5.
163 Julian Huxley, The Coming New Religion Of Humanism, The Humanist, January-February 1962, P. 118
164 Phillip E. Johnson, Darwin On Trial, 2nd Edition, Illinois: Intervarsity Press, 1993, P. 131
165 John Newport, "The Worldview Crisis And The New Age Movement", Http://Www.Thebaptistbanner.Com/Archive/9805%20Challenge%20of%20New%20Age.Htm
166 Jeremy Rifkin, Algeny, New York: Viking Press, 1983.
167 Ali Bulaç, Çagdas Kavramlar Ve Düzenler, (Contemporary Concepts And Orders), Iz Publishing, 16nd Edition, İstanbul, 1998, P. 241
168 Ibid.
169. Sidney Fox, Klaus Dose, *Molecular Evolution and The Origin of Life*, W. H. Freeman and Company, San Francisco, 1972, p. 4.
170. Alexander I. Oparin, *Origin of Life*, Dover Publications, NewYork, 1936, 1953 (reprint), p. 196.
171. "New Evidence on Evolution of Early Atmosphere and Life," *Bulletin of the American Meteorological Society*, vol 63, November 1982, 1328-1330.
172. Stanley Miller, *Molecular Evolution of Life: Current Status of the Prebiotic Synthesis of Small Molecules*, 1986, p. 7.
173. Jeffrey Bada, *Earth*, February 1998, p. 40.
174. Leslie E. Orgel, "The Origin of Life on Earth," *Scientific American*, vol. 271, October 1994, p. 78.
175. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*, The Modern Library, New York, p. 127.
176. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species: A Facsimile of the First Edition*, Harvard University Press, 1964, p. 184.
177. B. G. Ranganathan, *Origins?*, Pennsylvania: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1988, p. 7.
178. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species: A Facsimile of the First Edition*, p. 179.
179. Charles Darwin, *The Origin of Species*, p. 172.
180. Derek A. Ager, "The Nature of the Fossil Record," *Proceedings of the British Geological Association*, vol 87, 1976, p. 133.
181. Douglas J. Futuyma, *Science on Trial*, Pantheon Books, New York, 1983, p. 197.
182. Solly Zuckerman, *Beyond The Ivory Tower*, Toplinger Publications, New York, 1970, 75-14; Charles E. Oxnard, "The Place of Australopithecines in Human Evolution: Grounds for Doubt", *Nature*, vol 258, 389.
183. "Could science be brought to an end by scientists' belief that they have final answers or by society's reluctance to pay the bills?" *Scientific American*, December 1992, p. 20.
184. Alan Walker, *Science*, vol. 207, 7 March 1980, p. 1103; A. J. Kelso, *Physical Antropology*, 1st ed., J. B. Lipincott Co., New York, 1970, p. 221; M. D. Leakey, *Olduvai Gorge*, vol. 3, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1971, p. 272.
185. Jeffrey Kluger, "Not So Extinct After All: The Primitive Homo Erectus May Have Survived Long Enough To Coexist With Modern Humans," *Time*, 23 December 1996.
186. S. J. Gould, *Natural History*, vol. 85, 1976, p. 30.
187. Solly Zuckerman, *Beyond The Ivory Tower*, p. 19.
188. Richard Lewontin, "The Demon-Haunted World," *The New York Review of Books*, January 9, 1997, p. 28.
189. Malcolm Muggeridge, *The End of Christendom*, Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1980, p. 43.